

The Project Gutenberg eBook of A Translation of the New Testament from the original Greek, by Thomas Haweis

This ebook is for the use of anyone anywhere in the United States and most other parts of the world at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this ebook or online at www.gutenberg.org. If you are not located in the United States, you'll have to check the laws of the country where you are located before using this eBook.

Title: A Translation of the New Testament from the original Greek

Author: Thomas Haweis

Release Date: March 30, 2010 [EBook #31829]

Language: English

*** START OF THE PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK A TRANSLATION OF THE NEW TESTAMENT FROM THE ORIGINAL GREEK ***

[Title Page](#)
[Preface](#)

Matthew [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#) [6](#) [7](#) [8](#) [9](#) [10](#) [11](#) [12](#) [13](#) [14](#) [15](#) [16](#) [17](#) [18](#) [19](#) [20](#) [21](#) [22](#) [23](#)
[24](#) [25](#) [26](#) [27](#) [28](#)
Mark [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#) [6](#) [7](#) [8](#) [9](#) [10](#) [11](#) [12](#) [13](#) [14](#) [15](#) [16](#)
Luke [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#) [6](#) [7](#) [8](#) [9](#) [10](#) [11](#) [12](#) [13](#) [14](#) [15](#) [16](#) [17](#) [18](#) [19](#) [20](#) [21](#) [22](#) [23](#) [24](#)
John [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#) [6](#) [7](#) [8](#) [9](#) [10](#) [11](#) [12](#) [13](#) [14](#) [15](#) [16](#) [17](#) [18](#) [19](#) [20](#) [21](#)
Acts [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#) [6](#) [7](#) [8](#) [9](#) [10](#) [11](#) [12](#) [13](#) [14](#) [15](#) [16](#) [17](#) [18](#) [19](#) [20](#) [21](#) [22](#) [23](#) [24](#) [25](#)
[26](#) [27](#) [28](#)
Romans [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#) [6](#) [7](#) [8](#) [9](#) [10](#) [11](#) [12](#) [13](#) [14](#) [15](#) [16](#)
1 Corinthians [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#) [6](#) [7](#) [8](#) [9](#) [10](#) [11](#) [12](#) [13](#) [14](#) [15](#) [16](#)
2 Corinthians [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#) [6](#) [7](#) [8](#) [9](#) [10](#) [11](#) [12](#) [13](#)
Galatians [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#) [6](#)
Ephesians [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#) [6](#)
Philippians [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#)
Colossians [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#)
1 Thessalonians [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#)
2 Thessalonians [1](#) [2](#) [3](#)
1 Timothy [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#) [6](#)
2 Timothy [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#)
Titus [1](#) [2](#) [3](#)
Philemon [1](#)
Hebrews [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#) [6](#) [7](#) [8](#) [9](#) [10](#) [11](#) [12](#) [13](#)
James [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#)
1 Peter [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#)
2 Peter [1](#) [2](#) [3](#)
1 John [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#)
2 John [1](#)
3 John [1](#)
Jude [1](#)
Revelations [1](#) [2](#) [3](#) [4](#) [5](#) [6](#) [7](#) [8](#) [9](#) [10](#) [11](#) [12](#) [13](#) [14](#) [15](#) [16](#) [17](#) [18](#) [19](#) [20](#) [21](#) [22](#)

[Footnotes](#)

A TRANSLATION
OF THE
NEW TESTAMENT
FROM THE

ORIGINAL GREEK.

HUMBLY ATTEMPTED

WITH A VIEW TO ASSIST

THE UNLEARNED

WITH CLEARER AND MORE EXPLICIT VIEWS OF THE

MIND OF THE SPIRIT

IN THE

SCRIPTURES OF TRUTH.

BY T. HAWEIS, L.L. B.

RECTOR OF ALL-SAINTS, ALDWINCKLE, NORTHAMPTONSHIRE; AND
CHAPLAIN TO THE LATE COUNTESS OF HUNTINGDON.

London:

PRINTED FOR T. CHAPMAN,

NO. 151, FLEET-STREET.

1795.

P R E F A C E .

APPPEARING before the Public as a translator of the Oracles of God, it would ill become me to deprecate the severity of criticism, when I most cordially desire the intelligent and learned of my brethren to point out my mistakes for correction, and, in love and in the spirit of meekness, to smite me friendly. Should, however, the shafts of malignity, and the weapons not of our warfare, be employed against this humble, yet well-meant, attempt to make the Scriptures better understood, I shall endeavour to pluck the honey-comb from the lion's carcase, and be thankful for real information, in whatever mode it may be communicated.

Respecting highly, as I do, the translation of our Reformers, whose language has dignity, and whose soundness in the faith I hope, living and dying, to maintain, it must be acknowledged—that there are in our present version, obscurities which may be avoided—words become in the lapse of ages obsolete—expressions feeble and inexact—for which others more accurate and energetic may be substituted—and in some passages the sense embarrassed, and probably mistaken. To make therefore the Scriptures as intelligible as I can to men of common capacity, who are destitute of the knowledge of the Original, and sometimes perhaps to suggest a sense not unworthy the adoption of the judicious scholar, I have endeavoured to render every passage with the most literal exactness—to use the most forcible and clear expressions corresponding with the Original—not to omit a particle—preserving the participles—and following, as much as the genius of our tongue will permit, the exact order of the Greek words, persuaded that, thus placed, the sense often receives clearness and energy.

To transfuse the spirit of the Original into a Translation must be admitted to be very difficult in any language, peculiarly so where the matters treated of are so weighty, and the words so significant, and where holy men of God are speaking as they were moved by the Holy Ghost, without whose continual light and teaching I humbly conceive no man ever did or can understand and receive the things which are of the Spirit of God, so as to know them as he ought to know.

As the words of the Spirit contain one precise meaning, and to communicate his mind is the intention of Revelation, it must be our endeavour not to leave them equivocal, but to fix a clear and determinate idea to each, in exact conformity to the Original, that the true sense may be understood, which can be but one.

That I have endeavoured to obtain this knowledge it is no presumption to affirm. During forty years and upwards this blessed book of God hath been continually in my hands—never a day hath passed in which it hath

not been matter of my meditation; I may venture to say I have read it over more than an hundred times, and many of the passages much oftener. I have consulted the works of the most godly and ingenious of the dead, and often conversed with some of the ablest and most experienced ministers of Christ among the living. I have at two different times of my life translated and transcribed the whole of the New Testament, and considered every word, and phrase, and passage, with attention: indeed the leading object and employment of my whole life hath been to discover and communicate to mankind the truth as it is in Jesus; and every day have I bowed my knees to the Divine Interpreter, who giveth wisdom and understanding to the simple, that he would lighten my darkness, and shine into my heart, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God, as it is manifested in the face of Jesus Christ.

I recommend to my readers to tread in the same path, looking up to the Fountain of wisdom and knowledge. I am not ashamed to own my conviction, that an unlearned person thus seriously attentive to the Scriptures, and crying to God for the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him, will be led into all saving truth; and gain greater and clearer discoveries of the mind of the Spirit in the Scriptures than any mere natural man, however ingenious and learned. A word, a phrase, an allusion, may indeed exercise critical acumen, and afford a display for erudition; but the scope and tendency of the Sacred Oracles, the doctrines therein revealed, the principles inculcated, and the practice enjoined, never were, and never will be truly known, but by those who are taught of God.

As the division of the Scripture into verses interrupts the subject, and often embarrasses the sense, I have preferred paragraphs, placing the verses of the old Version in the margin, for the sake of reference and comparison; and though I have admitted the same division of chapters, in a few instances they might be more judiciously arranged: Matt. ii. 1. belongs to the former chapter, as also Acts, viii. 1. Coloss. iv. 1.

I have only now to commend this labour of love to the divine benediction. The Translation itself, and the necessary attentive consideration of every passage, hath not, I trust, been without instruction to myself, and some sweet savour of the truth: so far I have already my reward. It will be highly enhanced if God my Saviour deigns to make this service acceptable and profitable to his people, and the means of communicating clearer and more explicit views of his revealed will to the poor and unlearned of the flock. To them I have long dedicated my life and my labours, believing that of such is the kingdom of heaven.

Every attempt to make the Scriptures more read, and better understood, must be acknowledged laudable. Should the present effort fail to answer this end, it may yet provoke men of more wisdom and spiritual gifts, to produce a translation more exact, and suited to general edification. Then I shall be content to be forgotten.

THE GOSPEL

ACCORDING TO

M A T T H E W.

CHAP. I.

T HE book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

²Abraham begat Isaac, and Isaac begat Jacob, and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren, ³and Judas begat Phares, and Zara of Thamar, and Phares begat Esrom, and Esrom begat Aram; ⁴and Aram begat Amminadab, and Amminadab begat Naasson, and Naasson begat Salmon, ⁵and Salmon begat Boaz of Rachab, and Boaz begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed begat Jesse, ⁶and Jesse begat David the king, and David the king begat Solomon of her *that had been the wife* of Urias, ⁷and Solomon begat Roboam, and Roboam begat Abia, and Abia begat Asa, ⁸and Asa begat Josaphat, and Josaphat begat Joram, and Joram begat

Ozias, ⁹and Ozias begat Joatham, and Joatham begat Ahaz, and Ahaz begat Hezekias, ¹⁰and Hezekias begat Manasses, and Manasses begat Amon, and Amon begat Josias, ¹¹and Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon, ¹²and after they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begat Zorobabel, ¹³and Zorobabel begat Abiud, and Abiud begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begat Azor, ¹⁴and Azor begat Sadoc, and Sadoc begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud, ¹⁵and Eliud begat Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Matthan, and Matthan begat Jacob, ¹⁶and Jacob begat Joseph, the husband of Mary, of whom is born Jesus, who is called Christ. ¹⁷So all the generations from Abraham to David *are* fourteen generations, and from David to the carrying away into Babylon fourteen generations, and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ fourteen generations.

¹⁸Now the generation of Jesus Christ was attended with these circumstances: His mother Mary being betrothed to Joseph, before they cohabited together, she was found with child from the Holy Spirit.

¹⁹Then Joseph her husband being a just man, and not willing to expose her publicly, designed to put her away privately. ²⁰And as he was revolving the matter in his mind, behold, an angel of the Lord in a dream appeared unto him, saying, Joseph, son of David, fear not to take Mary for thy wife, for that which is conceived in her is from the Holy Spirit.

²¹And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name Jesus, for he shall save his people from their sins. ²²Now the whole of this was done, that what was spoken of the Lord, by the prophet, might be fulfilled, saying¹, ²³“A virgin shall be with child and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name IMMANUEL,” which is being interpreted, GOD WITH US.

²⁴Then Joseph when arisen from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord commanded him, and took his wife; ²⁵and he knew her not, until she had brought forth her son, the first begotten, and he called his name Jesus.

CHAP. II.

NOW when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, lo! Magians from the East came to Jerusalem, ²saying, Where is he that is born king of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the East, and are come to pay him homage.

³Now when Herod the king heard this, he was much agitated, and all Jerusalem with him. ⁴And assembling all the chief priests and scribes of the people, he enquired of them, where the Messiah should be born.

⁵Then they answered him, In Bethlehem of Judea, for so it is written by the prophet², ⁶“And thou Bethlehem, land of Judah, art in no respect the least amongst the princes of Judah, for from thee shall go forth the Ruler, who shall conduct my people Israel.”

⁷Thereupon Herod secretly calling to him the Magians, enquired very particularly of them the time of the star’s appearing, ⁸and sending them to Bethlehem said, Go, and procure the most exact information respecting this child; and when you have found him, bring me intelligence, that I may come, and pay him homage also.

⁹So having heard the king, they went on; and lo, the star, which they had seen in the East, had gone before them, till it came and stood over the place where the infant was. ¹⁰And when they saw the star, they were exceedingly transported with joy. ¹¹And coming into the house, they found the infant with Mary his mother, and falling prostrate, they paid their homage to him. And opening their treasures, they made their offerings to him, gold, and frankincense, and myrrh. ¹²And having received warning in a dream not to go back to Herod, they departed into their own country by another road.

¹³Now when they were gone, behold an angel of the Lord appeared unto Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the infant and his mother by night, and flee into Egypt, and stay there, till I speak to thee, for Herod will search for the infant to destroy it. ¹⁴So rising up, he took the babe and his mother by night, and retired into Egypt, ¹⁵and was there till the death of Herod; that what was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, might be fulfilled, saying³, “Out of Egypt have I called my son.”

¹⁶Then Herod, perceiving that he was treated delusively by the Magians, was greatly exasperated, and he sent and slew all the male infants, that were in Bethlehem, and in all its territories, from their entering their second year and all under it, according to the time, which

he had accurately enquired from the Magians. ¹⁷Then was fulfilled what was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying⁴, ¹⁸“A cry was heard at Ramah, lamentation, and wailing, and bitter moaning, Rachel weeping for her children, and will not be comforted, because they are no more.”

¹⁹Now when Herod was dead, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, ²⁰saying, Arise, and take the little boy and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they who sought the life of the infant are dead. ²¹So he arose, and took the child and his mother, and came unto the land of Israel. ²²But hearing that Archelaus reigned in Judea in the stead of Herod his father, he was afraid to go thither. And being divinely warned in a dream, he retired into the country of Galilee, ²³and came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that what was said by the prophets might be fulfilled, that he shall be called a Nazarean.

CHAP. III.

THEN in those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the desert country of Judea, ²and saying, Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is nigh. ³For this is the person spoken of by Isaiah the prophet, saying⁵, “The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness, Prepare the way of the Lord, make his paths strait.” ⁴Now this John had his garment made of camel’s hair, and a girdle of leather about his loins, and his food was locusts and wild honey.

⁵Then went out to him Jerusalem and all Judea, and all the regions about Jordan, ⁶and were baptized by him in Jordan, on making confession of their sins. ⁷But when he saw many of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said to them, O ye broods of vipers! who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? ⁸Produce then worthy fruits of repentance: ⁹and think not to say in yourselves, We have Abraham for our father: for I say unto you, that God is able out of these stones to raise up children to Abraham. ¹⁰And now also the ax is laid to the root of the trees: every tree therefore which produceth not good fruit, is hewing down, and casting into the fire. ¹¹I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that is coming after me is mightier than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry: he shall baptize you with the Holy Spirit, and with fire: ¹²whose winnowing fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly cleanse his threshing floor, and will collect the wheat into his granary; but the chaff will he burn up with fire unquenchable.

¹³Then came Jesus from Galilee unto Jordan to John, that he might be baptized by him. ¹⁴But John earnestly withheld him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? ¹⁵But Jesus answering said unto him, Permit it to be so now, for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he permitted him. ¹⁶And Jesus, after his baptism, came straight from the water: and lo! the heavens were opened for him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending as it were a dove, and coming upon him: ¹⁷and lo! a voice from the heavens, saying, This is my Son, the beloved, in whom is my delight.

CHAP. IV.

THEN was Jesus led away by the spirit into the wilderness, to be tempted by the devil. ²And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, afterwards he became hungry. ³And the tempter coming to him said, If thou art the Son of God, command that these stones be made loaves. ⁴But he answering said, It is written⁶, “Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.”

⁵Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and placed him on a wing of the temple, ⁶and saith to him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written⁷, “that he shall give his angels a charge concerning thee: and in their hands shall they hold thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.” ⁷Jesus said unto him, It is written again⁸, “Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.”

⁸Again the devil taketh him unto an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and their glory; ⁹and saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall prostrate and worship me. ¹⁰Then saith Jesus unto him, Avaunt Satan! for it is written⁹, “Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and to him only thou pay divine adoration.” ¹¹Then the devil leaveth him, and lo! angels came and

ministered unto him.

¹²But when Jesus heard that John was cast into prison, he retired into Galilee; ¹³and leaving Nazareth, he came and resided at Capernaum, a maritime city, on the confines of Zebulun and Nephthali: ¹⁴that what was spoken by the prophet Isaiah might be fulfilled, saying¹⁰, ¹⁵“The land of Zabulun, and the land of Naphthali, the road to the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles; ¹⁶the people who sat in darkness saw a great light; and on those who sat in the region and shadow of death, even on them hath the light arisen.”

¹⁷From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is approaching.

¹⁸And as Jesus was walking by the sea of Galilee, he saw two brothers, Simon who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea, for they were fishermen. ¹⁹And he saith to them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men. ²⁰Then immediately quitting their nets they followed him.

²¹And going on from thence, he saw two other brothers, James son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a boat with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and he called them. ²²Then they instantly quitting the ship and their father, followed him.

²³And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every disease and every malady among the people. ²⁴And there went out a report of him into all Syria: and they brought unto him all who had illness, the afflicted with various diseases and painful complaints, and the demoniacs, and lunatics, and paralytics; and he healed them. ²⁵And great multitudes followed him from Galilee, and Decapolis, and Jerusalem, and Judea, and from beyond Jordan.

CHAP. V.

THEN seeing the multitudes, he went up into the mountain: and seating himself, his disciples came to him: ²and opening his mouth, he taught them, saying,

³Blessed are the poor in spirit, for their's is the kingdom of heaven. ⁴Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. ⁵Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. ⁶Blessed are they who hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be fed to the full. ⁷Blessed are the merciful for they shall obtain mercy. ⁸Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God. ⁹Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God. ¹⁰Blessed are they who are persecuted for righteousness sake: for their's is the kingdom in heaven. ¹¹Blessed are ye, when they shall revile and persecute you, and lying, speak every thing evil against you for my sake. ¹²Rejoice and exult; for plenteous is your reward in the heavens: for just so they persecuted the prophets who went before you.

¹³Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt become insipid, with what can it be salted? it is of no farther use for any purpose, but to be cast out, and trodden under foot of men.

¹⁴Ye are the light of the world. A city cannot be hid that is situated on an eminence. ¹⁵Neither do men burn a lamp, and set it under a bushel, but on its stand; and it sheds light on all that are in the house. ¹⁶Just so let your light shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father who is in the heavens.

¹⁷Think not that I am come to destroy the law and the prophets: I came not to destroy, but to fulfil. ¹⁸For I tell you assuredly, that till heaven and earth pass away, not one iota, or the smallest stroke of a letter, shall pass from the law, until all things shall be accomplished.

¹⁹Whosoever therefore shall break one of the least of these commandments, and teach men so, he shall be accounted the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall practise, and teach them, he shall be reckoned great in the kingdom of heaven. ²⁰For I say unto you, That except your righteousness abounds more than that of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.

²¹Ye have heard that it was said to the men of antient times, “Thou shalt do no murder;” and whosoever shall commit murder, shall be liable to the judgment: ²²but I say unto you, That every man who is angry with his brother without cause, shall be liable to the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be liable to the

sanhedrim: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be liable to be cast into hell fire. ²³If therefore thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; ²⁴leave there thy gift before the altar, and go: first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. ²⁵Be disposed to agree with thy prosecutor speedily, whilst thou art in the way with him *to the bar*; lest the prosecutor deliver thee up to the judge, and the judge commit thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. ²⁶Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt in no wise come out from thence, till thou hast paid the last farthing.

²⁷Ye have heard that it was said to those of old, "Thou shalt not commit adultery:" ²⁸but I say unto you, That every one who looketh upon a woman to lust after her, hath already committed adultery with her in his heart. ²⁹If then thine eye, the right, leads thee to offend, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is highly for thy advantage, that one of thy members be destroyed, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. ³⁰And if thy right hand leads thee to offend, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is highly thy interest that one of thy members should be destroyed, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

³¹It hath been said indeed, That whosoever will put away his wife, let him give her a bill of divorce: ³²But I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except on account of whoredom, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is put away, committeth adultery.

³³Again ye have heard that it was said to those of old, "Thou shalt not perjure thyself, but shalt perform to the Lord thine oaths:" ³⁴But I say to thee, Swear not at all; neither by the heaven; for it is the throne of God: ³⁵nor by the earth; for it is the footstool of his feet: nor by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King: ³⁶neither shalt thou swear by thy head, for thou canst not make one hair white or black. ³⁷But let your discourse be, Yea, yea; No, no: for all addition to these is from the wicked one.

³⁸Ye have heard that it was said, "Eye for eye, and tooth for tooth:" ³⁹but I say unto you, Resist not an injurious act; but whosoever shall smite thee on the right cheek, turn to him also the other. ⁴⁰And if a man will prosecute thee, and take thy coat, let him have thy cloak also. ⁴¹And whosoever shall press thee for one mile, go with him two. ⁴²Give to him that asketh thee; and from him who wants to borrow of thee, turn not away.

⁴³Ye have heard that it hath been said, "Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy." ⁴⁴But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless those who curse you, do good to those who hate you, and pray for those who treat you insolently, and persecute you; ⁴⁵that ye may be the children of your Father who is in heaven: for he causeth his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and tendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. ⁴⁶For if ye love those who love you, what reward have you? do not even the publicans the same thing? ⁴⁷And if ye embrace your brethren only, what do ye extraordinary? do not even the publicans so? ⁴⁸Be ye therefore perfect, as your Father who is in heaven is perfect.

CHAP. VI.

TAKE heed that ye do not your alms before men, in order to catch their eye: for otherwise ye have no reward from your Father who is in heaven. ²Therefore when thou givest alms, sound not a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do, in the synagogues, and in the streets, that they may have glory from men. Verily I say unto you, They receive their reward. ³But when thou givest alms, let not thy right hand know what thy left is doing: ⁴that thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father who seeth in secret, will himself reward thee openly.

⁵And when thou prayest, be not as the hypocrites: for they love standing in the synagogues and at the corners of the streets, to pray, that they may make a shew to men. Verily I say unto you, That they have their reward. ⁶But when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and shut thy door, to pray to thy Father who is in secret; and thy Father who seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. ⁷And when thou art at prayer, use not vain repetitions, like the heathen: for they imagine that they shall be heard for their much speaking. ⁸Be not ye therefore like them: for your Father knoweth of what things ye have need, before you ask him. ⁹Thus then pray ye: Our Father, which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name.

¹⁰Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. ¹¹Give us this day our daily bread. ¹²And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. ¹³And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil: for thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever and ever. Amen! ¹⁴For if ye forgive men their offences, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: ¹⁵but if ye forgive not to men their offences, neither will your Father forgive your offences.

¹⁶And when ye fast, be not as the hypocrites, affecting a gloomy look: for they disfigure their visages, that they may make a shew of fasting to men. Verily I say unto you, That they have their reward. ¹⁷But when thou keepest a fast, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; ¹⁸that thou mayest not make a shew of fasting to men, but to thy Father who is in secret: and thy Father who seeth in secret shall reward thee openly.

¹⁹Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where the rust and canker spoil, and where thieves dig through and steal: ²⁰but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither rust nor canker spoil, and where thieves do not dig through and steal; ²¹for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

²²The lamp of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be transparent, thy whole body shall be enlightened. ²³But if thine eye be vitiated, thy whole body will be darkened. If therefore the light which is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!

²⁴No man can serve two masters: for he will either hate the one, and love the other; or he will adhere to the one, and disregard the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. ²⁵For this cause I tell you, Be not anxious about your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life of more value than meat, and the body than raiment? ²⁶Look on the birds of the air: for they neither sow, nor reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are you not of more value than they? ²⁷But which of you, by his cares, can add one cubit to his stature? ²⁸And why are ye anxious about clothing? Contemplate the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, nor spin: ²⁹yet I tell you, Not even Solomon in all his glory was arrayed as one of these. ³⁰If God then so clothe a vegetable of the field, which to-day is, *in beauty*, and tomorrow is cast into the furnace, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith? ³¹Wherefore be under no anxiety, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, With what shall we be clothed? ³²(for after all these things the heathen seek:) and your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of them all. ³³But seek ye, in the first place, the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be given you over. ³⁴Be not therefore anxious about to-morrow: for tomorrow will provide for its own wants. Sufficient for the day is the evil thereof.

CHAP. VII.

JUDGE not, that ye be not judged. ²For with the same judgment ye judge others, shall ye be judged: and with the measure ye mete, shall it be measured to you again. ³And why spiest thou out the mote which is in thy brother's eye, yet payest no attention to the beam which is in thine own eye? ⁴Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Suffer me to take the mote off from thine eye: and behold there is a beam in thine own eye? ⁵Thou hypocrite, take first the beam out of thine own eye and then shalt thou see clearly to take off the mote from thy brother's eye.

⁶Give not that which is holy to dogs, nor cast pearls before swine; lest they tread them under foot, and turning round tear you.

⁷Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: ⁸for every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. ⁹What man is there of you, of whom if his son ask a loaf, will he give him a stone? ¹⁰or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? ¹¹If ye then, evil as ye are, know how to bestow good gifts on your children; how much more will your Father who is in heaven, bestow good things on those who ask him? ¹²All things therefore whatsoever ye would be willing that men should do to you, just so do ye to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

¹³Enter in through the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and spacious the road, which leadeth to perdition, and they are many who enter that way: ¹⁴because strait is the gate, and narrow the road, which leadeth to

life, and they are but a few who find it.

¹⁵Take heed then of false prophets, who come to you in the garb of sheep, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. ¹⁶By their fruits ye shall know them. Do men gather a bunch of grapes from thorns, or figs from thistles? ¹⁷So every good tree beareth good fruits; but every bad tree in kind, produceth bad fruits. ¹⁸A good tree cannot produce bad fruits, neither can a tree bad in kind produce good fruits. ¹⁹Every tree that beareth not good fruit, is cut down, and cast into the fire. ²⁰Well then! by their fruits ye shall know them. ²¹Not every one who saith to me, Lord, Lord! shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father who is in heaven. ²²Many will say unto me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have we not cast out devils? and in thy name done many miracles? ²³And then will I profess unto them, that I never knew you: depart from me, ye workers of iniquity.

²⁴Every man therefore who is hearing from me these words, and puts them in practice, I will compare him to the intelligent man, who erected his house upon a rock: ²⁵and the rain descended, and the rivers rushed, and the winds blew, and they beat against that house, and it fell not; for it was founded on a rock. ²⁶And every man who is hearing these sayings of mine, and doth not practise them, he will resemble the foolish man, who built his house upon the sand: ²⁷and the rain descended, and the rivers rushed, and the winds blew, and set against that house, and it fell; and the fall of it was great.

²⁸And it was so, that when Jesus had concluded all these sayings, the multitudes were exceedingly struck with his teaching: ²⁹for he taught them as having authority, and not as the scribes.

CHAP. VIII.

NOW when he descended from the mount, great multitudes followed him. ²And lo! a leper came and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. ³And stretching out his hand, Jesus touched him, saying, I will; be thou clean. And instantly the leprosy was cleansed. ⁴And Jesus said to him, See thou tell no man; but go, shew thyself to the priest, and offer the gift which Moses commanded for a testimony unto them.

⁵Then as Jesus was entering into Capernaum, there met him a centurion, intreating him, ⁶and saying, My servant is lying in the house paralytic, terribly tormented with pain. ⁷And Jesus said unto him, I will come and heal him. ⁸And the centurion said, I am not a fit person, that thou shouldest come under my roof: but only speak a word, and my servant be cured. ⁹For I also am a man under authority, having under my command soldiers and I say to this soldier, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it. ¹⁰And Jesus hearing him, marvelled, and said to those who were following, Verily I say unto you, not even in Israel have I found so great faith. ¹¹And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and from the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven. ¹²But the children of the kingdom shall be cast into the outer darkness: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. ¹³And Jesus said to the centurion, Go; and as thou hast believed, be it to thee. And his servant was cured at that very hour.

¹⁴And when Jesus was come into the house of Peter, he saw his mother-in-law laid on a bed, and in a fever. ¹⁵And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose, and waited upon them.

¹⁶And when evening was come, they brought him many possessed by devils: and he cast out the spirits by a word, and all who had illnesses he cured: ¹⁷that it might be fulfilled what was spoken by the prophet, "Himself he took our infirmities, and bore our diseases."

¹⁸Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave orders to pass to the other side. ¹⁹And a certain scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. ²⁰And Jesus said unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where he can lay his head. ²¹And another of his disciples said unto him, Permit me first to go and bury my father. ²²And Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead bury their own dead.

²³And going on board a vessel, his disciples followed him. ²⁴And, behold, there was a great tempest in the sea, so that the vessel was hid

by the waves; but he was asleep. ²⁵And his disciples coming, awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we are perishing! ²⁶And he said unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then arising, he issued his mandate to the winds, and to the sea; and there was a great calm. ²⁷And the men marvelled, saying, What a wondrous man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him! ²⁸And when he came to the other side, into the region of the Girgasenes, there met him two demoniacs, coming from the sepulchres; exceeding fierce, so that no person was able to pass by that road. ²⁹And lo! they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither before the time to torment us? ³⁰And at a considerable distance, there was a great herd of swine feeding. ³¹Then the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, permit us to go into the herd of swine. ³²And he said to them, Go. Then they going forth out *of him*, entered into the herd of swine: and lo! the whole herd of the swine rushed down a precipice into the sea, and perished in the waters. ³³But they who fed them fled, and going away into the city, reported all things, and what had happened to the demoniacs. ³⁴And, behold, all the city came out to meet him: and when they saw him, they besought him to depart from their territories.

CHAP. IX.

AND going on board the vessel, he passed over, and came to his own city. ²And lo! they brought him a paralytic stretched on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith said to the paralytic, Be of good cheer, son; thy sins are forgiven thee. ³And lo! some of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth. ⁴And Jesus, seeing their thoughts, said, wherefore do ye imagine evil things in your hearts? ⁵For which is the easier, to say, Thy sins are forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and walk? ⁶But that ye may know that the Son of man hath authority upon earth to forgive sins, (then he saith to the paralytic,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go into thy house. ⁷And he arose, and went to his house. ⁸But when the multitude saw it, they were astonished, and glorified God, who had given such power unto men.

⁹And Jesus passing from thence, saw a man sitting at the custom house, called Matthew: and saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him. ¹⁰And it came to pass, as he sat in his house, many tax-gatherers and sinners came, and sat down at table with Jesus and his disciples. ¹¹And the Pharisees observing it, said to his disciples, How is this, that your Master eateth with publicans and sinners? ¹²But Jesus hearing it, said unto them, They who are in the vigour of health have no need of the physician, but they who have illness. ¹³Go then, and learn what is said, "I require mercy and not sacrifice:" for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

¹⁴Then came unto him disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees keep many fasts, but thy disciples fast not? ¹⁵And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bridechamber weep, whilst the bridegroom is with them? but the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then will they fast. ¹⁶But no man ingrafts a patch of undressed cloth into an old garment, for the piece supplied taketh from the garment, and the rent becomes worse. ¹⁷Nor do they put new wine into old bottles: but if they do, the bottles burst, and the wine is spilt, and the bottles are destroyed: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.

¹⁸As he was speaking these things to them, behold, there came a ruler, and prostrated himself before him, saying, My daughter hath just now died: but come and lay thine hand upon her, and she shall live. ¹⁹And Jesus arose, and followed him, and his disciples also. ²⁰And, behold, a woman, who had an hæmorrhage twelve years, came behind, and touched the fringe of his garment: ²¹for she said within herself, If I only touch his garment, I shall be cured. ²²Then Jesus, turning about and beholding her, said, Be encouraged, daughter; thy faith hath saved thee. And the woman was cured from that hour. ²³And when Jesus was come into the ruler's house, and saw the flute-players, and a multitude confusedly lamenting, ²⁴he saith to them, Retire; for the little girl is not dead, but sleeping. And they derided him. ²⁵So when the multitude was put out, he went in, and took her by the hand, and the little girl arose. ²⁶And the fame of it went forth into all that country.

²⁷And as Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying

out, and saying, Have mercy on us, son of David! ²⁸So when he came into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus said to them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They said unto him, Yes, Lord. ²⁹Then he touched their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you. ³⁰And their eyes were opened; and Jesus strictly charged them, saying, Take care that no person know it. ³¹But they going forth, blazoned his fame through all that country.

³²And when they were coming out, behold, they brought unto him a man, dumb, a demoniac. ³³And when the devil was cast out, the dumb man spoke: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, Never at any time was the like to this seen in Israel. ³⁴But the Pharisees said, By the prince of the devils doth he cast the devils out.

³⁵And Jesus took a circuit through all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of disease, and every malady among the people. ³⁶And beholding the multitudes, he was moved with compassion for them, because they were fainting, and lying here and there, as sheep that had no shepherd. ³⁷Then said he to his disciples, The harvest indeed is abundant, but the labourers are few; ³⁸entreat therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth workmen for his harvest.

CHAP. X.

AND having called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them authority over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to cure every disease, and every malady. ²Now these are the names of the twelve apostles; The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James son of Zebedee, and John his brother; ³Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the tax-gatherer; James son of Alpheus, and Lebbeus, whose surname is Thaddeus; ⁴Simon the Cananite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

⁵These twelve did Jesus send forth, commanding them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter not: ⁶but go rather to the sheep that are lost of the house of Israel. ⁷And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is approaching. ⁸Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give. ⁹Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses, ¹⁰nor a scrip for the journey, nor two coats, nor sandals, nor stick: for the workman is worthy of his food. ¹¹And into whatsoever city or village ye enter, enquire who in it is worthy; and there abide till ye depart. ¹²And when ye come into a family, salute it: ¹³and if the family shall be deserving, your peace shall come upon it: and if it be not deserving, your peace shall return to you. ¹⁴And whosoever shall not receive you, nor attend to your discourses, go out of that house, or city, and shake off the dust of your feet. ¹⁵Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment than for that city.

¹⁶Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore prudent as serpents, and harmless as doves. ¹⁷But be on your guard against men: for they will deliver you up to the sanhedrim, and scourge you in their synagogues. ¹⁸And ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the heathen. ¹⁹But when they shall deliver you up, be under no anxiety what ye shall say; for it shall be given you in that very hour what ye should speak: ²⁰for it is not you who are speaking, but the Spirit of your Father which is speaking in you. ²¹Then brother shall surrender brother to death, and the father the son; and children shall rise up against parents, and cause them to be put to death. ²²And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end, that man shall be saved.

²³But when they shall persecute you in one city, flee unto another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not complete your circuit through the cities of Israel before the Son of man comes. ²⁴The disciple is not superior to his teacher, nor the servant above his master. ²⁵It is sufficient if the disciple be as his teacher, and the servant as his master. If they have called the master of the family Beelzebub, how much more his domestics? ²⁶However, fear them not: for there is nothing concealed, which shall not be discovered; nor hid, which shall not be known. ²⁷What I say unto you in the dark, publish in the light: and what ye hear whispered into the ear, proclaim upon the roofs.

²⁸And be not afraid of those who kill the body, and cannot kill the soul: but fear him rather who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. ²⁹Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall to the ground without your Father. ³⁰But even the hairs of your head are all numbered. ³¹Fear not, therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.

³²Every one therefore who shall make confession of me before men, of him will I also make confession before my Father who is in heaven. ³³But whosoever shall disown me before men, him will I also disown before my Father who is in heaven.

³⁴Think not that I am come to bring peace to the earth: I came not to bring peace, but a sword. ³⁵For I came to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. ³⁶And the enemies of a man shall be those of his own house. ³⁷He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me, is not worthy of me. ³⁸And he that taketh not up his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

³⁹He that preserveth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall preserve it. ⁴⁰He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. ⁴¹He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive the reward of a prophet; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receive the reward of a righteous man. ⁴²And whosoever shall give to one of these little ones, if but a cup of cold water to drink, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

CHAP. XI.

AND it came to pass, when Jesus had finished his injunctions to his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and preach in their cities.

²Then John, having heard in prison the works of Christ, sent two of his disciples, ³and said unto him, Art thou he that cometh, or should we expect another? ⁴And Jesus answering said unto them, Go, and tell John what things ye hear and see. ⁵The blind receive sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised, and the poor have the gospel preached to them. ⁶And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended at me.

⁷And when they were gone, Jesus began to speak to the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind? ⁸But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in delicate garments? Lo! they who wear delicate garments are in the houses of kings. ⁹Yet what went ye out to see? A prophet? Yes, I tell you, and abundantly more than a prophet. ¹⁰For this is he of whom it is written, "Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way before thee." ¹¹Verily I say unto you, There hath not arisen, from those born of women, a greater than John the Baptist: yet he that is the least in the kingdom of God is greater than he. ¹²But from the days of John the Baptist unto the present, the kingdom of heaven is assaulted by violence, and the invaders forcibly seize upon it. ¹³For all the prophets and the law until John, foretold *this*. ¹⁴And if ye will receive it, this is Elias who was to come. ¹⁵He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

¹⁶But to whom shall I resemble this generation? it is like little boys sitting in the places of concourse, and calling to their companions, ¹⁷and saying, We have piped to you, and ye have not danced; we have sung mournful ditties to you, and ye have not beat your breasts. ¹⁸For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil: ¹⁹the Son of man is come eating and drinking, and they say, Behold, what a man! a glutton and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicans and sinners: though wisdom hath been justified by her children.

²⁰Then began he to upbraid the cities in which the chief of his miracles had been wrought, because they repented not: ²¹Wo unto thee, Chorazin! wo unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the miracles which had been wrought in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, long since would they have repented in sack-cloth and ashes. ²²Wherefore I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgment than for you. ²³And thou, Capernaum, who hast been exalted unto heaven,

shalt be cast down to hell: for if the miracles which have been wrought in thee had been done in Sodom, it had remained unto this day. ²⁴Wherefore I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment than for thee.

²⁵At that time Jesus spake and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and the intelligent, and hast revealed them to babes: ²⁶yes, Father! since such is thy good pleasure. ²⁷All things are delivered up to me by my Father: and no person knoweth the Son but the Father; neither knoweth any person the Father but the Son, and he to whom the Son is pleased to reveal him.

²⁸Come to me, all who labour hard, and sustain heavy burdens, and I will give you relief. ²⁹Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest to your souls. ³⁰For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.

CHAP. XII.

AT that time Jesus walked through corn-fields on a sabbath-day; and his disciples were hungry, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat. ²But when the Pharisees saw it, they said to him, Behold, thy disciples do a thing that it is not lawful to do on the sabbath. ³And he said unto them, Have ye not read what David did, when he was hungry, and they who were with him? ⁴how they went into the house of God, and did eat the loaves of shew-bread, of which it was not lawful for him or those who were with him to eat, but for the priests alone? ⁵Or have ye not read in the law, that on the sabbaths the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are not culpable? ⁶Now I tell you, That one greater than the temple is here. ⁷But if ye had known what that meant, I desire mercy and not sacrifice; ye would not have condemned the innocent. ⁸For the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

⁹And going on from thence, he came into their synagogue; ¹⁰and, behold a man was there who had a withered hand. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on sabbath days? that they might accuse him. ¹¹Then he said to them; What man of you is there who hath one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath, doth he not lay hold on him, and lift him out? ¹²Of how much more value then is a man than a sheep? Wherefore it is lawful to do good on the sabbath days. ¹³Then saith he to the man, Stretch out thy hand; and he stretched it out, and it was restored, sound as the other.

¹⁴Then the Pharisees went out, and held a consultation against him, how they might make away with him. ¹⁵But Jesus knew it, and retired from thence, and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all, ¹⁶and charged them that they should not make him known. ¹⁷That what was spoken by Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, saying, ¹⁸“Behold, my servant, whom I have chosen, my beloved, in whom my soul delighteth: I will put my Spirit upon him, and he shall proclaim judgment for the heathen. ¹⁹He shall not contend, nor be clamorous; neither shall any man in the streets hear his voice. ²⁰A bruised reed shall he not break down, and smoking flax shall he not quench, until he break forth in judgment for victory. ²¹And in his name shall the Gentiles hope.”

²²Then was brought to him a demoniac, blind and dumb; and he cured him, so as to enable the blind and dumb both to speak and see. ²³And all the multitudes were lost in amazement, and they said, Is not this the son of David? ²⁴But the Pharisees hearing them, said, This fellow casteth not out devils, but by Beelzebub, the prince of the devils. ²⁵But Jesus knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself will be desolated; and every city, or family, divided against itself cannot subsist: ²⁶so if Satan cast out Satan; he is divided against himself; how then can his kingdom subsist? ²⁷And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges. ²⁸But if I by the Spirit of God cast out the devils, then truly the kingdom of God is come unto you. ²⁹Else how can one enter into a strong man's house and plunder his goods, except he first bind the strong man, and then will he plunder his goods? ³⁰He that is not with me, is against me; and he that associates not with me, scattereth abroad. ³¹Therefore I say unto you, All sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven to men; but the blasphemy against the Spirit shall not be forgiven to men. ³²And whosoever may speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever shall speak against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be

forgiven him, neither in this world, nor in the world to come. ³³Either make the tree good, and its fruit good; or make the tree corrupt, and its fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by the fruit. ³⁴Ye broods of vipers, how can ye speak good things, yourselves being wicked? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. ³⁵A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good things: and a wicked man out of the evil treasure of his heart bringeth forth evil things. ³⁶But I tell you, That every idle word which men speak, for it shall they give an account in the day of judgment. ³⁷For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

³⁸Then certain of the scribes and Pharisees addressed him, saying, Master, we desire to see a sign from thee. ³⁹But he answered and said unto them, A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh a sign; and no sign shall be given it, but the sign of Jonah the prophet: ⁴⁰for as Jonah was in the belly of the whale three days and three nights; so shall the Son of man be in the heart of the earth three days and three nights. ⁴¹The men of Nineveh shall rise up in judgment against this generation, and condemn it: for they repented on the preaching of Jonah; and behold, a greater than Jonah is here. ⁴²The queen of the South shall rise up in judgment against the men of this generation, and condemn it: for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, a greater than Solomon is here.

⁴³When the unclean spirit is indeed gone out of a man, he traverses through places destitute of water, in search of rest, but cannot find it. ⁴⁴Then he saith, I will return to my mansion, whence I came; and on his arrival, he findeth it unoccupied, swept, and furnished. ⁴⁵Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first. So shall it also be with this wicked generation.

⁴⁶And while he was yet speaking to the multitudes, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak to him. ⁴⁷And a person said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak to thee. ⁴⁸But he answered and said to him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? ⁴⁹And stretching out his hand towards his disciples, he said, Behold my mother and my brethren. ⁵⁰For whosoever shall do the will of my Father who is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

CHAP. XIII.

THEN the same day Jesus going out from the house, sat down near the sea. ²And vast multitudes were gathered together unto him, insomuch that he entered into a vessel to be seated; and all the multitude stood on the beach. ³And he spake unto them many things in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went out to sow: ⁴and as he was sowing, some seeds fell indeed by the road-side; and the birds came and ate them up: ⁵and other seed fell on a rocky soil, where it had not much earth; and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth: ⁶and when the sun arose, it was scorched up; and because it had no root, it withered away. ⁷And other seeds fell among the thorns; and the thorns sprang up and choked them: ⁸but others fell on good ground, and produced fruit, some an hundred, some sixty, and some thirty. ⁹He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. ¹⁰And when his disciples came, they said to him, Why speakest thou to them in parables? ¹¹And he answered and said unto them, Because to you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given. ¹²For whosoever hath, more shall be given to him, and he shall have abundance: but whosoever hath not, even that he hath shall be taken from him. ¹³Therefore I speak to them in parables: that seeing, they may not see; and hearing, they may not hear nor understand. ¹⁴And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, which saith, With the hearing ye shall hear, and not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and in no wise perceive: ¹⁵for the heart of this people is waxed gross, and with their ears they have heard heavily, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with the eyes, and hear with the ears, and understand with the heart, and be converted, and I should heal them. ¹⁶But blessed are your eyes; for ye see: and your ears; for ye hear. ¹⁷For verily I tell you, That many prophets and righteous men have greatly desired to see the things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear the things which ye hear,

and have not heard them. ¹⁸Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower.

¹⁹When any person heareth the word of the kingdom, and doth not understand it, the wicked one cometh, and snatcheth away what was sown on his heart: such is he who is the sown by the road-side. ²⁰But the sown on the rocky soil, is he who having heard the word, and instantly with joy receiving it, ²¹hath not really root in himself, but is merely temporary: and when tribulation or persecution ariseth for the word's sake, immediately he is stumbled. ²²But the sown among the thorns, is he who heareth the word, and the anxiety about this world and the deceitfulness of riches, choketh the word, and it becometh unfruitful. ²³But the sown upon the good ground, is he who heareth the word, and understandeth it; who truly beareth fruit, and produceth, one an hundred fold, and another sixty, and another thirty.

²⁴Another parable proposed he to them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like unto a man who sowed good seed in his field: ²⁵and while the men were asleep, his enemy came and sowed zizane among the wheat, and departed. ²⁶But when the blade was shot up, and produced fruit, then appeared also the zizane. ²⁷The servants of the proprietor came, and said to him, Master, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field? whence then hath it the zizane? ²⁸He saith unto them, Some man, an enemy, hath done this. Then the servants said to him, Wilt thou that we go and weed them out? ²⁹he replied, No; lest perhaps in weeding out the zizane, we root up the wheat with them. ³⁰Let them both grow together till the harvest: and at the harvest-time I will say to the reapers, Gather out first the zizane, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

³¹Another parable he proposed to them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like a grain of mustard, which a man took and sowed in his field: ³²which indeed is among the smallest of all seeds; but when it is grown, it is among the greatest of herbs, and becomes a tree, so that the birds of the air come and make their nests in the branches of it.

³³Another parable spake he to them: The kingdom of heaven is like leaven, which a woman took and covered up in three measures of flour, until the whole was leavened. ³⁴All these things spake Jesus in parables to the multitudes; and without a parable he spake not to them: ³⁵that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables, I will bring forth things hid from the foundation of the world.

³⁶Then Jesus dismissing the multitudes, went into a house; and his disciples came unto him, saying, Explain to us the parable of the zizane of the field. ³⁷And he replying said to them, He that sowed the good seed, is the Son of man; ³⁸the field is the world: and the good seed are those who are the children of the kingdom; but the zizane are the children of the wicked one; ³⁹the enemy who sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. ⁴⁰As therefore the zizane are gathered, and burned in the fire; just so shall it be at the end of this world. ⁴¹The Son of man shall send out his angels, and shall gather together out of his kingdom all things offensive, and those who practise iniquity; ⁴²and will cast them into a furnace of fire; there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. ⁴³Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun, in the kingdom of their Father. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

⁴⁴Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a treasure hid in a field: which when a man findeth, he hideth, and for joy thereof, goeth away and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

⁴⁵Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a merchantman in search of beautiful pearls: ⁴⁶who, having discovered one of vast price, went away and sold all that he possessed, and bought it.

⁴⁷Again, the kingdom of heaven is like to a net cast into the sea, and collecting fish of every kind: ⁴⁸which, when it was full, they drew to the beach, and sitting down, selected the good into baskets, but cast those of a bad kind away. ⁴⁹Just so shall it be at the end of this world: the angels shall go forth, and shall separate the wicked from amidst the just, ⁵⁰and shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. ⁵¹Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things? ⁵²They say unto him, Yes, Lord. Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe instructed unto the kingdom of heaven, is like unto a man, the master of a family, who bringeth out of his storehouse things new and old.

⁵³And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished there parables, he departed thence. ⁵⁴And coming into his own country, taught them in their synagogues, so that they were exceedingly struck, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these miracles? ⁵⁵Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas? ⁵⁶and his sisters, are they not all among us? whence then hath he all these things? ⁵⁷And they were offended at him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not disrespected, except in his own country, and in his own family. ⁵⁸And he did not there many miracles because of their unbelief.

CHAP. XIV.

AT that time Herod the tetrarch heard the report of Jesus, ²and said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead, and therefore miracles are wrought by him. ³For Herod having seized John, had bound him, and put him in prison, for the sake of Herodias, the wife of Philip his brother. ⁴For John said unto him, It is unlawful for thee to have her. ⁵And though he wished to kill him, he was afraid of the multitude, for they held him as a prophet. ⁶But when Herod's birth-day was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced in the circle, and pleased Herod: ⁷so that with an oath he promised to give her whatever she should ask. ⁸And she, being previously urged on by her mother, said, Give me here, in a spacious dish, the head of John the Baptist. ⁹And the king was grieved: but for his oath's sake, and on account of those who were with him, he commanded it to be given her. ¹⁰And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison. ¹¹And his head was brought on a large dish, and was given to the young lady: and she brought it to her mother. ¹²And his disciples came and took the body, and buried it, and they came and told Jesus. ¹³And when Jesus heard it, he withdrew from thence in a vessel into a desert place apart: and when the multitudes heard it, they followed him on foot from the cities.

¹⁴And when Jesus was come forth, he saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion towards them, and healed their sick. ¹⁵But when evening was come, his disciples came unto him, saying, The place is desert, and the day is far advanced; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves provisions. ¹⁶But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart: give ye them to eat. ¹⁷And they said unto him, We have nothing here except five loaves and two fishes. ¹⁸Then he said, Bring them hither to me. ¹⁹And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, and taking the five loaves and the two fishes, looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake, and gave the loaves to the disciples, and the disciples to the multitude. ²⁰And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up the superabundance of the fragments, twelve baskets full. ²¹And they who had eaten, were about five thousand men, besides women and children. ²²And immediately Jesus compelled his disciples to go on board the vessel, and pass before him to the other side, while he dismissed the people.

²³And when he had sent away the multitude, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when evening came, he was there alone. ²⁴But the vessel was already in the midst of the sea, tossed with the waves: for the wind was contrary. ²⁵Then at the fourth watch of the night came Jesus unto them, walking on the sea. ²⁶And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were greatly agitated, saying, It is his apparition. And they cried out with terror. ²⁷And immediately Jesus spake to them, saying, Be of good courage: it is I; be not terrified. ²⁸Then Peter answering, said, Lord, if it be thou, command me to come unto thee upon the waters. ²⁹And he said, Come. And descending from the vessel, Peter walked upon the waters to come to Jesus. ³⁰But seeing the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink in the deep, he cried out, saying, Lord save me. ³¹Then immediately Jesus stretching out his hand, laid hold on him, and said to him, O thou of little faith, wherefore dost thou doubt? ³²And when they came aboard the vessel, the wind ceased. ³³And they who were in the vessel, came and worshipped him, saying, Truly thou art the Son of God.

³⁴And passing over, they came to the land of Gennesareth. ³⁵And when the men of that place knew him, they sent into all that neighbourhood, and brought to him all that had illnesses: ³⁶and they

besought him that they might only touch the fringe of his garment: and as many as touched it were cured.

CHAP. XV.

THEN came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees from Jerusalem, saying, ²Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread? ³And he answering said to them, And why do you transgress the command of God, by your tradition? ⁴For God commanded, saying "Honour thy father and thy mother:" and, He that curseth father or mother, let him surely die. ⁵But ye say, If any man declare to his father or mother, This is a *devoted* gift, which else might have been employed by me for thy advantage; ⁶then he shall not with it honour his father and mother: so have ye vacated the command of God by your tradition. ⁷Ye hypocrites, well hath Isaiah prophesied concerning you, saying, ⁸This people draweth nigh to me with their mouths, and honoureth me with the lips, but their heart is far distant from me. ⁹But in vain do they worship me, teaching doctrines the commandments of men. ¹⁰And he called to him the multitude, and said unto them, Hear, and understand: ¹¹not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man; but what cometh out of the mouth, that defileth the man.

¹²Then his disciples approaching, said to him, Knowest thou how offended the Pharisees were at hearing that speech? ¹³Then he answered and said, Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted shall be rooted up. ¹⁴Leave them to themselves: they are blind leaders of the blind. But if the blind lead the blind, they will both fall into the pit. ¹⁵Then Peter answering said unto him, Explain to us this parable. ¹⁶And Jesus said, Are ye also to this time destitute of intelligence? ¹⁷Do ye not observe, that every thing which entereth into the mouth passeth into the belly, and is ejected into the vault? ¹⁸But the things which go forth out of the mouth, come out of the heart, and they are the things which defile a man: ¹⁹for out of the heart proceed wicked reasonings, murders, adulteries, whoredoms, thefts, false testimonies, blasphemies: ²⁰these are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashed hands doth not defile a man.

²¹And going forth thence, Jesus retired into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon. ²²And lo! a woman of Canaan coming out of these coasts, cried aloud, saying to him, Have mercy on me, Lord, Son of David: my daughter is a grievous demoniac. ²³But he replied not a word to her. Then his disciples came and intreated him, saying, Send her away; for she is crying aloud after us. ²⁴But he said in reply, I am not sent, save only to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. ²⁵Then she came, and worshiped him, saying, Lord, help me! ²⁶But he answering said, It is not proper to take the children's bread and throw it to the dogs. ²⁷And she said, True, Lord: yet even the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their master's table. ²⁸Then Jesus answering said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith! be it unto thee even as thou desirest. And her daughter was cured from that hour.

²⁹And departing thence, Jesus went to the sea-side of Galilee; and ascending a mountain, he sat down there. ³⁰And great multitudes came to him, bringing with them the lame, blind, dumb, cripples, and many others, and cast them down at the feet of Jesus; and he cured them all: ³¹insomuch that the multitude marvelled when they saw the dumb speaking, the cripples sound, the lame walking, and the blind restored to sight: and they glorified the God of Israel.

³²Then Jesus calling his disciples, said, I have compassion on the multitude, for they have now continued with me three days, and have not any thing to eat: and send them away fasting I will not, lest they faint on the road. ³³And his disciples said unto him, Whence can we in the wilderness have loaves enough to satisfy the cravings of so great a multitude? ³⁴And Jesus said unto them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven, and a few small fishes. ³⁵And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground. ³⁶And taking the seven loaves and the fishes, he gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude. ³⁷And they did all eat, and were filled: and took up a superabundance of fragments seven baskets full. ³⁸And they that had eaten were four thousand men, besides women and children. ³⁹And dismissing the multitudes he went on board a vessel, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

CHAP. XVI.

AND the Pharisees and the Sadducees came to him, and, to make trial of him, desired him to shew them a sign from heaven. ²And he answering, said unto them, When evening comes, ye say, Fair weather, for the sky is red. ³And in the morning, It will be tempestuous to-day, for the sky is gloomy and fiery red. Ye hypocrites, do ye know how to discern the appearance of the sky, and are ye unable to discern the signs of the times? ⁴A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh a sign; and no sign shall be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonah. And he left them, and departed.

⁵And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread. ⁶Then Jesus said to them, Beware and abstain from the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees. ⁷So they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we have not taken bread. ⁸But when Jesus knew it, he said unto them, Why are ye reasoning among yourselves, O ye of little faith, because ye have not taken bread? ⁹Do you not consider, nor remember the five loaves among the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? ¹⁰Nor the seven loaves among the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? ¹¹How is it that ye do not understand, that I spake not to you of bread, to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees? ¹²Then understood they, that he spake about abstaining not from the leaven in the bread, but from the doctrine of the Pharisees and the Sadducees.

¹³Then Jesus coming into the parts of Cæsarea Philippi, questioned his disciples, saying, Who do men say that I am? The Son of Man? ¹⁴But they replied, Some, that thou art John the Baptist; but others, Elias; and others again, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets. ¹⁵He saith unto them, But who do ye say that I am? ¹⁶Then Simon Peter answering said, Thou art the Messiah, the Son of the living God. ¹⁷And Jesus replying, said to him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona; for flesh and blood hath not revealed this to thee, but my Father, who is in heaven. ¹⁸And I tell thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock will I build my church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. ¹⁹And I will give thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. ²⁰Then he commanded his disciples, that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Messiah.

²¹From that time Jesus began to shew his disciples, that he must go to Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders, and of the chief-priests, and of the scribes, and be put to death, and the third day rise again. ²²And Peter taking him aside, began to chide him, saying, Mercy on thee, Lord! this shall never be thy case. ²³Then turning from him, he said unto Peter, Get thee behind me Satan! thou art an offence to me: for thou dost not relish the things of God, but those of men.

²⁴Then said Jesus to his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. ²⁵For whosoever is desirous to preserve his life, shall lose it; but whosoever would lose his life for my sake, shall find it. ²⁶For what would a man be advantaged, though he could gain the whole world, if he should suffer the loss of his soul? or what will a man give as the ransom for his soul? ²⁷For the Son of man shall hereafter come in the glory of his Father, with his angels, and then shall he recompense every man according to his practice. ²⁸Verily I say unto you, There are some of those standing here, who shall in no wise taste of death, until they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

CHAP. XVII.

THEN six days after, Jesus taketh Peter, and James, and John his brother, and bringeth them into an exceeding high mountain apart. ²And he was transformed before them; and his face shone as the sun, and his garments were white as the light. ³And behold, there appeared to them, Moses and Elias talking with him. ⁴Then Peter addressing him, said to Jesus, Lord, It is well that we are here; if it please thee, we will make here three tents; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias. ⁵And while he was yet speaking, behold, a luminous cloud overshadowed them; and lo! a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom is my delight; hear him! ⁶And the disciples hearing it, fell on their face, and were exceedingly affrighted. ⁷And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, be not affrighted. ⁸Then lifting up

their eyes, they saw no person, but Jesus only. ⁹And when they were coming down from the mountain, Jesus commanded them, saying, Tell no man the vision, until the Son of man is risen from the dead. ¹⁰And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then do the scribes affirm, that Elias must come first? ¹¹Then Jesus answering said unto them, Elias indeed cometh first, and will reform all things. ¹²But I say unto you, That Elias is already come, and they knew him not, but have done by him whatsoever they chose: even so also must the Son of man suffer by them. ¹³Then understood the disciples that he spake to them of John the Baptist.

¹⁴And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a man, kneeling down to him, and saying, ¹⁵Lord, have compassion on my son, for he is a lunatic, and suffers grievously; for oftentimes he falleth into the fire, and often into the water. ¹⁶And I brought him to thy disciples, and they have not been able to cure him. ¹⁷Then Jesus answering, said, O generation, faithless, and perverse! how long shall I be with you? how long shall I bear with you? bring him hither to me. ¹⁸And Jesus rebuked him, and the devil came out of him; and the child was cured from that hour. ¹⁹Then the disciples of Jesus coming privately, said, Why could not we cast it out? ²⁰Then said Jesus unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard, ye shall say to this mountain, Remove from hence, thither, and it will remove; and nothing will be impossible for you. ²¹But this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.

²²And as they were returning into Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of men: ²³and they shall kill him, and the third day he shall rise again. And they were grieved exceedingly.

²⁴And when they came to Capernaum, they who receive the tax of two drachmas came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute? ²⁵He saith, Yes. And when he came into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth receive customs and tax? from their own children, or from aliens? ²⁶Peter saith to him, From aliens. Jesus saith unto him, In that case then the children are free. ²⁷But that we give them no offence, go unto the sea, and cast in a hook, and take the first fish which cometh up; and on opening his mouth, thou wilt find a stater, that take and give them for me and thee.

CHAP. XVIII.

AT that time came the disciples to Jesus, saying, Who is indeed the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? ²And Jesus calling a little boy, set him in the midst of them, ³and said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be changed and be as little children, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven. ⁴Whosoever therefore shall humble himself, as this little child, he shall be greatest in the kingdom of heaven. ⁵And whosoever shall receive one such little child in my name, receiveth me. ⁶And whosoever shall cause one of these little ones, who believe in me, to stumble, it were better for him that a millstone was hung at his neck, and that he was sunk in the depth of the sea.

⁷Wo to the world because of offences! for there is a necessity that offences come: nevertheless, wo to that man by whom the offence cometh! ⁸If then thy hand, or thy foot, lead thee to offend, cut them off, and cast them from thee: for it were better for thee to enter into life, halting or maimed, than having two hands or two feet to be cast into the fire, which is eternal. ⁹And if thine eye lead thee to offend, pluck it out and cast it from thee, for it were better for thee to enter into life with one eye only, than having two eyes to be cast into hell-fire.

¹⁰See that ye despise not one of these little ones, for I say unto you, That their angels in heaven continually behold the face of my Father who is in heaven. ¹¹For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

¹²What think you? If a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them stray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine in the mountains, and go and seek that which had strayed? ¹³And if he happen to find it, verily I say unto you, that he rejoiceth over it more than over the ninety and nine which never went astray. ¹⁴Even so it is not the will of your Father who is in heaven, that one of these little ones perish.

¹⁵Now if thy brother sin against thee, go and reprove him between thyself and him alone; if he hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

¹⁶But if he will not hear thee, take with thee one or two more, that by the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be confirmed. ¹⁷But if he disregard them, inform the church: and if he disregard the church, let him be to thee as a heathen, or a publican. ¹⁸Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever things ye shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever things ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. ¹⁹Again I say unto you, That if two of you are concurring upon earth, respecting any matter, which ye shall ask, it shall be done for them by my Father who is in heaven. ²⁰For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

²¹Then Peter coming to him, said, Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? ²²Jesus saith to him, I tell thee not until seven times, but unto seventy times seven.

²³Therefore is the kingdom of heaven like unto a certain king who purposed to settle his account with his servants. ²⁴And when he began to make up the account, there was brought to him one debtor, ten thousand talents in arrear: ²⁵but not having wherewithal to pay, his lord ordered him to be sold, and his wife and his children, and all things whatsoever he possessed, and payment to be made. ²⁶Then that servant falling prostrate, paid him the most profound homage, saying, Lord, have forbearance with me, and I will pay thee all. ²⁷Then his lord, moved with compassion towards that servant, discharged him, and forgave him the debt. ²⁸But that servant going out, found one of his fellow-servants, who owed him a hundred denarii, and seizing, throttled him, saying, Pay me what thou owest. ²⁹Then his fellow-servant fell at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have forbearance with me, and I will pay thee all. ³⁰And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay what he owed. ³¹Then his fellow-servants, when they saw what was done, were exceedingly sorry, and came to their lord, and gave him an explicit account of all things that had passed. ³²Then his lord, calling him before him, said to him, Thou vile slave! all that debt I forgave thee, because thou besoughtest me: ³³and oughtest thou not to have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pity on thee? ³⁴And his lord, incensed, delivered him up to the torturers, till he should pay all that he owed him. ³⁵Even so also will my heavenly Father do to you, except ye forgive every one of you his brother, from your hearts, their trespasses.

CHAP. XIX.

AND it came to pass when Jesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea beyond Jordan. ²And great multitudes followed him; and he healed them there. ³And the Pharisees came to him, tempting him, and saying, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? ⁴But he replying, said unto them, Have ye not read, that he who created them from the beginning, created them male and female? ⁵And he said, for this reason shall a man forsake father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. ⁶Wherefore they are no longer two, but one flesh. What therefore God hath yoked together, let no man separate. ⁷They say unto him, Why then did Moses command to give her a bill of divorce, and to put her away? ⁸He saith unto them, It was on account of the hardness of your hearts that Moses gave you permission to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not thus. ⁹And I tell you, that whosoever shall put away his wife, except for whoredom, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and he that marrieth the divorced woman, committeth adultery. ¹⁰His disciples said unto him, If the case of a man with his wife be thus, it is not expedient to marry. ¹¹Then he said to them, All men are not capable of receiving this saying, but they to whom it is given. ¹²For there are eunuchs, who were so from their mothers' womb; and there are eunuchs, who have been made eunuchs by men; and there are eunuchs, who have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven. He that is capable of receiving, let him receive it.

¹³Then were brought to him little children, that he should lay his hands upon them, and pray *for them*: but the disciples rebuked them. ¹⁴Then said Jesus, Permit little children, and hinder them not from coming to me; for of such is the kingdom of heaven. ¹⁵And when he had laid his hands upon them, he departed thence.

¹⁶And lo! a person coming to him, said, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, in order to attain eternal life? ¹⁷Then he said to him, Why

callest thou me good? there is none good but one, even God: but if thou art desirous of entering into life, keep the commandments. ¹⁸He saith unto him, Which? Then said Jesus, these, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, ¹⁹Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. ²⁰The young man saith to him, All these things have I observed from my youth: in what am I still deficient? ²¹Jesus said to him, If thou art desirous to be perfect, go, sell all thy substance, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and come, follow me. ²²Now when the young man heard this speech, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions.

²³Then Jesus said to his disciples, Verily I say unto you, That very difficultly shall a rich man enter into the kingdom of heaven. ²⁴And again I repeat it to you, It is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. ²⁵But when his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved? ²⁶And Jesus looking upon them, said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.

²⁷Then Peter addressing him, said unto him, Lo! we have left all and followed thee; what, I pray thee, shall we receive? ²⁸Then said Jesus unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye who have followed me in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit on the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. ²⁹And every one who hath left family, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name sake, shall receive an hundred fold, and shall inherit life eternal. ³⁰But many, now first, will be the last; and last, who will be the first.

CHAP. XX.

FOR the kingdom of heaven is like a man, the master of a family, who went out at break of day, to hire labourers into his vineyard. ²And when he had agreed with the labourers at a denarius a day, he sent them into the vineyard. ³And going out about the third hour, he saw others standing in the market place unemployed. ⁴And he said to them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatever is equitable, I will give it you. So they went. ⁵Again going out, about the sixth and ninth hour, he did after the same manner. ⁶But about the eleventh hour, going out, he found others standing unemployed, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle? ⁷They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith to them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatever is equitable, ye shall receive. ⁸Now when the evening came, the master of the vineyard said to his overseer, Call the labourers, and give them their wages, beginning from the last to the first. ⁹And when they came, who began about the eleventh hour, they received each a denarius. ¹⁰But when the first came, they expected that they should receive more; and they also received every man a denarius. ¹¹But when they received it, they murmured against the master of the family: ¹²saying, These last have wrought only a single hour, and thou hast put them on an equality with us, who have borne the burden and heat of the day. ¹³But he answering, said to one of them, Friend, I do thee no injustice; did I not agree with thee for a denarius? ¹⁴Take then thine own, and begone: I chuse to give to this last even as to thee. ¹⁵Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with my own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good? ¹⁶Thus shall the last be first, and the first last; for many are called, but the elect are few.

¹⁷And Jesus going up to Jerusalem, took his twelve disciples aside on the road, and said to them; ¹⁸Lo! we are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man will be betrayed to the chief priests and scribes, and they shall condemn him to death, ¹⁹and shall deliver him to the Gentiles, to insult, and to scourge, and to crucify: and the third day he shall rise again.

²⁰Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children, with her sons, paying him obeisance, and petitioning a favour of him. ²¹Then he said to her, What is thy wish? She saith unto him, Tell me that these my two sons shall sit, the one at thy right hand, and the other at thy left, in thy kingdom. ²²Then Jesus answering said, Ye know not what ye ask. Can ye drink of the cup that I am going to drink, and be baptised with the baptism with which I am baptised? They say unto him, We are able.

²³And he saith unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of my cup, and with the baptism with which I am baptised, shall ye be baptised; but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, it is not in my power to bestow, but on those, for whom it was prepared by my Father.

²⁴And the twelve, on hearing this, were filled with indignation against the two brethren. ²⁵But Jesus, calling them to him, said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their great men exercise authority among them. ²⁶But thus shall it not be with you. But whosoever will be a great man among you, let him be your servant; ²⁷and whosoever will be first, let him be your slave. ²⁸Even as the Son of man came not to be waited upon, but to serve, and to give his life a ransom for many.

²⁹And as they were going out of Jericho, a great multitude followed him. ³⁰And, behold, two blind men sat by the road side, who hearing that Jesus was passing by, cried out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, son of David! ³¹And the multitude checked them, that they should be silent; but they cried out the more, Have mercy on us, Lord, son of David. ³²And Jesus standing called them, and said, What desire ye, that I should do for you? ³³They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened. ³⁴Then Jesus, moved with compassion, touched their eyes; and immediately their eyes recovered sight, and they followed him.

CHAP. XXI.

AND when they drew nigh to Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage to the mount of Olives, then Jesus sent two disciples, ²saying to them, Go into the village, which is opposite you, and immediately you will find an ass tied, and a foal with her; loose and bring them to me. ³And if any man say aught to you, ye shall tell them, That the Lord hath need of them, and immediately he will send them. ⁴Now this was entirely done, that what was spoken by the prophet might be fulfilled, saying, ⁵“Tell the daughter of Sion, Lo! thy King cometh to thee, meek, and sitting on an ass, even on a foal the ass’s colt.” ⁶Then the disciples going, and doing as Jesus had commanded them, ⁷brought the ass and her foal, and they spread over them their garments, and seated him upon them. ⁸And a vast multitude spread their garments on the road, and others cut down branches from the trees, and strewed them on the road: ⁹and the multitudes who went before, and who followed after, cried, saying, Hosanna, to the son of David; blessed is he who cometh in the name of the Lord: Hosanna in the highest.

¹⁰And when he was entered into Jerusalem, the whole city was in commotion, saying, Who is this? ¹¹Then the multitudes said, This is Jesus, the prophet, who is from Nazareth of Galilee.

¹²And Jesus entered into the temple of God, and cast out all those who sold and bought in the temple, and overturned the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of those who sold doves ¹³and said unto them, It is written, “My house shall be called a house of prayer,” but ye have made it a den of robbers.

¹⁴Then the blind and the lame came unto him, into the temple, and he cured them. ¹⁵But when the chief priests and scribes saw the marvellous acts which he did, and the children crying out in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the son of David; they were filled with indignation; ¹⁶and said to him, Hearest thou what these say? Jesus replied to them, Yes; but have ye never read, “That out of the mouths of infants and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?” ¹⁷And turning his back upon them, he went out of the city to Bethany, and lodged there.

¹⁸Now in the morning, when returning into the city, he was hungry: ¹⁹and seeing a fig-tree at the road side, he went up to it, and found nothing on it but leaves only: and saith unto it, Let no fruit spring from thee henceforth for ever: and immediately the fig-tree withered entirely away. ²⁰And when his disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How suddenly is the fig-tree withered away! ²¹But Jesus addressing them, said, Verily I tell you, if ye have faith, and entertain no doubt, not only shall ye do what is done to the fig-tree, but if ye should even say to this mountain, Be lifted up, and be cast into the sea, it be done. ²²And all things whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.

²³And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came to him, as he was teaching, demanding, By what authority doest thou these things? And who gave thee this authority? ²⁴Then Jesus answering, said to them, I also will ask you one

question, which if ye answer me, then will I tell you by what authority I do these things. ²⁵The baptism of John whence was it? from heaven, or from men? Hereupon they reasoned among themselves, saying, If we reply, From heaven, he will say to us, Why then did ye not believe him? ²⁶But if we say, From men, we are afraid of the populace, for they all hold John as a prophet. ²⁷So they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. Then said he also to them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

²⁸But what think ye? A man had two sons; and coming to the first he said, Son, go work to-day in my vineyard. ²⁹But he answering said, I will not: yet repenting afterwards, he went. ³⁰And coming to the other, he spake after the same manner, and he replying, said, I go, sir; yet went not. ³¹Which of the two did the will of his father? They say to him, The first. Jesus saith to them, Verily I say unto you, That tax-gatherers and harlots shall go before you into the kingdom of God. ³²For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the tax-gatherers and harlots believed on him. But ye, when ye saw it, repented not afterwards, that ye should believe on him.

³³Hear another parable: There was a certain man, the master of a family, who planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and digged in it a wine-press, and built a tower, and hired it out to husbandmen, and went into a distant country. ³⁴But when the season for fruits drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen to receive his fruits. ³⁵And the husbandmen took his servants, one they beat, and another they killed, and a third they stoned. ³⁶Again he sent other servants more than the first, and they treated them in the same manner. ³⁷Then at last he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son. ³⁸But the husbandmen, when they saw the son, said among themselves, This is the heir, come let us kill him, and let us seize on the inheritance. ³⁹And they took him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him. ⁴⁰When therefore the master of the vineyard cometh, what will he do with these husbandmen? ⁴¹They say unto him, He will dreadfully destroy those wicked wretches, and will let out his vineyard to other husbandmen, who will render him the fruits in their seasons. ⁴²Jesus saith unto them, Have ye not read in the Scriptures, "The stone, which the builders rejected; the same is become the head of the corner; this is done by the Lord, and it is wonderful in our eyes." ⁴³Therefore I tell you, That the kingdom of God shall be taken away from you, and given to a nation, producing the fruits thereof. ⁴⁴And whosoever shall fall on this stone, shall be broken in pieces, but on whomsoever it shall fall, it shall grind him to powder. ⁴⁵And when the chief priests and Pharisees heard his parables, they knew that he was speaking concerning them. ⁴⁶And they sought to apprehend him; but were afraid of the people, for they held him as a prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

AND Jesus continuing his discourse, spake again to them in parables, saying, ²The kingdom of heaven is like to a certain king, who made a marriage-feast for his son: ³and sent his servants to call those who were invited to the entertainment: and they would not come. ⁴Again he sent other servants, saying, Tell those who have been invited, Behold, I have prepared my dinner; my oxen and the fatlings are killed, and all things are ready; come unto the marriage-feast. ⁵But they gave themselves no concern about it, and went their several ways, one to his own farm, and another to his traffick: ⁶And the rest seizing his servants, insulted and slew them. ⁷Then the king, when he heard it, was incensed: and sending out his armies, destroyed these murderers, and burnt down their city. ⁸Then he said to his servants, The wedding entertainment indeed is ready, but those who were invited were not worthy: ⁹go therefore into the thoroughfares of the roads, and as many as ye find, invite to the banquet. ¹⁰So these servants going out into the roads, collected all, as many as they found, both bad and good; and the wedding feast was fully furnished with guests. ¹¹Then the king coming in to look around on the guests, saw there a man who had not put on the wedding garment: ¹²and he saith to him, Friend, how came thou in here, not having the garment provided for the marriage feast? And he was speechless. ¹³Then said the king to the servants, Bind his feet and hands, and take him away, and cast him into the darkness, which is without;

there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. ¹⁴For many are called, but few elect.

¹⁵Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel together how they might lay a snare to entrap him in his discourse. ¹⁶And they sent to him their disciples, with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God with veracity; and carest for no man, for thou regardest not the person of men: ¹⁷tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to pay tribute to Cæsar, or not? ¹⁸But Jesus knew their wicked design, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites? ¹⁹Shew me the money for the tribute; and they brought him a denarius. ²⁰And he saith unto them, Whose figure is this and inscription? ²¹They say unto him, Cæsar's. Then saith he to them, Render therefore to Cæsar, the things which are Cæsar's; and to God, the things which are God's. ²²And when they heard him, they marvelled, and leaving him, went away.

²³On the same day the Sadducees came to him, who say, that there is no resurrection, and they put a question to him, ²⁴saying, Master, Moses said, "If a man die having no children, his brother in right of affinity shall marry his wife, and raise up seed for his brother." ²⁵Now there were with us seven brothers; and the first marrying, died, and had no offspring, and left his wife to his brother; ²⁶likewise the second also; then the third; so on to the seven. ²⁷Last of all the woman died also. ²⁸In the resurrection therefore, whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her. ²⁹Jesus then answering, said unto them, Ye are in an error, from not knowing the Scriptures, and the power of God. ³⁰For at the resurrection, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven. ³¹But with respect to the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read what was spoken to you of God, saying, ³²"I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?" God is not the God of the dead, but of the living. ³³And when the multitude heard it, they were amazingly struck with his doctrine.

³⁴But the Pharisees hearing that he had stopped the Sadducees' mouths, they assembled together: ³⁵and one of them, a teacher of the law, put a question to him, to make trial of him, and said, ³⁶Master, which is the great commandment in the law? ³⁷Then Jesus said to him, "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind." ³⁸This is the first and great commandment. ³⁹And the second is like to it, "Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself." ⁴⁰On these two commandments, the whole law and the prophets depend.

⁴¹The Pharisees being then assembled, Jesus put a question to them, ⁴²saying, What think ye of the Messiah, whose son is he? They say unto him, David's. ⁴³He saith unto them, How then doth David by the Spirit call him Lord? saying, ⁴⁴"The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit at my right hand, till I put thine enemies as a footstool for thy feet." ⁴⁵If then David calleth him Lord, how is he his son? ⁴⁶And no man could answer him a word, neither durst any man, from that day, interrogate him any more.

CHAP. XXIII.

THEN Jesus spake to the multitudes and to his disciples, ²saying, The scribes and Pharisees are seated on the chair of Moses; ³all things therefore which they prescribe for you to observe, observe and practise; but do not according to their works, for they say, yet do not practise. ⁴For they bind burdens grievous, and difficultly borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they will not move them with a finger of their own. ⁵And all their works they do to be seen of men: they make their phylacteries broad, and deepen the fringes of their garments, ⁶and love the principal couch at suppers, and the chief seats in the synagogues, ⁷and salutations in the places of public concourse, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi. ⁸But be not ye called Rabbi, for one is your leader, the Messiah; and ye all are brethren. ⁹And call no man your father upon earth; for one is your father, who is in heaven. ¹⁰And be not called leaders; for one is your leader, the Messiah. ¹¹But he who is greatest among you shall be your servant. ¹²For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and whosoever abaseth himself shall be exalted.

¹³Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye shut up the kingdom of heaven from men; for ye yourselves enter not in, and those who were coming in, ye suffer not to enter. ¹⁴Wo unto you, scribes

and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: wherefore ye shall receive greater condemnation. ¹⁵Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is gained, ye make him doubly more the child of hell than yourselves. ¹⁶Wo unto you ye blind guides! who say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, it is binding. ¹⁷Ye fools and blind! for which is the greater, the gold, or the temple which consecrates the gold? ¹⁸And again, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gift that is upon it, it is binding. ¹⁹Ye fools and blind! which is the greater, the gift, or the altar which consecrates the gift? ²⁰Whosoever therefore sweareth by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things that are upon it. ²¹And whosoever sweareth by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him also who dwelleth in it. ²²So he that sweareth by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him who is seated upon it.

²³Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithes of mint, and anise, and cummin, and have neglected the weightier precepts of the law, judgment, and mercy, and fidelity: these thing ought ye to have done, and not to leave the others undone. ²⁴Ye blind guides! who strain out a gnat, but gulp down a camel. ²⁵Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye cleanse the outside of the cup, and of the dish, but within they are full of rapacity and intemperance. ²⁶Thou blind Pharisee! cleanse first the inside of the cup and dish, that their outside may become clean also. ²⁷Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye resemble tombs whitewashed, which outwardly indeed appear specious, but within are full of dead men's bones, and all manner of impurity. ²⁸And just so, ye without indeed appear to men righteous, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity. ²⁹Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye build the tombs of the prophets, and adorn the sepulchres of the just, ³⁰and say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. ³¹Wherefore ye bear a testimony to yourselves, that ye are the children of those who killed the prophets. ³²Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. ³³Ye serpents, ye broods of vipers! how can ye escape from the damnation of hell? ³⁴Therefore, behold, I am sending to you prophets, and wise men, and scribes; and some of them ye shall kill, and crucify; and some of them ye shall scourge in your synagogues, and persecute from city to city: ³⁵that upon you may come all the righteous blood which hath been poured out upon the earth, from the blood of the righteous Abel, to the blood of Zachariah, son of Barachiah, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar. ³⁶Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come on this generation.

³⁷O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, that killest the prophets, and stonest those who were sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children to me, as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not? ³⁸Behold, your habitation is left unto you desolate. ³⁹For I tell you, Ye shall henceforth no more see me, until ye say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

CHAP. XXIV.

AND Jesus departing was going his way from the temple: and his disciples came to him, to point out to his observation the buildings of the temple. ²But Jesus said unto them, Do you not see all these things? I tell you of a certainty, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, which shall not be utterly thrown down.

³Then as he was sitting upon the mount of Olives, his disciples came to him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall there things be? and what is the sign of thy coming, and of the consummation of the age? ⁴And Jesus answering said unto them, Beware that no man deceive you. ⁵For many will come in my name, saying, I am the Messiah; and shall deceive multitudes. ⁶And ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars: see that ye be not terrified: for these things must first be, but the end is not yet. ⁷For nation shall be roused up against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in diverse places. ⁸Now all these things are the beginning of the travailing pangs. ⁹Then shall they deliver you up to affliction, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. ¹⁰And

then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and hate one another. ¹¹And many false prophets shall arise, and shall deceive many. ¹²And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many will grow cool. ¹³But he that endureth to the end, that man will be saved. ¹⁴And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached through the whole world for a testimony to all the nations: and then shall come the final close. ¹⁵When therefore ye see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by the prophet Daniel, erected in the holy place, (let him that readeth, mark this,) ¹⁶then let such as are in Judea flee into the mountains. ¹⁷Let not him who is upon the roof go down to take any thing out of his house. ¹⁸And he that is in the field, let him not turn back to take his garment. ¹⁹But wo to those who are with child, and have an infant at their breasts in those days! ²⁰And pray that your flight be not in winter, nor on the sabbath. ²¹For then the tribulation will be great, such as never was from the beginning of the world, and never more shall be. ²²And except those days were shortened, there would be no flesh saved: but for the elect's sake these days shall be shortened. ²³Then if any man say unto you, Lo! here is the Messiah, or there; believe it not: ²⁴for false Messiahs and false prophets shall arise, and give out great signs and wonders; so as to deceive, if it were possible, even the elect. ²⁵Behold, I have forewarned you. ²⁶Therefore if they say to you, He is in the wilderness; go not out: lo! he is in the secret closets; believe it not. ²⁷For as the lightning cometh out from the east, and flashes to the west; so shall be the coming of the Son of man. ²⁸For wheresoever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together. ²⁹Then, immediately after the tribulation of those days, shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken. ³⁰And then shall the sign of the Son of man appear in the heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth lament bitterly, and they shall see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. ³¹And he shall send forth his angels with a trumpet, and a great shout, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the extremities of the heavens to the extremities of the same.

³²Learn then a parable from the fig-tree; when its branch is now tender, and the leaves shoot forth, ye know that summer is nigh: ³³just so ye, when ye behold these things, know that it is near, even at the gates. ³⁴Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away until all these things shall be done. ³⁵Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall in no wise pass away. ³⁶But of that day and hour no man knoweth, not even the angels of heaven, but my Father alone. ³⁷But as the days of Noah were, so also shall the coming of the Son of man be. ³⁸For as they were in the days preceding the deluge, eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, ³⁹and they knew it not till the deluge came, and swept them all away; such also shall the coming of the Son of man be. ⁴⁰Then two shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other dismissed. ⁴¹Two women grinding at the mill; the one taken, the other dismissed. ⁴²Watch therefore: for ye know not at what hour your Master cometh. ⁴³And this observe, that if the master of the family had known in which watch of the night the thief would have come, he would have watched, and not have suffered him to break into his house. ⁴⁴Therefore be ye also prepared: for in an hour that ye think not, the Son of man cometh.

⁴⁵Who then is the faithful and provident servant, whom his Lord hath appointed over his household, to give them meat in the proper time? ⁴⁶Blessed is that servant whom his Lord when he cometh shall find thus occupied. ⁴⁷Verily I say unto you, that he will place him over all his substance. ⁴⁸But if that wicked servant say in his heart, My master will be a long while ere he comes; ⁴⁹and shall begin to beat his fellow-servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; ⁵⁰the master of that servant will come in a day that he doth not expect him, and at an hour which he knoweth not. ⁵¹And will cut him asunder, and give him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

T HEN shall the kingdom of heaven be like to ten virgins, who taking their lamps, went forth to meet the bridegroom. ²But five of them were provident, and five foolish. ³Those who were taking their lamps, took no oil with them: ⁴but the provident took oil in their vessels with their lamps. ⁵But as the bridegroom stayed long, they all slumbered and slept. ⁶Then at midnight the cry came, Behold, the bridegroom is coming; go forth to meet him. ⁷Then all these virgins arose, and set about trimming their lamps. ⁸And the foolish said to the provident, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. ⁹But the provident replied, saying, No; lest there be not a sufficiency for us and you: but go rather to those who sell, and buy for yourselves. ¹⁰But while they were gone away to buy, the bridegroom came; and they who were prepared went in with him to the marriage-feast: and the door was shut. ¹¹Then came afterwards the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us. ¹²But he answering said, Verily, I know you not. ¹³Watch therefore, for ye know not the day nor the hour in which the Son of man cometh.

¹⁴For the case is like that of a man, who travelling abroad, called his own servants, and delivered to them his goods. ¹⁵And to one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one, to each according to his several capacity; and immediately went abroad. ¹⁶He then who had received the five talents, went and traded with them, and acquired five other talents. ¹⁷In the same manner also he that had the two, gained also himself two others. ¹⁸But he that had received the one talent, went and digged a hole in the ground, and hid the silver of his master. ¹⁹Then after a long absence the master of these servants cometh, and maketh a reckoning with them. ²⁰And he who had received the five talents, coming to him, brought five other talents, saying, Sir, thou deliveredst to me five talents: I have gained to them five other talents. ²¹His master said to him, Well done, good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will place thee over many: enter into the joy of thy master. ²²Then came also he that had received the two talents: and said, Sir, thou deliveredst to me two talents: lo! I have gained to them two other talents. ²³His master said to him, Well done, good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will place thee over many: enter thou into thy master's joy. ²⁴Then came also he that had received the one talent, and said, Sir, knowing thee, that thou art a severe man, reaping where thou hast not sowed, and gathering from whence thou hast not scattered: ²⁵and being afraid, I went and hid thy talent in the ground: see here, thou hast thine own. ²⁶Then his master answering said to him, Thou wicked and idle slave, thou knewest that I reap whence I had not sown, and gather where I had not scattered: ²⁷thou oughtest then to have placed my money with the bankers, so when I came I should have received my own with interest. ²⁸Take therefore from him the talent, and give it to him that hath the ten talents. ²⁹For to every one that hath shall be given, and he shall abound: but from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him. ³⁰And cast the unprofitable servant into the outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

³¹But when the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit on the throne of his glory: ³²and before him shall all the nations be gathered together; and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd separates the sheep from the goats: ³³and he shall place the sheep at his right hand, but the goats at the left. ³⁴Then shall the King say to those on his right-hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world; ³⁵for I was hungry, and ye gave me to eat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me to drink: I was a stranger, and ye received me hospitably: ³⁶naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye took care of me: I was in prison, and ye came to me. ³⁷Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee hungry, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink? ³⁸When indeed saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? ³⁹When indeed saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? ⁴⁰And the king answering shall say to them, Verily I tell you, for as much as ye have done it to one of these my brethren, the very least of them, ye have done it unto me.

⁴¹Then shall he say also to those on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: ⁴²for I was hungry, and ye gave me nothing to eat: I was thirsty, and ye gave

me nothing to drink: ⁴³I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye did not clothe me: sick, and in prison, and ye took no care of me. ⁴⁴Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? ⁴⁵Then shall he reply to them, saying, For as much as ye have not done it to one of the least of these, neither have ye done it to me. ⁴⁶And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

CHAP. XXVI.

AND it came to pass, that when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said to his disciples, ²Ye know that after two days is the passover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified. ³Then were the chief priests and scribes, and the elders of the people gathered together in the palace of the high-priest, called Caiaphas. ⁴And they consulted together, how they might seize Jesus by guile, and put him to death. ⁵But they said, Not on the feast-day, lest there be a tumult among the people.

⁶Now when Jesus was at Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, ⁷there came to him a woman having an alabaster-box of very precious aromatic ointment, and poured it upon his head as he sat at table. ⁸But when the disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, For what end is this waste? ⁹For this ointment might have been sold for a considerable sum, and given to the poor. ¹⁰Then Jesus knowing it, said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath performed a good act upon me: ¹¹for the poor ye have always with you, but me ye have not always: ¹²for in pouring this odoriferous ointment on my body, she hath done it for my burial. ¹³Verily I say unto you, Wherever this Gospel is preached through the whole world, what she hath done shall be also spoken of for a memorial of her.

¹⁴Then went one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, to the chief priests, ¹⁵and said, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? Then they placed before him thirty pieces of silver. ¹⁶And from that time he sought an opportunity to deliver him up to them.

¹⁷Then on the first day of unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus, saying to him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the passover? ¹⁸And he said, Go into the city, unto such a man, and say unto him, The Master saith, My time is at hand: I will keep the passover with my disciples at thy house. ¹⁹And his disciples did as Jesus commanded them; and they made ready the passover. ²⁰And when the evening was come, he sat down at table with the twelve. ²¹And as they were eating, he said, Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me. ²²And exceedingly grieved, they began to say to him every one of them, Lord, am I the person? ²³But he answering said, He that dippeth his hand with me into the dish, that man shall betray me. ²⁴The Son of man indeed is departing, as it is written of him: but wo to that man, by whom the Son of man is betrayed! well had it been for that man if he had never had a being. ²⁵Then Judas, who betrayed him, addressing him said, Master, is it I? He saith to him, Thou hast named the person.

²⁶Then as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessing, brake, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat: this is my body. ²⁷And taking the cup, and giving thanks, he gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of this: ²⁸for this is my blood, that *blood* of the new testament, which is shed for many, for the remission of sins. ²⁹And I tell you, That I will no more henceforth drink of this produce of the vine, until that day when I drink it with you, new, in the kingdom of my Father. ³⁰And when they had sung an hymn, they went out to the mount of Olives.

³¹Then saith Jesus unto them, Ye all will be offended at me this night: for it is written, "I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad." ³²But after I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee. ³³Then Peter, taking up the word, said to him, Though all should be offended at thee, yet will I never be offended. ³⁴Jesus saith to him, I tell thee of a certainty, that this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. ³⁵Peter said to him, Though I should die with thee, never will I deny thee. In like manner also said all the disciples. ³⁶Then cometh Jesus with them to a place called Gethsemane, and saith to his disciples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder. ³⁷And taking Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, he began to be deeply sorrowful, and to be

overwhelmed with dejection. ³⁸Then saith he to them. My soul is exceeding sorrowful even to death: abide here, and watch with me. ³⁹And going a little farther, he fell on his face, praying, and saying, My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt. ⁴⁰And he cometh to the disciples, and findeth them sleeping, and he saith to Peter, Is it so, that ye have not strength to watch with me one hour? ⁴¹Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh weak. ⁴²Again the second time he went away, and prayed, saying, O my Father, If it be not possible, that this cup pass from me, but that I should drink it, thy will be done. ⁴³And coming, he found them asleep again, for their eyes were weighed down. ⁴⁴And leaving them, he went away again, and prayed the third time, repeating the same sentence. ⁴⁵Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, Do ye still sleep on, and repose yourselves? lo! the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. ⁴⁶Arise, let us go: lo! he that betrayeth me approaches.

⁴⁷And while he was yet speaking, behold, Judas one of the twelve came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the people. ⁴⁸Now he that betrayed him had given them a signal, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he: seize him. ⁴⁹And immediately approaching to Jesus, he said, Hail, master; and kissed him. ⁵⁰Then spake Jesus to him, Friend, for what purpose art thou here? Then approaching they laid hands on Jesus, and seized him.

⁵¹And behold, one of those who were with Jesus stretching out his hand, drew his sword, and striking at a servant of the high-priest, cut off his ear. ⁵²Then saith Jesus unto him, Return thy sword into its sheath: for all who take the sword, shall perish by the sword. ⁵³Thinkest thou, that I cannot now entreat my Father, and he will give me more than twelve legions of angels? ⁵⁴But how then would the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?

⁵⁵In that hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a robber, with swords and staves to apprehend me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid not hold upon me. ⁵⁶But all this is come to pass, that the scriptures of the prophets should be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled.

⁵⁷Then they who had apprehended Jesus, brought him to Caiaphas the high-priest, where the scribes and elders were assembled. ⁵⁸But Peter followed him at a great distance unto the palace of the high-priest, and entering in, sat down with the servants, to see the issue. ⁵⁹Now the chief priests and elders and the whole sanhedrim, sought false witness against Jesus, that they might put him to death; ⁶⁰and found none: and though many false witnesses came, they found it not *sufficient*. But at the last two false witnesses stepping forth, ⁶¹said, This fellow said, I am able to pull down the temple of God, and to build it up in three days. ⁶²And the high-priest rising up, said to him, Answerest thou nothing? what do these men witness against thee? ⁶³But Jesus was silent. And the high-priest addressing him, said, I adjure thee, by the living God, that thou tell us, if thou art the Messiah, the Son of God. ⁶⁴Jesus saith to him, Thou hast spoken *the fact*. Moreover I tell you, hereafter ye shall see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven. ⁶⁵Then the high-priest rent his garments, saying, he hath blasphemed: what farther need have we of witnesses? lo! now ye have heard his blasphemy: ⁶⁶what think ye? They answered and said, He is deserving of death. ⁶⁷Then they spit in his face, and buffeted him about; and some slapt his face with their hands, ⁶⁸saying, Prophecy to us, you Messiah, who it is that struck thee!

⁶⁹Now Peter sat without in the hall: and there came to him a single maid-servant, saying, Thou also wert with Jesus of Galilee. ⁷⁰But he denied it before them all, asserting, I know not what thou art saying. ⁷¹Then as he was going out at the gate, another maid-servant saw him, and saith to those who were there, This fellow also was with Jesus of Nazareth. ⁷²Then again he denied with an oath, I know not the man. ⁷³But after a little while they who stood by, came up and said to Peter, Assuredly thou also art one of them: for even thy speech maketh thee manifest. ⁷⁴Then began he to utter the bitterest curses, and to swear, I know not the man. And immediately the cock crew. ⁷⁵And Peter remembered the word of Jesus, who had said unto him, Before the cock shall crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And going out, he wept bitterly.

NOW when the morning came, all the chief priests and the elders of the people took counsel against Jesus how they might put him to death. ²And having bound him, they led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor. ³Then Judas who betrayed him, seeing that he was condemned, repenting, carried back the thirty silver pieces to the chief priests and the elders, ⁴saying, I have sinned, in betraying innocent blood. But they said, What is that to us? see thou to that. ⁵And throwing down the silver pieces in the temple, he departed; and going out, hanged himself. ⁶Then the chief priests taking up the silver pieces, said, It is not lawful to put them to the treasure destined for sacred uses, because it is the price of blood. ⁷So taking counsel, they bought with them a potter's field, as a burial-place for strangers. ⁸Therefore is that field called, The field of blood unto this day. ⁹Then was fulfilled what was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, And they took the thirty silver pieces, the price of him who had been estimated at that rate, whom they of the children of Israel did value: ¹⁰and gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord had ordered me.

¹¹Then was Jesus placed before the governor, and the governor interrogated him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? Then Jesus replied to him, Thou sayest *true*. ¹²And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he made no reply. ¹³Then saith Pilate to him, Hearst thou not how many things they testify against thee? ¹⁴And he made him no reply, no not to a single word: so that the governor marvelled exceedingly. ¹⁵Now at the feast, the governor had been accustomed to release one prisoner to the people, whomsoever they chose. ¹⁶And they had at that time a notorious prisoner, called Barabbas. ¹⁷Being therefore gathered around him, Pilate said to them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus called Messiah? ¹⁸For he knew that out of envy they had delivered him up.

¹⁹Then, as he was sitting on the tribunal, his wife sent a message to him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that righteous person; for I have suffered much to-day in a dream on his account. ²⁰But the chief priests and elders persuaded the populace that they should ask for Barabbas, and destroy Jesus. ²¹The governor repeating the question, said to them, Which of the two will ye that I release unto you? They said Barabbas. ²²Pilate saith unto them, What then shall I do with Jesus, who is called the Messiah? They all say to him, Let him be crucified. ²³The governor replied, But what evil hath he done? They cried out with greater vehemence, saying, Let him be crucified. ²⁴When Pilate saw that it was of no use to contend, but that rather a tumult was rising, he took water, and washed his hands before the people, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this righteous man: ye must answer for it. ²⁵Then all the people answering said, His blood be on us, and on our children.

²⁶Then he released unto them Barabbas: but having scourged Jesus, he delivered him up to be crucified. ²⁷Thereupon the soldiers of the governor taking Jesus away to the Prætorium, gathered around him the whole band: ²⁸and stripping him, put about him a scarlet cloak. ²⁹And plating a crown of thorns, they placed it on his head, and a cane in his right hand: and bowing the knee before him, mocked him, saying, Hail, king of the Jews! ³⁰And spitting upon him, they took the cane, and struck him upon his head. ³¹And when they had insulted him, they took off from him the cloak, and put his own garments on him, and led him away to crucify him. ³²And as they were going out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name; him they compelled to carry his cross.

³³And when they were come to a place called Golgotha (which is called the place of a skull), ³⁴they gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall: and having tasted it, he refused to drink. ³⁵Then having crucified him, they parted his garments, casting the lot: that it might be fulfilled, what was spoken by the prophet, They parted my garments among them, and for my vesture they threw the lot. ³⁶And sitting down, they guarded him there. ³⁷And they placed over his head his accusation in writing, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS. ³⁸Then were crucified with him two robbers, one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

³⁹And they who were passing by reviled him, shaking their heads, ⁴⁰and saying, Thou that canst pull down the temple, and build it in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, descend from the cross.

⁴¹And with similar language also did the chief priests, insulting him, with the scribes and elders, and Pharisees, ⁴²say, He saved others, himself he is unable to save. If he be the King of Israel, let him come down now from the cross, and we will believe him. ⁴³He trusted in God; let him now deliver him, if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God. ⁴⁴And in the same manner also, did the robbers who were crucified with him, revile him.

⁴⁵Now from the fifth hour darkness fell upon all the land, unto the ninth hour. ⁴⁶But about the ninth hour Jesus cried out with an exceeding loud cry, saying, Eli! Eli! lama, sabachthani? that is, My God! my God! why hast thou forsaken me? ⁴⁷Then some of those who stood there, hearing him, said, This man is calling out for Elias. ⁴⁸And immediately one of them, running, and taking a sponge, and filling it with vinegar, and fastening it to a pole, put it to him to drink. ⁴⁹The others said, Let him alone, let us see whether Elias will come to save him.

⁵⁰Then Jesus crying again with a loud voice gave up the ghost. ⁵¹And, lo! the vail of the temple was rent in two, from the upper part to the bottom; and the earth was shaken; and the rocks were rent; ⁵²and the sepulchres were opened; and many bodies of saints, who slept, arose; ⁵³and coming out of the sepulchres after his resurrection, entered into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

⁵⁴Then the centurion, and they who were with him, guarding Jesus, when they saw the earthquake, and the things which were done, were exceedingly terrified, saying, Assuredly this was the Son of God.

⁵⁵Now there were many women on the spot, looking on at a distance, who had followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him: ⁵⁶among whom was Mary Magdalen, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee's children.

⁵⁷But when the evening was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, whose name was Joseph, who himself also was a disciple of Jesus: ⁵⁸he going in to Pilate, begged for the body of Jesus. Then Pilate ordered the body to be given him. ⁵⁹And Joseph receiving the body, wrapped it in clean linen; ⁶⁰and laid it in his own new sepulchre, which he had hewn out in a rock: and rolling a vast stone against the door of the sepulchre, departed. ⁶¹And Mary Magdalen, and the other Mary, were there sitting opposite the sepulchre.

⁶²Now on the morrow, which is the day after the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came in a body to Pilate, ⁶³saying, Sir, we have reflected, that this deceiver, when yet alive, said, After three days I will rise again. ⁶⁴Command therefore that the sepulchre be made perfectly secure until the third day, lest his disciples coming by night, steal him, and say to the people, He is risen from the dead, so the last delusion would be worse than the first. ⁶⁵Then said Pilate unto them, Ye have a guard, go and make it as secure as ye think fit. ⁶⁶So they went and made the sepulchre secure, putting a seal upon the stone, after placing the guard.

CHAP. XXVIII.

NOW after the eve of the sabbath, as the light was dawning, towards the first day of the week, Mary Magdalen had come, and the other Mary, to view the sepulchre. ²And, lo! there was a great earthquake; for an angel of the Lord descending from heaven, came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. ³His aspect was as lightning, and his raiment white as snow. ⁴And for fear of him the guards shook, and became as dead men. ⁵Then the angel addressing them, said to the women, Fear not ye; for I know that ye are seeking Jesus who was crucified. ⁶He is not here: he is risen, as he said. Come hither, behold the place where the Lord lay. ⁷And go quickly, tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead: and, lo! he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him, as he said unto you. ⁸And they went out quickly from the sepulchre with fear, and great joy; and ran to carry the tidings to his disciples. ⁹And as they were going to tell the disciples, then behold Jesus met them saying, Hail! And they came and held him by the feet, and worshipped him. ¹⁰Then saith Jesus to them, Be not affrighted: go, tell my disciples that they go into Galilee, there shall they see me.

¹¹And as they were going, some of the guards who were come into the city, had told the chief priests all things which had happened. ¹²And being assembled with the elders, and having held a council, they gave a

large sum of money to the soldiers,¹³saying, Report, that his disciples coming by night stole him away, while you were asleep. ¹⁴And if this comes to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and preserve you harmless. ¹⁵So they took the money, and did as they were instructed. And this account is circulated among the Jews to this day.

¹⁶Then the eleven disciples went into Galilee, to the mountain, where Jesus had ordered them. ¹⁷And when they saw him, they worshipped him. Still some doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus approaching, spake to them, saying, All power is given me in heaven and upon earth. ¹⁹Go therefore, make disciples among all nations, baptising them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: ²⁰teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo! I am with you at all times even to the end of the world. Amen.

THE GOSPEL

ACCORDING TO

M A R K.

CHAP. I.

THE beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God; ²as it is written in the prophets¹¹; "Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, he shall prepare thy way before thee. ³The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare the way of the Lord, make his paths strait." ⁴John was baptising in the wilderness, and preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins. ⁵And all the country of Judea went out to him, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptised by him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins.

⁶Now John was clothed with a camel's hair garment, and a girdle of leather about his loins; and his meat was locusts and wild honey. ⁷And he preached, saying, One mightier than I is coming after me, the string of whose shoes I am not worthy, stooping down, to unloose. ⁸I indeed baptise you with water; but he shall baptise you with the Holy Ghost.

⁹And it came to pass in those days, Jesus came from Nazareth in Galilee, and was baptised of John in Jordan. ¹⁰And immediately on going up from the water, he saw the heavens divided by a chasm, and the Spirit as a dove descending upon him: ¹¹and a voice came from heaven, Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased. ¹²And immediately the Spirit impelled him to go into the wilderness. ¹³And he was in the wilderness forty days, tempted by Satan; and was with the wild beasts; and the angels ministred unto him.

¹⁴But after John was delivered up, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God: ¹⁵and saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God draweth nigh: repent, and believe the gospel.

¹⁶And as he walked near the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew his brother casting a net into the sea; for they were fishermen. ¹⁷And Jesus said to them, Come after me, and I will appoint you to be fishers of men: ¹⁸and immediately leaving their nets, they followed him. ¹⁹And going from thence a little farther, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, and others in the vessel mending the nets. ²⁰And immediately he called them: and leaving their father Zebedee in the vessel with the hirelings, they went after him.

²¹And they entered into Capernaum; and immediately on the sabbath going into the synagogue, he taught. ²²And they were struck with astonishment at his doctrine; for he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes. ²³And there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit; and he cried out, ²⁴saying, Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God. ²⁵And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Be silent, and come out of him. ²⁶And the unclean spirit threw him into convulsions, and crying with a loud voice, came out of him.

²⁷And they were all in astonishment, so that they questioned one another, saying, What is this? what is this new doctrine? that with authority he commands even the unclean spirits, and they obey him?

²⁸And there went out a report of him immediately into all the region of Galilee round about.

²⁹Then straightway going out of the synagogue, they came into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John. ³⁰But Simon's wife's mother lay in a fever, and immediately they informed him of her. ³¹And he came and raised her up, and the fever left her immediately, and she waited upon them.

³²But when the evening was come, after the sun was set, they brought unto him all that had illnesses, and the demoniacs. ³³And the whole city was gathered together about the door; ³⁴and he healed many who were grievously afflicted with a variety of diseases; and he cast out many devils; and suffered not the devils to speak for they knew him.

³⁵And very early (the night being far advanced towards morning) rising up, he went forth, and retired into a desert place, and there prayed. ³⁶And Simon, and those who were with him, eagerly pursued him; ³⁷and when they had found him, they say unto him, All men are inquiring after thee. ³⁸And he said unto them, Let us go into the neighbouring towns, that I may preach there also; for unto this purpose came I forth. ³⁹And he was preaching in their synagogues, through all Galilee, and casting out devils.

⁴⁰And there came to him a leper, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. ⁴¹Then Jesus, moved with compassion, stretching out his hand, touched him, and said to him, I will; be thou cleansed. ⁴²And as he spake, the leprosy instantly departed from him, and he was cleansed. ⁴³And giving him a strict charge, he immediately sent him away; ⁴⁴and said to him, Take care, that thou speak not a word to any man: but go, shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy purification, what Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them. ⁴⁵But he going out, began to proclaim it much, and to publish abroad an account of it, so that he could no more openly come into the city; but was without in desert places; and they came to him from all parts of the country.

CHAP. II.

AND again he entered into Capernaum after some days: and it was heard, that he was in the house; ²and immediately many collected round him, so that there was no room, not even at the door; and he spake the word to them. ³And they come to him, carrying a paralytic, borne of four: ⁴and not being able to come nigh him because of the crowd, they stripped off the roofing of the house where he was; and having broken a way through, they let down with ropes the couch, on which the paralytic lay. ⁵Then Jesus beholding their faith, saith to the paralytic, Son, thy sins are forgiven thee. ⁶Now there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, ⁷Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but the one God? ⁸And instantly Jesus knowing by his spirit, that they reasoned thus among each other, said to them, Why reason ye about these things in your hearts? ⁹Which is the easier thing, to say to a paralytic, Thy sins are forgiven thee; or to say, Arise and take up thy couch, and walk away? ¹⁰But that ye may know that the Son of man hath authority upon earth to forgive sins, he saith to the paralytic, ¹¹I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go into thy house. ¹²And he arose instantly, and taking up his couch, went out before them all; so that they were all astonished, and glorified God, saying, We never before saw any thing like this.

¹³And he went forth again to the sea side; and all the people came unto him; and he taught them. ¹⁴And passing by, he saw Levi the son of Alpheus sitting at the custom-house, and he saith to him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him ¹⁵And it came to pass, as he sat at table in his house, many publicans also, and sinners, sat down with Jesus and his disciples; for they were numerous, and they followed him. ¹⁶And the scribes and the Pharisees seeing him eat with publicans and sinners, said to his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicans and sinners? ¹⁷And when Jesus heard it, he said unto them, They who are in strong health have no need of a physician, but they who have illness: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

¹⁸And the disciples of John and of the Pharisees kept fasts; and they came and said to him, Wherefore do the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees, fast? but thy disciples keep no fast. ¹⁹And Jesus said to them, Can the children of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast. ²⁰But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days. ²¹And no man seweth on a patch of cloth undressed upon an old garment: but if otherwise, the new piece supplied taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worse. ²²And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; but if otherwise, the new wine will burst the bottles, and the wine will be spilt, and the bottles destroyed: but new wine must be put into new bottles. ²³And he was walking through the cornfields on the sabbath; and his disciples as they went on the road plucked the ears of corn. ²⁴And the Pharisees said to him, See, why are they doing on the sabbath, what is not lawful? ²⁵And he said unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he was under necessity, and was hungry, himself and they who were with him? ²⁶How he entered into the house of God to Abiathar the high-priest; and did eat the shewbread, which it was not lawful for any to eat except the priests, and he gave also to those who were with him? ²⁷And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, not man for the sabbath. ²⁸Wherefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

CHAP. III.

AND he entered again into the synagogue; and a man was there who had a withered hand. ²And they watched him if he would cure him on the sabbath; that they might accuse him. ³And he saith to the man who had the withered hand, Rise up in the midst. ⁴And he saith to them, Is it lawful on the sabbath day to do good, or to do evil, to preserve life, or to kill? but they were silent. ⁵Then looking round about on them with indignation, exceedingly grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith to the man, Stretch out thine hand; and he stretched it out: and his hand was restored sound as the other. ⁶And the Pharisees instantly going out, held a council with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.

⁷And Jesus retired with his disciples to the sea side; and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judea, ⁸and from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and from the farther side of Jordan; and they around Tyre and Sidon, a vast multitude, when they heard what wonders he did, came unto him. ⁹And he spoke to his disciples that a little boat should be ready for him, because of the crowd, lest they should press upon him: ¹⁰for he healed many; insomuch, that they thronged in upon him, that they might touch him, as many as had afflictive diseases. ¹¹And the unclean spirits, when they beheld him, fell down before him, and cried out saying, Thou art the Son of God. ¹²And he repeatedly charged them, that they should not make him known.

¹³And he went up into a mountain, and called to him those whom he chose; and they came to him. ¹⁴And he appointed twelve to be with him, and to send them out to preach: ¹⁵and to have authority to cure diseases, and to cast out devils: ¹⁶and Simon he surnamed Peter; ¹⁷and James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James; and surnamed them Boanerges, that is, sons of thunder: ¹⁸and Andrew and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite, ¹⁹and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him: and they came into an house.

²⁰And the multitude came together again, so that they were not able even to eat bread. ²¹And when his relations heard it, they went out to restrain him, for they said, He is transported beyond all bounds.

²²And the scribes who came down from Jerusalem, said, He hath Beelzebub, and by this prince of the devils doth he cast out devils. ²³So calling them to him, he spake to them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan? ²⁴Even if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand: ²⁵and if a family be divided against itself, that family cannot be established. ²⁶So if Satan rise up against himself, and is divided, he cannot subsist, but cometh to an end. ²⁷No man entering into his house, can plunder a strong man's goods, unless he first bind the strong man, then indeed he spoileth his house. ²⁸Verily I say unto you, That all sins shall be forgiven to the sons of men, and the blasphemies,

whatsoever they may blaspheme: ²⁹but whosoever shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost, hath no forgiveness to eternity, but is adjudged to everlasting damnation. ³⁰Because they said, he hath an unclean spirit.

³¹Then came his brethren and his mother, and standing without sent unto him, calling aloud for him. ³²And the multitude sat around him, and they said to him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without are asking for thee. ³³And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother or my brethren? ³⁴And looking about on those who were sitting in a circle round him, he saith, Behold my mother and my brethren! ³⁵For whosoever shall do the will of God, that person is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

CHAP. IV.

AND again he began to teach by the sea side: and a vast multitude was assembled about him, so that he went into a vessel to sit down on the sea, and all the multitude was on the land close by the sea. ²And he taught them in parables many things, and said unto them in the course of his teaching, ³Hear me! Behold, a sower went out to sow; ⁴and it came to pass as he sowed, some fell by the road side, and the birds of the air came and ate it up. ⁵And some fell on a rocky soil, where it had not much mold, and immediately it sprung up, because it had no depth of earth: ⁶and when the sun arose it was scorched up; and because it had not root, it withered away. ⁷And some fell among thorns, and the thorns sprang up with it and choked it, and it produced no fruit. ⁸And some fell on good ground, and produced fruit, growing up, and increasing, and yielded one part thirty fold, and another sixty, and another an hundred. ⁹And he said unto them, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. ¹⁰But when they were alone, those who were about him with the twelve, asked him the meaning of the parable. ¹¹And he said to them, To you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God; but to those who are without, all things are in parables: ¹²That seeing they may see, yet not perceive; and hearing may hear, yet not understand; lest at any time they should be converted, and their sins be forgiven them. ¹³And he saith to them, Know ye not this parable? and how will ye know all parables? ¹⁴The sower soweth the word. ¹⁵Now these are they by the road side; where the word is sown; and when they have heard, immediately Satan cometh, and taketh away the word sown on their hearts: ¹⁶and these in like manner are they who were sown on the rocky soil; who when they have heard the word, instantly with joy receive it; ¹⁷and have no root in themselves, but are temporary *professors*: afterwards, when tribulation cometh or persecution for the word's sake, immediately they are offended. ¹⁸And those are the sown among the thorns; such as are hearers of the word; ¹⁹but the anxious cares of this world, and the seducing nature of wealth, and inordinate desires after other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful. ²⁰And these are they who are sown on the good ground, such as hear the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirty fold, and some sixty, and some an hundred.

²¹And he said unto them, Is a lamp brought out to be put under a bushel, or under a bed, and not to be placed on a stand? ²²For there is nothing hid, but that it should be brought to light, nor is any thing concealed, but that it should come into open day. ²³If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear. ²⁴And he said unto them, Take heed what ye hear: with the measure ye mete, shall it be measured back to you; and something over shall be given to you that hear. ²⁵For to him that hath, there shall more be given to him; but he that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away from him.

²⁶And he said, The kingdom of heaven is of that kind, as if a man should cast seed into his field; ²⁷and sleep and rise, night and day, and the sown corn should sprout, and grow into length, he knoweth not how: ²⁸for the earth, naturally prolific, beareth fruit; first the blade, then the ear, then the full corn in the ear. ²⁹But when the grain is ready, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because harvest is come.

³⁰And he said, To what shall I liken the kingdom of God, and under what parabolic figure shall I represent it? ³¹It is like a grain of mustard, which when it is sown in the earth, is among the least of all the seeds which are upon the earth: ³²but when it is sown, it groweth up and becomes greater than all herbaceous plants, and produceth vast

branches; so that the birds of the air may roost under the shadow of it. ³³And with many such like parables spake he to them the word. ³⁴And without a parable spake he not unto them; but in private he explained them all to his disciples.

³⁵And the same day he saith unto them, as the evening shut in, Let us pass over to the other side. ³⁶And sending the multitude away, they took him just as he was in the vessel; and there were also some other little vessels with him. ³⁷And a great hurricane arose, and the waves broke into the vessel, so that it was now full of water: ³⁸and he was in the stern, sleeping on a pillow: and they awoke him, and say unto him, Master, is it no concern to thee that we are perishing? ³⁹And rising, he with authority charged the wind, and said to the sea, Silence! be still! And the wind subsided, and there was a great calm. ⁴⁰And he said to them, Why are ye so timorous? How is it that ye have not confidence? ⁴¹And they were filled with the most reverential awe, and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?

CHAP. V.

AND they came to the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes. ²And as he was going out of the vessel, immediately there met him a man with an unclean spirit, ³coming out of the tombs; who had his abode among the tombs; and no man could secure him, not even with chains; ⁴for he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains were burst asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces, and no man was able to master him: ⁵and continually night and day he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, screaming, and cutting himself with stones. ⁶But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him, ⁷and crying with a loud voice, said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus thou Son of God most high? I adjure thee by God, that thou dost not send me to torment. ⁸(For he had said unto him, Come out, unclean spirit, from the man.) ⁹And he interrogated him, What is thy name? and he replied, saying, Legion is my name; for we are many. ¹⁰And he entreated him much that he would not send them out of the country. ¹¹And a great herd of swine was there feeding on the mountain: ¹²and all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them. ¹³And immediately Jesus permitted them. And the unclean spirits going forth, entered into the swine; and the herd rushed violently down a precipice into the sea (they were about two thousand), and were suffocated in the sea. ¹⁴Then the swineherds fled, and carried the tidings into the city and into the country. And they went out to see what was done. ¹⁵And they came to Jesus, and saw the demoniac that had the legion, seated and clothed, and in his sound mind: and they were afraid. ¹⁶And they who saw the transaction, told them how it had been with the demoniac, and concerning the swine. ¹⁷And they began to entreat him to depart out of their coasts.

¹⁸And when he embarked on board the vessel, the demoniac besought him, that he might go with him. ¹⁹But Jesus did not permit him, but said to him, Go to thine house, and to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee. ²⁰And he went out, and began to publish in Decapolis, what great things Jesus had done for him: and all men marvelled.

²¹And when Jesus had passed over again in the vessel to the other side, a vast multitude came together unto him; and he was by the sea side. ²²And, behold, there cometh to him one of the rulers of the synagogue, named Jairus; and seeing him, fell at his feet, ²³and entreated him importunately, saying, My little daughter is at the last gasp; wilt thou come, and lay thy hands upon her, that she may recover, and she shall live. ²⁴And he went with him: and there followed him a great crowd, and they thronged him. ²⁵And a certain woman, having a flux of blood twelve years, ²⁶and had suffered much from many physicians; and had expended all she had, and was nothing better, but rather growing worse and worse; ²⁷when she heard of Jesus, came in the crowd behind him, and touched his garment: ²⁸for she said, If I but touch his clothes, I shall recover. ²⁹And instantly the fountain of her blood was dried up, and she felt in her body that she was cured of her afflictive disease. ³⁰And Jesus immediately perceiving in himself that miraculous power had gone forth from him, turning about in the crowd, said, Who

touched my garments? ³¹And his disciples said to him, Thou seest the crowd thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me? ³²And he looked round to see her who had done this. ³³Then the woman, fearful and trembling, knowing what had been done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth. ³⁴And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace, and be whole from thy distressing disease.

³⁵And while he was yet speaking, they came from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying, Thy daughter is dead; why dost thou trouble the master any further? ³⁶But Jesus, instantly hearing the account given, said to the ruler of the synagogue, Fear not, only believe. ³⁷And he permitted no person to follow him, but Peter, and James, and John a brother of James. ³⁸And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the confusion, as they were greatly lamenting and making loud moanings. ³⁹And entering in he saith, Why make ye this uproar, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth. ⁴⁰And they derided him; but he thrusting them all out, took the father and the mother of the maiden, and those who were with him, and went in where the damsel was laid out. ⁴¹And taking the hand of the damsel, he saith unto her, Talitha cumi! which is, being interpreted, Damsel, I say unto thee, arise! ⁴²And immediately the damsel arose and walked about, for she was twelve years old. And they were astonished with vast astonishment. ⁴³And he very strongly charged them that no person should know it; and ordered something to be given her to eat.

CHAP. VI.

AND he went out thence, and came into his native country; and his disciples followed him. ²And when the sabbath came, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many when they heard him were amazed, saying, Whence hath this man these things? and what is the wisdom given to him, that even such miracles are done by his hands? ³Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James and Joses, and Judah and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him. ⁴Then said Jesus unto them, A prophet is not without honour, save in his native place, and among his relations, and in his own family. ⁵And he could not do there any miracle, except that laying his hands on a few sick persons he cured them. ⁶And he marvelled at their infidelity.

And he went about the villages around, teaching. ⁷And called the twelve, and began to send them two and two, and gave them authority over unclean spirits. ⁸And he commanded them, that they should take nothing for the journey, except a staff only; neither scrip, nor bread, nor even brass money in their purse: ⁹wearing sandals, and not to be clothed with two coats. ¹⁰And he said unto them, Wheresoever ye enter into a family, there abide until ye depart thence. ¹¹And as many as shall not receive you, neither hearken to you, when ye go from thence, shake off the dust from beneath your feet, for a testimony against them. Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment, than for that city. ¹²And going forth, they preached, that men should repent. ¹³And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many sick persons, and cured them.

¹⁴And king Herod heard it (for his name was celebrated), and he said, This is John the Baptist, he is risen from the dead, and therefore miracles are wrought by him. ¹⁵Others said, That it is Elias; and others said, He is a prophet, or as one of the prophets. ¹⁶But when Herod heard it, he said, This is John whom I beheaded; he is risen from the dead. ¹⁷For Herod himself had sent and seized upon John, and bound him in prison, for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife; because he had married her. ¹⁸For John said to Herod, It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife. ¹⁹Therefore Herodias bore him a rooted resentment, and would have slain him; yet could not: ²⁰for Herod feared John, knowing him to be a righteous and holy man; and paid great attention to him and when he heard him, did many things, and heard him with delight. ²¹And a favourable day being come for her purpose, when Herod on his birth-day made a supper for his nobles, and military commanders, and the principal personages of Galilee; ²²and the daughter of this Herodias coming in, and dancing, and delighting Herod, and his company, the king said to the damsel, Ask me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee.

²³And he swore unto her, That whatsoever thou shalt ask, I will give thee, even to the half of my kingdom. ²⁴Then she went out and said to her mother, What shall I ask? and she said, The head of John the Baptist. ²⁵And she came in immediately with eagerness to the king, and asked, saying, I desire that thou wilt give me on the spot, in a charger, the head of John the Baptist. ²⁶And the king was exceedingly sorry; yet on account of his oath, and those who sat with him, he would not refuse her. ²⁷And the king immediately sending a centinel, commanded his head to be brought thither: and he went, and beheaded him in the prison, ²⁸and brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel, and the damsel gave it to her mother. ²⁹And when his disciples heard it, they came and took up his corpse, and laid it in a sepulchre.

³⁰And the disciples came together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught. ³¹And he said unto them, Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and repose a little while: for there were multitudes coming and going, so that they had not even time to eat. ³²And they went into a desert place in a vessel privately. ³³And the multitudes observed them going off, and many knew him, and ran thither on foot out of all the cities, and got before them, and came together unto him. ³⁴And Jesus, when he landed, saw a vast multitude, and was moved with compassion towards them, for they were as sheep having no shepherd: and he began to teach them many things. ³⁵And when great part of the day was already gone, his disciples coming to him said, This is a desert place, and much of the day is already gone: ³⁶send them away, that they may go into the country places and villages around, and buy themselves bread; for they have nothing to eat. ³⁷But he answering said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy the value of two hundred denarii, in loaves, and give them to eat? ³⁸But he said to them, How many loaves have ye? go and see. And when they knew, they said, Five, and two fishes. ³⁹And he commanded them to seat them all by companies on the green grass: ⁴⁰and they lay along row against row, a hundred deep, and fifty wide. ⁴¹And taking the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave them to the disciples, that they should set them before them, and the two fishes he divided among them all. ⁴²And they did all eat, and were filled: ⁴³and they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes. ⁴⁴And they who did eat of the loaves, were about five thousand men.

⁴⁵And immediately he compelled his disciples to go on board the vessel, and to go before him to the other side, to Bethsaida, while he sent the multitude away. ⁴⁶And having bid them farewell, he went into a mountain to pray. ⁴⁷And when the evening was come, the vessel was in the midst of the sea, and himself alone on the land. ⁴⁸And he saw them greatly fatigued with rowing, for the wind was contrary to them: and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh to them, walking upon the sea, and seemed intending to pass by them. ⁴⁹But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they thought it was an apparition, and screamed out: ⁵⁰for they all saw him, and were greatly agitated: and straitway he spoke to them, and said, Take courage, it is I, be not terrified. ⁵¹And he went up to them into the vessel, and the wind ceased and they were beyond all imagination amazed in themselves, and lost in wonder. ⁵²For they reflected not upon the loaves, for their heart was hardened.

⁵³And when they had passed over, they came to the land of Gennesareth, and went on shore. ⁵⁴And when they came out of the vessel, immediately perceiving him, ⁵⁵running through all parts of that country, they began to carry about on couches those who were afflicted with diseases, wherever they heard that he was. ⁵⁶And wherever they entered into villages or cities, or country places, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch, if but the fringe on his garment; and as many as touched it, were cured.

CHAP. VII.

AND the Pharisees, and some of the scribes, who came from Jerusalem, collected together around him. ²And seeing some of his disciples eating bread with hands unclean, that is, unwashed, they found fault. ³For the Pharisees and all the Jews, unless they wash their hands to the wrist, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders. ⁴And coming from the market, unless they have washed, they never eat. And there are

many other things which they have by tradition received to observe, as the washings of cups, and pots, and vessels of brass, and couches. ⁵Then the Pharisees and the scribes asked him, Why do not thy disciples walk conformable to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashed hands? ⁶Then he answering said to them, Well did Isaiah prophesy concerning you hypocrites, as it is written¹², "This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me. ⁷Now vainly do they worship me, while teaching doctrines the commandments of men." ⁸For leaving the command of God, ye adhere to the tradition of men, the washings of pots and cups; and many other such like things ye practise. ⁹And he said to them, Strangely do ye make void the command of God, that ye may observe your tradition. ¹⁰For Moses said¹³, "Honour thy father and thy mother:" and "he that curseth father or mother, let him assuredly be put to death¹⁴." ¹¹But ye affirm, If a man say to his father or mother, it is Corban (that is, a gift), which otherwise might have been advantageous to thee from me; ¹²then ye permit him no more to do any thing for his father, or his mother; ¹³abrogating the word of God by the tradition, which ye have transmitted down; and many such like things ye do.

¹⁴And he called to him all the multitude, and said unto them, hear me all of you, and understand. ¹⁵There is nothing from without a man, that entering into him, can make him unclean: but the things which come out from him, these are the things which make a man unclean. ¹⁶If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear. ¹⁷And when he was come into the house from the multitude, his disciples asked him concerning the parable. ¹⁸And he saith to them, Are ye also so defective of intelligence? Do you not consider, that every thing from without that entereth into a man, cannot make him unclean? ¹⁹because it entereth not into his heart, but into his belly, and goeth out into the vault, carrying off all the impurities of the food. ²⁰But, said he, what cometh out of a man, that makes a man unclean. ²¹For from within out of the heart of men proceed wicked reasonings, adulteries, whoredoms, murders, ²²thefts, inordinate cravings, mischievous actions, knavery, lewdness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, folly: ²³all these wicked things come from within, and render a person unclean.

²⁴And rising, he departed thence into the confines of Tyre and Sidon; and entering into a house, desired that no man should know it: yet he could not be hid. ²⁵For a woman hearing of him, whose daughter had an unclean spirit, came and fell at his feet. ²⁶The woman was a Greek, a Syrophenician by birth, and she entreated him that the devil might be cast out of her daughter. ²⁷And Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be fed, for it is not proper to take the children's bread, and throw it to the dogs. ²⁸But she replied, and said to him, True, Lord, yet the dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs. ²⁹And he said unto her, For this speech, go home, the devil is gone out of thy daughter. ³⁰And going to her house, she found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid on a couch.

³¹And again departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came to the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis. ³²And they bring him a deaf man, who could scarcely articulate; and they entreat him to put his hand upon him. ³³And he took him aside out of the crowd, and put his fingers into his ears, and spitting, he touched his tongue; ³⁴and looking up to heaven, he heaved a deep sigh, and saith unto him, Ephphatha! that is, Be opened. ³⁵And instantly his ears were opened, and the tie of his tongue loosed, and he spake distinctly. ³⁶And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged, the more abundantly they published it abroad. ³⁷And they were astonished beyond all imagination, saying, He hath done all things admirably; he maketh even the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

CHAP. VIII.

IN those days the multitude being exceedingly great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus calling his disciples to him, said unto them, ²I have compassion on the multitude, for they have stayed with me already three days, and have nothing to eat: ³and if I send them away fasting to their houses, they will faint on the road; for many of them came from a great distance. ⁴His disciples answered him, Whence can a man here in the desert satisfy these with bread? ⁵And he asked them, How many

loaves have ye? And they said, Seven. ⁶And he commanded the multitude to recline in order on the ground: and taking the seven loaves, having given thanks he brake them, and gave to his disciples, that they should set before the people; and they distributed them to the multitude. ⁷And they had a few small fishes; and blessing, he commanded to set these also before them. ⁸And they did eat and were filled and they took up what remained of the fragments, seven baskets. ⁹And the persons who had eaten were about four thousand: and he sent them away. ¹⁰And immediately going into the vessel with his disciples, he came into the coasts of Dalmanutha.

¹¹Then the Pharisees came out, and began to question him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him. ¹²And fetching a deep sigh from his very soul, he saith, Why seeketh this generation a sign? verily I tell you, no sign shall be given to this generation. ¹³And leaving them, going again on board the vessel, he departed to the other side.

¹⁴And they had forgotten to take bread, and had not with them in the vessel but a single loaf. ¹⁵And he earnestly charged them, saying, Beware, take heed of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod. ¹⁶And they talked the matter over among themselves, saying, This is because we have no loaves of bread. ¹⁷And Jesus knowing it said unto them, Why reason ye together, because ye have no loaves? Do ye not yet consider, nor understand? Have ye your heart yet hardened? ¹⁸Having eyes, do ye not see? and having ears, do ye not hear? and do ye not remember? ¹⁹When I broke the five loaves among the five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve. ²⁰And when the seven loaves among the four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They said, Seven. ²¹And he said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand?

²²And he cometh to Bethsaida; and they bring him a blind man, and entreat him that he would touch him. ²³And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him without the city; and spitting on his eyes, he laid his hands upon him, and asked him if he saw aught. ²⁴And looking up, he said, I see men walking, as trees. ²⁵Then again he put his hands upon his eyes, and made him look up again: and he was entirely restored, and saw all men distinctly. ²⁶And he sent him away unto his own house, saying, Neither enter thou into the city, nor speak to any in the city.

²⁷And Jesus and his disciples went out into the towns of Cæsarea Philippi: and on the road he asked his disciples, saying unto them, Who do men say that I am? ²⁸And they answered, John the Baptist: others say, Elias; and others, One of the prophets. ²⁹And he said unto them, But who do ye say that I am? Then Peter answering, said unto him, Thou art the Messiah. ³⁰And he strictly enjoined them, that they should tell no man of this.

³¹And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be slain, and after three days rise again. ³²And he spake this saying openly. And Peter taking him aside, began to remonstrate with him. ³³But he turned himself around, and seeing his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou dost not relish the things which are of God, but those that are of men.

³⁴Then calling to him the multitude, with his disciples, he said to them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. ³⁵For whosoever would preserve his life shall lose it; but whosoever would lose his life for my sake and the Gospel, he shall preserve it. ³⁶For what would it profit a man, though he should gain the whole world, if he be punished with the loss of his own soul? ³⁷Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? ³⁸For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, before this adulterous and sinful generation; of him will the Son of man also be ashamed, when he shall come in the glory of his Father, with the holy angels.

CHAP. IX.

AND he said unto them, I tell you of a certainty, that there are some standing here who shall not taste of death, until they see the kingdom of God come with power.

²And six days after Jesus taketh with him Peter and James and John, only, and carrieth them up with him into an exceeding high mountain in great privacy; and was transfigured before them. ³His garments became

glistening, exceeding white, like snow; such as no fuller upon earth can whiten. ⁴And there appeared to him Elias with Moses: and they were conversing with Jesus. ⁵Then Peter addressing him, said unto him, Master, it is desirable for us to be here: and let us erect three tents, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias. ⁶For he knew not what he should say: for they were very much affrighted. ⁷And there came a cloud overshadowing them: and there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him. ⁸And instantly looking round, they saw no man any longer with them, but Jesus only. ⁹And as they were coming down from the mountain, he strictly charged them, that they should tell no man what they had seen, till after the Son of man should have arisen from the dead. ¹⁰And they caught at that word, considering among themselves what this rising from the dead could mean.

¹¹And they asked him, saying, Why say the scribes, that Elias must come first? ¹²Then he answering said unto them, Elias indeed cometh first, and will reform all things; and how speaks the scripture of the Son of man? That he must suffer many things, and be treated with contempt. ¹³But I say unto you, that Elias is come, and they have done to him whatsoever they chose, as it is written of him.

¹⁴And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great crowd around them, and the scribes disputing with them. ¹⁵And immediately all the multitude, when they beheld him, were struck with amazement, and coming to him, saluted him. ¹⁶And he asked the scribes, What are ye disputing about among yourselves? ¹⁷And one of the people addressing him, said, Master, I have brought my son to thee, who hath a dumb spirit; ¹⁸and wherever he seizeth him, he throws him into strong convulsions: and he foams at the mouth, and grinds his teeth, and pines away. And I spoke to thy disciples, that they should cast him out; and they were unable. ¹⁹Then addressing him, he said, O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I bear with you? bring him to me. ²⁰And they brought him unto him. And seeing him, instantly the spirit threw him into convulsions; and falling to the ground, he rolled about, foaming at the mouth. ²¹And he asked his father, For how long a time hath this been the case with him? And he replied, From his infancy. ²²And often it hath cast him into the fire, and into water, to destroy him: but if thou art able, have compassion upon us, and help us. ²³Then said Jesus unto him, This *is the point*: if thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth. ²⁴And immediately the father of the child said with tears, I believe, Lord! help my unbelief! ²⁵Then Jesus, seeing that the multitude were running up to him, rebuked the unclean spirit, saying to him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I command thee, come out of him, and enter into him no more. ²⁶And screaming, and convulsing him violently, it came out: and the child lay as if dead; insomuch that many said, He is dead. ²⁷But Jesus taking him by the hand, raised him up; and he arose. ²⁸And when he was come into the house, the disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast it out? ²⁹And he said to them, this kind can be driven out by nothing but prayer and fasting.

³⁰And going from thence, they passed through Galilee: and he would not have any person know it. ³¹For he taught his disciples, and said unto them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him: and after being killed, the third day he shall rise again. ³²But they understood not the meaning of that declaration, and were afraid to ask him.

³³And he came to Capernaum: and when he was in the house, he asked them, What was the subject of your dispute among yourselves on the road? ³⁴But they held their peace. For they had been disputing with each other on the road, which was the greatest. ³⁵And when he was seated, he called the twelve, and saith to them, If any man desires to be the first, let him be last of all, and servant of all. ³⁶And taking a little boy, he set him in the midst of them: and taking him in his arms, he said unto them, ³⁷Whosoever shall receive one of such little children in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever receiveth me, receiveth not me merely, but him that sent me.

³⁸Then John addressed him, saying, Master, we saw a person in thy name casting out devils, who followeth us not: and we forbid him, because he did not follow us. ³⁹Then said Jesus, Forbid him not: for there is no man who shall perform a miracle in my name, who will be able presently after to speak evil of me. ⁴⁰For he that is not against us, is for us. ⁴¹For whosoever shall give you even a cup of water to drink in my

name, because ye belong to the Messiah, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward. ⁴²And whosoever shall give occasion of offence to one of these little ones who believe in me, it were desirable for him rather that a milstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were cast into the sea. ⁴³And if thy hand cause thee to offend, cut it off: it were better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having both hands to go into hell, into the fire that never will be quenched: ⁴⁴where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. ⁴⁵And if thy foot cause thee to offend, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life halting, than having both feet to be cast into hell, into the fire which never can be quenched: ⁴⁶where the worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. ⁴⁷And if thine eye cause thee to offend, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into the fire of hell: ⁴⁸where the worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. ⁴⁹For every one shall be salted with fire, and every victim shall be sprinkled with salt. ⁵⁰Salt is good: but if the salt become insipid, with what will you season it? have salt in yourselves, and live in peace with each other.

CHAP. X.

AND arising, he went from thence into the coasts of Judea, through the country on the other side of the Jordan; and again the multitudes came together unto him; and as his custom was, he again taught them. ²And the Pharisees coming to him, put a question to him, Is it lawful for a husband to put away his wife? tempting him. ³He answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you? ⁴They said, Moses permitted to write a bill of divorce, and to put her away. ⁵Then Jesus answering said unto them, For the hardness of your hearts he wrote you that ordinance. ⁶But from the beginning of the creation, God made them male and female; ⁷and said, For this cause shall a man forsake father and mother, and shall adhere to his wife; ⁸and they two shall be one flesh: so that they are no more two, but one flesh. ⁹What therefore God hath yoked together, let no man separate. ¹⁰And in the house the disciples again asked him of this matter. ¹¹And he said unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her: ¹²and if a wife put away her husband, and marrieth another, she committeth adultery.

¹³And they brought unto him little children, that he should touch them: but his disciples rebuked those who brought them. ¹⁴But when Jesus saw it, he felt indignation, and said to them, Permit little children to come to me, and hinder them not; for of such is the kingdom of heaven. ¹⁵Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall in nowise enter into it. ¹⁶And he took them in his arms, and laying his hand upon them, gave them his benediction.

¹⁷And as he went out to the road, a person ran to him, and kneeling down, asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life? ¹⁸Then said Jesus unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, even God. ¹⁹Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery; Do not murder; Do not steal; Do not bear false witness; Honour thy father and mother. ²⁰Then he replying, said, Master, all these things have I observed from my youth. ²¹Then Jesus looking upon him, loved him, and said to him, In one thing thou art defective: go, sell all that thou hast, and give to the poor; and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, take up thy cross, and follow me. ²²And groaning over this speech, he went away sorrowful: for he had many estates. ²³And Jesus looking round, said to his disciples, How difficultly shall they who have riches enter into the kingdom of God! ²⁴Then his disciples were astonished at these words. But Jesus again addressing them, said unto them, Children, how difficult is it for those who trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God! ²⁵It is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. ²⁶And they were exceedingly amazed, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved? ²⁷And Jesus looking upon them, said, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

²⁸And Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee. ²⁹Then Jesus in reply said, Verily I say unto you, there is no man who hath left house, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife,

or children, or lands, for my sake and the Gospel's, ³⁰who shall not receive an hundred-fold more now, at this very time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecution, and in the world to come life everlasting. ³¹But many first, will be last; and the last, first.

³²And they were on the road going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus was advancing before them: and they were astonished; and followed him full of fear. And again taking the twelve aside, he began to tell them what things were about to befall him: ³³For, lo! said he, we are going up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man will be betrayed to the chief priests, and to the scribes; and they will condemn him to death, and will deliver him to the Gentiles: ³⁴and they will insult him, and scourge him, and spit upon him, and kill him: and the third day he shall rise again.

³⁵And James and John the sons of Zebedee came to him, saying, Master, we desire that thou shouldst do for us whatsoever we request. ³⁶He said unto them, What will ye that I should do for you? ³⁷They say unto him, Grant us to sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left, in thy glory. ³⁸Then Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup which I drink? and be baptised with the baptism with which I am baptised? ³⁹And they said unto him, We are able. Then said Jesus unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup of which I drink; and be baptised with the baptism with which I am baptised: ⁴⁰but to sit on my right-hand, and on my left, is not mine to give; but to those for whom it is prepared. ⁴¹And when the ten heard it, they began to be indignant against James and John. ⁴²But Jesus called them, and said to them, Ye know that they who appear to rule over the Gentiles, lord it over them; and their great men exercise dominion over them. ⁴³But it shall not be so with you: but whosoever will be great among you let him be your servant: ⁴⁴and whosoever will be first, let him be the servant of all. ⁴⁵For the Son of man came not to be waited upon, but to be a servant, and to give his life a ransom for many.

⁴⁶And they came to Jericho. And as he was going out of Jericho with his disciples, and a great multitude, Bartimeus, the blind, the son of Timeus, sat by the road-side begging: ⁴⁷and hearing that Jesus of Nazareth was passing by, he began to cry out, and say, O Son of David, Jesus, have mercy on me! ⁴⁸And many chid him, that he should be silent: but he cried out so much the more, Son of David, have mercy on me! ⁴⁹And Jesus stood still, and ordered him to be called: and they call the blind man, saying to him, Cheer up, arise; he calleth thee. ⁵⁰Then casting off his cloak, he arose, and came to Jesus. ⁵¹And Jesus addressing him, said, What dost thou wish that I should do for thee? And the blind man said to him, Rabboni, that I may receive my sight! ⁵²Then said Jesus unto him, Go thy way: thy faith hath saved thee. And immediately he received sight, and followed Jesus in the road.

CHAP. XI.

AND when he drew nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany, to the mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples, ²and saith unto them, Go into the village opposite to you: and immediately as you enter it, you will find a foal tied, on which no man yet hath rode; loose him, and bring him hither. ³And if any man say to you, Why do ye this? say, That the Lord hath need of it; and immediately he will send it hither. ⁴And they went, and found the foal tied to a gate without, where two ways met; and they untie him. ⁵Then some of those who stood by, said unto them, What are ye about, untying the colt? ⁶Then they said unto them, as Jesus commanded them: and they permitted them to do it. ⁷And they brought the colt to Jesus, and put on him their garments; and he rode upon it. ⁸And multitudes spread their garments on the road: and others cut off boughs from the trees, and strewed them on the road. ⁹And they who went before, and who followed after, cried, saying, Hosanna: blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord. ¹⁰Blessed be the kingdom of our father David, that is coming in the name of the Lord: hosanna in the highest. ¹¹And Jesus entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple: and looking round about upon all things, it being now even-tide, he departed to Bethany with the twelve. ¹²And on the morrow, as they were coming out of Bethany, he was hungry: ¹³and seeing a fig-tree at a distance, full of leaves, he went to it, expecting probably that he might find some fruit upon it: and when he came to it, he found none, only

leaves: for it was not a *good* season for figs. ¹⁴And Jesus spake and said to it, Let no man eat fruit from thee henceforth for ever. And his disciples heard him.

¹⁵And they came to Jerusalem and Jesus entered into the temple, and began to cast out those who sold and bought in the temple, and overturned the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of those who sold doves; ¹⁶and would not suffer that any person should carry a vessel through the temple. ¹⁷And he taught them, saying, Is it not written, that "My house shall be called a house of prayer for all nations?" but ye have made it a den of thieves. ¹⁸And the scribes and chief priests heard him, and sought how they might destroy him: for they were afraid of him, because all the people were exceedingly struck with his teaching, ¹⁹And when the evening came, he went away out of the city.

²⁰And in the morning, as they were passing by, they saw the fig-tree withered from the roots. ²¹And Peter reminding him said, Rabbi, behold, the fig-tree which thou cursedst is withered away. ²²And Jesus answering said to them, Have faith in God. ²³For verily I say to you, That whosoever shall say to this mountain, Be thou lifted up, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall harbour no doubt in his heart, but believe that what he saith shall come to pass; whatsoever he may speak shall be done for him. ²⁴Therefore I say unto you, That all things whatever ye ask in prayer, believe that ye shall receive them, and they shall be given you. ²⁵And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have a matter against any man: that your Father also who is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. ²⁶But if ye forgive not, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

²⁷And they come again to Jerusalem: and as he was walking in the temple, the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders, come to him, ²⁸and say to him, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority, that thou shouldst do these things? ²⁹Then Jesus answering said unto them, I also will ask you one question; and answer me; and I will tell you by what authority I do these things. ³⁰The baptism of John, was it of heaven, or of men? answer me. ³¹And they reasoned among themselves, saying, If we reply, From heaven; he will say, Why then did ye not believe him? ³²but if we say of men—they feared the people: for all men held John to be in truth a prophet. ³³And they answering said to Jesus, We do not know. And Jesus in reply said to them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

CHAP. XII.

AND he began to speak to them in parables. A man planted a vineyard, and set a hedge around it, and digged a wine-press, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went abroad. ²And in the season he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard. ³But they took him, and beat him, and sent him away empty. ⁴And again he sent unto them another servant; and they cut the account short with him, by stoning him, and sent him away shamefully treated. ⁵And again he sent another; and him, they slew; and many others, some of whom they beat, and others they killed. ⁶Now he had yet one son, his beloved, and he sent him unto them last, saying, They will reverence my son. ⁷But these husbandmen said to each other, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance will be our own. ⁸And they took him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard. ⁹What then will the lord of the vineyard do? He will come and destroy these husbandmen, and give his vineyard to others. ¹⁰Have ye never read this scripture? "The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: ¹¹this was the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes." ¹²And they sought to seize him, and were afraid of the people: for they knew that he had spoken this parable against them: and leaving him, they departed.

¹³And they sent unto him certain of the Pharisees and of the Herodians, that they might entrap him in discourse. ¹⁴And they come and say to him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest not for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to pay tribute to Cæsar, or not? ¹⁵shall we pay, or shall we not pay it? but he, perceiving their hypocrisy, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a denarius, that I may see it. ¹⁶And they brought it. And he said unto them, Whose figure and inscription is

this? they say unto him, Cæsar's. ¹⁷And Jesus addressing them, said, Render the things which are Cæsar's, to Cæsar; and what belongs to God, to God. And they marvelled at him.

¹⁸And the Sadducees come to him, who say that there is no resurrection; and they put a question to him, saying, ¹⁹Master, Moses left it in writing for us, that if a man's brother die, and leave a wife, and leave no children; that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed for his brother. ²⁰Now there were seven brothers; and the first took a wife, and dying left no issue: ²¹and the second took her, and died, and neither did he leave issue; and the third in like manner. ²²And the seven had her, and left no issue. Last of all died also the wife. ²³In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife of them shall she be? for the seven had the very same wife. ²⁴And Jesus answering said unto them, Do ye not therefore err, from not knowing the scriptures, and the power of God? ²⁵For when they rise from the dead, they will neither marry, nor be given in marriage; but they are as the angels which are in heaven. ²⁶But concerning the dead, that they do rise; have ye not read in the book of Moses, how God spake to him at the bush, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? ²⁷He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living. Ye are therefore vastly erroneous.

²⁸And one of the scribes coming, and hearing them questioning him, perceiving that he had answered them admirably, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all? ²⁹Then Jesus replied to him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear O Israel; the Lord thy God is one Lord: ³⁰and thou shalt love the Lord thy God, with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength. This is the first commandment. ³¹And the second, like it, is this; Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself: there is no greater commandment than these. ³²And the scribe said unto him, Admirably, Master! thou hast spoken the very truth: for there is one God; and there is no other besides him: ³³and to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength; and to love his neighbour as himself, is better than all burnt offerings, and sacrifices. ³⁴And Jesus perceiving that he had answered as a man of intelligence, said to him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man thenceforth presumed to question him.

³⁵And Jesus addressing them said, as he taught in the temple, How say the scribes that the Messiah is the Son of David? ³⁶for David himself saith by the Spirit, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thy enemies the foot-stool for thy feet. ³⁷David himself therefore calleth him Lord; and whence then is he his son? And a vast multitude heard him with delight.

³⁸And he spake to them in the course of his teaching, Beware of the scribes, who love to go about in trailing robes, and like salutations in the places of concourse, ³⁹and the principal seats in the synagogues, and the first couch at suppers: ⁴⁰who devour widows' houses, and in pretence make long prayers: such shall receive greater damnation.

⁴¹And as Jesus was sitting opposite the treasury, he saw a multitude casting money into the treasury: and many who were rich cast in many *pieces*. ⁴²And one poor widow coming, cast in two mites, which is a farthing. ⁴³And having called his disciples, he said unto them, I tell you truly, that this poor widow hath cast in more than all who have cast into the treasury: ⁴⁴for all they have cast in of their superfluities; but she from her indigence hath cast in all that she had, even her whole substance.

CHAP. XIII.

AND as he was going out of the temple, one of his disciples said unto him, Master, behold what vast stones, and what structures! ²And Jesus answering said to him, Beholdest thou these magnificent structures? there shall not be left one stone upon another which shall not be thrown down. ³And as he was sitting on the mount of Olives, opposite the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately, ⁴Tell us, when shall these things be? and what is the sign when all these things shall come to pass? ⁵Then Jesus answering them, began to say, Beware that no man deceive you: ⁶for many will come in my name, saying, I am the Messiah; and shall deceive many. ⁷But when ye hear of

wars, and rumours of wars, be not troubled: for these things must be; but the end is not yet. ⁸And nation shall rise up against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be earthquakes in divers places, and there shall be famines and commotions: these are the beginnings of sorrows. ⁹But take ye heed to yourselves: for they shall deliver you up to their sanhedrims, and to the synagogues; ye shall be beaten with rods, and be set before kings and governors for my name's sake, for a testimony unto them. ¹⁰And the Gospel must first be preached to all nations. ¹¹But when delivering you up, they shall bring you to the bar, be not previously anxious what ye shall say, neither premeditate: for it shall be given to you at that very hour, what ye shall speak: for it is not you, who are speaking, but the Holy Ghost. ¹²And brother shall deliver up brother unto death, and the father the son: and children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death. ¹³And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake. But he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved. ¹⁴But when ye see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by the prophet Daniel, standing where it ought not (let him that readeth observe), then let those who are in Judea fly to the mountains: ¹⁵and let not him who is on the roof go down into the house, nor enter into it, to carry away any thing out of the house: ¹⁶and he that is in the field, let him not return back to take his garment. ¹⁷But wo to those who are big with child, and who have infants at their breasts in those days! ¹⁸And pray that your flight be not in winter. ¹⁹For these days shall bring tribulation, such as the like hath never been from the beginning of the creation which God created unto this time, and never shall be more. ²⁰And except the Lord had shortened the days, no flesh would have been preserved: but for the sake of those elect, whom he hath elected, he hath shortened the days. ²¹And then, if any man say to you, Lo, here is the Messiah! or, lo there! believe it not. ²²For many false Messiahs and false prophets shall arise, and shall propose signs and wonders to deceive, if it were possible, even the elect. ²³But be ye on your guard: lo! I have told you all things: ²⁴but in those days, after that distressing season, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not emit her light; ²⁵and the stars of the heaven will be falling, and the powers that are in heaven will be shaken. ²⁶And then shall they see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with vast power and glory. ²⁷And then shall he send his angels, and shall gather to him his elect from the four winds, from the extremity of the earth to the utmost bound of heaven. ²⁸Now learn from the fig-tree, a parable; When her branch is now become tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh; ²⁹so also you, when ye see these things come to pass, know that it is nigh, even at the doors. ³⁰Verily I say unto you, That this generation shall not pass away, until all these things are fulfilled. ³¹Heaven and earth shall pass away; but my words shall never pass away.

³²But of that day and hour knoweth no man, nor the angels which are in heaven, nor the Son, but the Father. ³³Take ye heed, watch, and pray; for ye know not when the time is. ³⁴As a man going abroad, when he left his abode, and gave his servants authority, and to each his work, commanded also the porter to watch. ³⁵Watch ye therefore; for ye know not at what time the master of the house cometh, at evening, or midnight, or cock-crowing, or in the morning: ³⁶lest coming suddenly he find you asleep. ³⁷Now what I say to you, I say to all, Watch.

CHAP. XIV.

NOW the passover and the feast of unleavened bread were but two days distant; and the chief priests, and the scribes, sought how they might seize him by craft, and kill him. ²But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be a commotion among the people. ³And when he was at Bethany in the house of Simon the leper, as he sat at table, a woman came, having an alabaster vase of ointment, of genuine spikenard, of vast value: and breaking the vase, she let it flow down upon his head. ⁴And there were some who felt indignation within themselves, saying, Wherefore is this waste of the ointment made? ⁵For it might have been sold for more than three hundred denarii, and given to the poor. And they bitterly murmured against her. ⁶Then said Jesus, Let her alone; why give ye her uneasiness? she hath performed a laudable act towards me. ⁷For the poor ye have always with you, and when ye will ye may do them good: but me ye have not always. ⁸What was in her power she hath done;

she has seized the opportunity to anoint my body beforehand for burial. ⁹Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached through the whole world, there shall, what she hath done, be told for a memorial of her.

¹⁰Then Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, that he might betray him unto them. ¹¹When they heard it, they rejoiced, and promised to give him a sum in silver. And he watched how opportunely he might deliver him up.

¹²And on the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare for thee to eat the passover? ¹³And he sent two of his disciples, and saith unto them, Go into the city, and a man will meet you carrying a pitcher of water, follow him. ¹⁴And where he enters, say to the master of the family. That the teacher saith, Where is the dining-room, where I may eat the passover with my disciples? ¹⁵And he will shew you a large upper room ready furnished: there make preparation for us. ¹⁶And his disciples went out, and came into the city, and found as he had spoken to them; and they made ready the passover.

¹⁷And when it was evening he came with the twelve. ¹⁸And as they sat at table, and were eating, Jesus said, Verily I tell you, That one of you, who is eating with me, shall betray me. ¹⁹And they began to be very sorry, and to say to him, one by one, Is it I? and another said, Is it I? ²⁰But he answering said to them, It is one of the twelve, who is dipping his hand with me into the dish. ²¹The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him; but wo to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been desirable for that man if he had never been born.

²²And as they were eating, Jesus taking a loaf, when he had blessed, brake it, and gave to them, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. ²³And taking the cup, when he had given thanks, he gave it to them; and they all drank out of it. ²⁴And he said unto them, This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many. ²⁵Verily I say unto you, That I will henceforth no more drink of the produce of the vine, until that day when I shall drink it new in the kingdom of God.

²⁶And when they had sung a hymn, they went out to the mount of Olives. ²⁷And Jesus saith to them, All ye will be offended at me this night; for it is written, "I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be dispersed:" ²⁸but after I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee. ²⁹Then said Peter unto him, Though all should be offended, yet will not I. ³⁰And Jesus saith to him, Verily I tell thee, That to-day, in the course of this very night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt thrice deny me. ³¹But he said with more vehement assertion, Though I should die with thee, yet would I in no wise deny thee. And they all spake also in the same manner.

³²And they come to a place called Gethsemane, and he saith to his disciples, Sit ye here whilst I shall pray. ³³And he taketh Peter, and James, and John, with him; and he began to be filled with horrible dread, and to be sunk under dejection of spirit: ³⁴and he saith to them, My soul is deeply afflicted even to death: abide here, and watch. ³⁵And he went a little farther forward, and fell on the earth, and prayed, that if it were possible the hour might pass from him. ³⁶And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible to thee; remove this cup from me, nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt. ³⁷And he came and found them asleep: and saith unto Peter, Sleepest thou? hast thou not strength to watch with me a single hour? ³⁸Watch ye and pray, that ye enter not into temptation; the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak. ³⁹And again he went away, and prayed, speaking the same sentence. ⁴⁰And when he returned, he found them again sleeping; for their eyes were weighed down: and they knew not what to answer him. ⁴¹Then the third time he cometh, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and repose: it is enough, the hour is come; lo! the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners; ⁴²arise, let us go; behold, the traitor approaches me. ⁴³And immediately, while he was yet speaking, Judas, one of the twelve, came up, and a great multitude with him, with swords and staves, from the chief priests, and scribes, and elders. ⁴⁴Now he that betrayed him, had given them a countersign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he, seize him, and lead him off safely. ⁴⁵And coming, he immediately drew up to him and said, Rabbi, Rabbi, and kissed him. ⁴⁶Then they laid their hands on him, and seized him. ⁴⁷And one particular person of those who stood by drew his sword, and struck a servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear.

⁴⁸And Jesus addressing them said, Are ye come out as against a robber, with swords and staves, to apprehend me? ⁴⁹Daily was I with you in the temple teaching, and ye laid no hold upon me: but *this is done* that the scriptures might be fulfilled.

⁵⁰Then they all deserting him, fled. ⁵¹And a certain youth followed him, having a linen cloth wrapped round his naked body; and the young men laid hold of him; ⁵²and leaving the linen cloth behind, he fled naked from them.

⁵³And they led Jesus unto the high-priest; and with him were assembled all the chief priests, and the elders, and the scribes. ⁵⁴And Peter followed him at a distance, until he came into the palace of the high-priest: and was seated with the servants, and warming himself at the fire.

⁵⁵Then the chief priests, and the whole sanhedrim, sought for witness against Jesus, that they might put him to death; yet found none. ⁵⁶For many bore false witness against him, and their attestations did not correspond. ⁵⁷And certain persons rising up, bore false witness against him, saying, ⁵⁸We have heard him affirm, I will destroy this temple made with hands, and after three days I will build another not made with hands. ⁵⁹But even then their testimony was not correspondent. ⁶⁰So the high-priest rising up in the midst interrogated Jesus, Answerest thou nothing? What is it that these witness against thee? ⁶¹But he kept silence, and made them not a word of reply. Again the high-priest questioned him, and said to him, Art thou the Messiah, the Son of the blessed? ⁶²Then said Jesus, I am. And ye shall see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of power, and coming with the clouds of heaven. ⁶³Then the high-priest rent his clothes, and said, What farther need have we of witnesses? ⁶⁴Ye have heard his blasphemy. What think ye? And they all adjudged him to be deserving of death. ⁶⁵And some began to spit upon him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say to him, Prophecy: and the servants slapped him on the face with their hands.

⁶⁶And as Peter was in the hall, at the lower end, there came to him one of the high-priest's maid-servants: ⁶⁷and seeing Peter warming himself, stedfastly looking at him, she said, Thou also wast with Jesus of Nazareth. ⁶⁸Then he denied it, saying, I do not so much as know him, nor understand what thou art saying. And he went out into the vestibule; and the cock crew. ⁶⁹And a maid-servant observing him again; began to say to those who stood by, This man is one of them. ⁷⁰Then he denied it again. And after a little while, they who stood by said to Peter, Of a certainty thou art one of them; for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech is correspondent. ⁷¹Then began he to make the most dreadful imprecations, and to swear, I know not the man of whom ye speak. ⁷²And the second time the cock crew. And Peter remembered the word which Jesus spake unto him, That before the cock crew twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. And casting his mantle over his face, he wept.

CHAP. XV.

AND immediately the chief priests having held a council in the morning, with the elders, and scribes, and the whole sanhedrim, after binding Jesus, led him away, and delivered him up to Pilate. ²And Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Jews? He answering said to him, Thou sayest true. ³And the chief priests laid many accusations against him. ⁴Then Pilate again interrogated him, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they testify against thee. ⁵But Jesus notwithstanding made not a word of reply; so that Pilate marvelled.

⁶Now at the feast, he released one prisoner to them, whomsoever they petitioned for. ⁷And there was one called Barabbas, bound with those who had made an insurrection with him, and had committed murder in the insurrection. ⁸And the multitude, clamorous, began to petition him to do, as he had always done to them. ⁹Then Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you the king of the Jews? ¹⁰(For he knew that out of envy the chief priests had delivered him up.) ¹¹Then the chief priests stirred up the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them. ¹²Then Pilate addressing them, said unto them again, What therefore do you wish that I should do with him whom ye call the king of the Jews? ¹³And they cried out again, Crucify him. ¹⁴Then Pilate said unto them, But what criminal act hath he done? And they cried the more vociferously, Crucify him. ¹⁵So Pilate, willing to do what would be

satisfactory to the people, released to them Barabbas, and delivered Jesus to be scourged, in order to be crucified.

¹⁶Then the soldiers led him to the hall, which is the Prætorium, and called together the whole band. ¹⁷And they invested him with a robe of purple, and plating a crown of thorns, put it about his head, ¹⁸and began to pay their salutations to him, Hail, King of the Jews! ¹⁹And they struck him on the head with a cane, and spat upon him, and bowing their knees payed him homage. ²⁰And when they had treated him with mockery, they took off the purple robe from him, and clothed him with his own garments, and led him out to crucify him. ²¹And they compel one Simon, a Cyrenian, who was passing by, coming out of the field, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to carry his cross.

²²And they convey him to a place called Golgotha, which is being interpreted, The place of a skull. ²³And they gave him to drink wine medicated with myrrh: but he received it not. ²⁴And having crucified him, they divided his garments, casting the lot upon them, what each should take. ²⁵Now it was the third hour, and they crucified him. ²⁶And there was an inscription of his crime written over him, THE KING OF THE JEWS. ²⁷And with him they crucified two robbers, one on his right hand, and the other on his left. ²⁸And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, "And he was reckoned among the transgressors." ²⁹And they who passed along, blasphemed him, shaking their heads, and saying, Aha! thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, ³⁰save thyself, and come down from the cross. ³¹And in the same manner also, the chief priests mocking him, among each other, with the scribes, said, He saved others, himself he cannot save. ³²Thou Messiah, King of Israel, come now down from the cross, that we may see, and believe. Even those who were crucified with him railed on him.

³³Now when the sixth hour came, there was darkness over all the land until the ninth hour. ³⁴And at the ninth hour, Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabacthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, for what cause hast thou abandoned me? ³⁵And some of those who stood by, hearing him, said, Behold, he crieth for Elias. ³⁶Then one ran, and filling a sponge with vinegar, fixed it round a cane, and gave him to drink, saying, Let alone, let us see if Elias comes to take him down. ³⁷Then Jesus, uttering a loud cry, gave up the ghost.

³⁸And the vail of the temple was rent in two from the top to the bottom. ³⁹And the centurion, who stood opposite to him, observing, that with such a cry he gave up the ghost, said, Assuredly this was the Son of God.

⁴⁰Now there were also women looking on at a distance; among whom also was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the small, and the mother of Joses, and Salome. ⁴¹These women followed him when he was in Galilee, and supplied his wants; and many other women who went up with him to Jerusalem.

⁴²And when the evening was now come (since it was the preparation, that is the day preceding the sabbath), ⁴³Joseph, who was from Arimathea, came, a respectable person, a counsellor, and who himself also was expecting the kingdom of God; taking courage, he went in to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. ⁴⁴Then Pilate marvelled that he should be already dead: and calling for the centurion, he asked him, If he had been dead any time. ⁴⁵And when he knew it from the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph. ⁴⁶And having bought a wrapper of fine linen, and taken him down, he wrapped him in the linen cloth, and laid him in a sepulchre, which was hewn out of a rock; and rolled a stone to the door of the sepulchre. ⁴⁷Now Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Joses, saw where he was laid.

CHAP. XVI.

AND when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, purchased aromatics, that they might come, and anoint him. ²And very early on the first day of the week, they come to the sepulchre, as the sun was rising. ³And said among themselves, Who will roll away for us the stone from the door of the sepulchre? ⁴And looking again, they saw that the stone was rolled away, for it was vastly large. ⁵And entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting at the right hand, clothed in a white robe; and they were greatly terrified. ⁶But he saith unto them, Be not affrighted, ye seek

Jesus the Nazarean, who was crucified; he is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they laid him. ⁷But go, tell his disciples, and Peter, that he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him, as he told you. ⁸And they going out hastily, fled from the sepulchre, for trembling and astonishment had seized them: and they said not a word to any person, for they were affrighted.

⁹Now being arisen early, on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils. ¹⁰She going, told it to those who had been with him, as they were wailing and weeping. ¹¹And they, when they heard that he was alive, and had been seen by her, gave no credit to her.

¹²Then after this, he was manifested under another form, to two of them as they were walking, and going into the country. ¹³And they came back and told the news to the rest; neither did they believe them.

¹⁴Afterwards he shewed himself to the eleven, as they were sitting at table, and upbraided them for their infidelity and hardness of heart, because they did not believe those who had seen him after he was risen.

¹⁵And he said unto them, Go into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. ¹⁶He that believeth and is baptised shall be saved; and he that believeth not shall be damned. ¹⁷And these signs shall follow those that believe: in my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; ¹⁸they shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly potion, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover health.

¹⁹Then the Lord, after having thus spoken to them, was taken up into heaven, and sat down at the right hand of God. ²⁰But they going forth preached every where, the Lord working mightily with them, and confirming the word, by attendant miracles.

THE GOSPEL

ACCORDING TO

L U K E.

CHAP. I.

SINCE many have attempted to compose a narrative of facts, confirmed to us by the fullest evidence: ²exactly as they delivered them to us, who were eye witnesses from the first, and ministers of the word; ³it seemed right to me also, having obtained accurate knowledge of all things from above, to write to thee in regular order, most excellent Theophilus, ⁴to the intent that thou mayest clearly know the certainty of those matters, concerning which thou hast been instructed.

⁵There was in the days of Herod, the king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abiah: and his wife of the daughters of Aaron, and her name Elisabeth. ⁶And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless. ⁷And they had no child, because Elizabeth was barren, and both were far advanced in years. ⁸And it came to pass, as he discharged his priestly office in the order of his periodical ministration before God, ⁹according to the custom of the priesthood, it fell to his lot to burn the incense when he went into the temple of the Lord. ¹⁰And all the multitude of people was praying without, at the time of the burning the incense. ¹¹And an angel of the Lord appeared to him standing on the right side of the altar of incense. ¹²And Zacharias was agitated greatly at the sight, and fear fell upon him. ¹³But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bring thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. ¹⁴And it shall give thee joy and exultation; and many shall rejoice at his birth: ¹⁵for he shall be great in the sight of the Lord; and he shall never drink wine, nor any intoxicating liquor; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb. ¹⁶And many of the children of Israel shall he turn unto the Lord,

their God. ¹⁷And he shall go forth before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to convert the hearts of fathers with their children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to prepare a people ready for the Lord.

¹⁸And Zacharias said to the angel, By what shall I know this? for I am old, and my wife far advanced in her age. ¹⁹And the angel answering said to him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and I have been sent to speak to thee, and to proclaim these glad tidings to thee. ²⁰And behold, thou shalt be dumb, and unable to speak, until that day when these things shall come to pass, because thou hast not believed my words, which shall be fulfilled at their exact time.

²¹And the people were waiting for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple. ²²And when he came out, he could not speak to them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: for he himself made signs to them, and continued deaf and dumb. ²³And it came to pass, when the days of his ministry were fulfilled, he went to his own house. ²⁴And after those days Elisabeth his wife conceived, and kept herself in retirement five months, saying, ²⁵Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the days in which he looked upon me to take away my reproach among men.

²⁶Now in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God into a city of Galilee, the name of which was Nazareth, ²⁷to a virgin of the house of David, betrothed to a man whose name was Joseph; and the virgin's name was Mary. ²⁸And the angel coming in to her said, All hail! O thou highly favoured one! the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women. ²⁹And when she saw him, she was greatly agitated at his address: and reasoned in herself what kind of salutation this could be. ³⁰And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary, for thou hast found favour with God. ³¹And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS. ³²He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God will give him the throne of David his father; ³³and he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end. ³⁴And Mary said, How shall this be, seeing I know not man? ³⁵And the angel answering said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Most High shall overshadow thee; wherefore also the Holy One that shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God. ³⁶And, behold, Elisabeth thy cousin, she also hath conceived in her old age: and this is the fifth month of *pregnancy* with her who was called barren. ³⁷For there is nothing impossible with God. ³⁸Then said Mary, Behold a servant of the Lord, be it to me according to thy declaration. And the angel departed from her.

³⁹Then Mary arose in those days, and went with haste into the hill country, to a city of Judah, ⁴⁰and entered into the house of Zachariah, and saluted Elisabeth. ⁴¹And it came to pass, when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped for joy in her womb; and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost: ⁴²and she exclaimed with a loud voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb. ⁴³And whence is this favour shewn me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? ⁴⁴For, lo! as the voice of thy salutation reached my ears, the babe leaped for joy in my womb. ⁴⁵And blessed is she that hath believed; for there shall be a fulfilment of the things told her from the Lord.

⁴⁶And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord, ⁴⁷and my spirit hath exulted in God my Saviour: ⁴⁸for he hath looked upon the lowly state of his maid-servant: for, lo! henceforth shall all generations pronounce me blessed. ⁴⁹For the Mighty One hath done great things for me; and holy is his name. ⁵⁰And his mercy is upon those who fear him, from generation to generation. ⁵¹He hath displayed strength from his arm; he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts. ⁵²He hath cast down potentates from the throne, and hath exalted the lowly. ⁵³He hath filled the hungry with good things; and the rich he hath sent empty away. ⁵⁴He hath succoured Israel his servant, that he might be mindful of mercy for ever; ⁵⁵as he had spoken to our fathers, to Abraham, and to his seed. ⁵⁶And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned unto her home.

⁵⁷Now Elisabeth's time was up that she should be delivered; and she brought a son. ⁵⁸And her neighbours and her relations heard, that the

Lord had magnified his mercy upon her; and they congratulated her. ⁵⁹And it came to pass, on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child; and they called him after the name of his father, Zacharias. ⁶⁰And his mother spake and said, No; but he shall be called John. ⁶¹And they said to her, There is not one among thy relations, who is called by this name. ⁶²And they made signs to his father, what he would have him called. ⁶³And desiring a writing tablet, he wrote, saying, John is his name. And they were all surprised. ⁶⁴Instantly then his mouth was opened, and his tongue loosed, and he burst out in praises to God. ⁶⁵And great awe fell on all those who dwelt around them: and in all the mountainous country of Judea, all these circumstances were the subject of conversation. ⁶⁶And all who heard them laid them up in their hearts, saying, Well! what a child will this be! And the hand of the Lord was with him.

⁶⁷And Zacharias his father was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying, ⁶⁸Blessed be the Lord the God of Israel; for he hath visited and wrought redemption for his people; ⁶⁹and hath raised up a horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David: ⁷⁰as he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been from the beginning: ⁷¹even preservation from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us; ⁷²to perform mercy towards our fathers, and to remember his own holy covenant: ⁷³the oath which he sware to Abraham our father, ⁷⁴to give us, that we, secure from fear, rescued from the hands of our enemies, should serve him, ⁷⁵in righteousness and holiness before him, all the days of our life. ⁷⁶And thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Most High; for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways; ⁷⁷to give the knowledge of salvation to his people, by the remission of their sins, ⁷⁸through the bowels of mercy of our God; with which he hath visited us, as the dawn of the morning from on high, ⁷⁹to illumine those who sat in darkness, and in the shadow of death, to direct our feet into the way of peace. ⁸⁰And the child grew, and became mighty in spirit, and was in the deserts until the days of his public exhibition to Israel.

CHAP. II.

NOW it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Cæsar Augustus, that the whole land should be registered. ²(And this first enrolment was made by Cyrenius, *afterwards* governor of Syria) ³And all went to be registered, every one to his own city. ⁴Then Joseph also went up from Galilee, from the city of Nazareth, to Judea, to the city of David, which is called Bethlehem; because he was of the house and family of David; ⁵to be enregistered with Mary, the wife espoused to him, who was big with child. ⁶And it came to pass, while they were there, that her time was up, that she should be delivered. ⁷And she brought forth a son, her first-born, and wrapped him in swaddling-clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn.

⁸And there were shepherds in that country abiding in the open air, and keeping guard over their flock by night. ⁹And, behold, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone around them; and they were exceedingly affrighted. ¹⁰And the angel said unto them, Be not affrighted: for, behold, I bring you tidings of great joy, which shall be for all the people. ¹¹Because this day there is born for you a Saviour, which is Messiah, the Lord, in the city of David. ¹²And this shall be a sign for you; Ye shall find the babe in swaddling-clothes, lying in a manger. ¹³And suddenly there appeared with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host, praising God, and saying, ¹⁴Glory in the highest heavens to God! and upon earth, peace! towards men complacence. ¹⁵And it came to pass, as the angels went from them into heaven, the men, the shepherds, said also to each other, Let us now go to Bethlehem, and see this thing which hath happened, which the Lord hath made known to us. ¹⁶And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the babe, lying in the manger: ¹⁷and when they saw it, they made a public report of the declaration delivered to them respecting this child. ¹⁸And all who heard it, marvelled at the things told them by the shepherds. ¹⁹But Mary carefully preserved all these declarations, laying them together in her heart, in order to apprehend their meaning. ²⁰And the shepherds

returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things which they had heard and seen, exactly as had been told them.

²¹And when eight days were fulfilled for circumcising the child, his name also was called JESUS, the name imposed by the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

²²And when the days of her purification were accomplished according to the law of Moses, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord; ²³as it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male child, that openeth the womb, shall be called holy to the Lord; ²⁴and to offer a sacrifice, according to what is prescribed in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtle doves, or two young pigeons.

²⁵And, behold, there was a man at Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and this man was righteous and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Ghost was upon him. ²⁶And it had been divinely communicated to him by the Holy Spirit, that he should not see death, till he had seen the Lord's Messiah. ²⁷And he came by the spirit into the temple; just as the parents were bringing in the child Jesus, that they might do according to what was the custom of the law concerning him; ²⁸and he took him into his arms, and blessed God, and said, ²⁹Now dismiss thy servant, Lord, according to thy word, in peace; ³⁰for my eyes have seen thy salvation, ³¹which thou hast prepared before the face of all people. ³²A light to give revelation to the Gentiles, and glory to thy people Israel.

³³And Joseph and his mother were amazed at the things spoken concerning him. ³⁴And Simeon blessed them, and said to Mary his mother, Behold, this child is appointed for the fall, and rising again of many in Israel; and for a marked object to be spoken against; ³⁵(so shall a dart pierce through thy own soul) that the reasonings of many hearts may be laid open,

³⁶And there was Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asser: she was far advanced in old age, having lived but seven years with a husband, from her virgin state: ³⁷though she was now a widow, of about eighty-four years, who departed not from the temple, attending the divine service, with fastings and prayers night and day: ³⁸and at the very same moment coming up, she also in turn confessed the Lord, and spake of him to all who were expecting redemption in Jerusalem.

³⁹And when they had finished all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, into their own city Nazareth. ⁴⁰And the child grew, and became endued with great powers of spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him.

⁴¹And his parents went annually to Jerusalem at the feast of the passover. ⁴²And when he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem, according to the custom of the feast. ⁴³And when they had concluded the days, as they were returning, the child Jesus remained at Jerusalem, and Joseph and his mother knew it not: ⁴⁴but supposing him to be in the company, they went a day's journey; and they sought him among their relations and acquaintances; ⁴⁵and not finding him, they returned to Jerusalem in search of him. ⁴⁶And it came to pass after three days, they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them and asking them questions. ⁴⁷And all who heard him, were in a transport of admiration, at his understanding and answers. ⁴⁸And when they saw him, they were struck with surprise; and his mother said to him, Son, why hast thou behaved to us in this manner? lo! thy father and I have been seeking thee in anguish of heart. ⁴⁹And he said unto them, Wherefore did ye seek me? did you not know, that I must be occupied with my Father's affairs? ⁵⁰And they understood not the meaning of what he spake to them. ⁵¹And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was in subjection to them: though his mother preserved all these sayings in her heart. ⁵²And Jesus advanced in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and men.

CHAP. III.

NOW in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cæsar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod tetrarch of Galilee, and Philip his brother tetrarch of Iturea and the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias tetrarch of Abilene: ²when Annas and Caiaphas were high-priests, the word of God came to John the son of Zacharias in the

wilderness; ³and he came into all the country on the confines of Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins; ⁴as it is written in the book of the words of the prophet Isaiah, saying, "The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths strait: ⁵every valley shall be filled up, and every mountain and hill shall be levelled, and the crooked ways made strait, and the rough roads smooth: ⁶and all flesh shall see the salvation of God." ⁷He said, therefore, to the multitudes who came out to be baptised by him, Ye broods of vipers, who hath warned you to fly from the approaching wrath? ⁸Produce then fruits worthy of repentance, and begin not to say in yourselves, We have a father, even Abraham; for I say unto you, That God is able out of these stones to raise up children to Abraham. ⁹But now is the ax laid even to the root of the trees; every tree therefore that produceth not good fruit, is cut down and cast into the fire.

¹⁰And the multitudes asked him, saying, What then shall we do? ¹¹And he answering said to them, He that hath two coats, let him give to him that hath none; and he that hath provisions, let him do in like manner. ¹²Then came also the farmers of the taxes to be baptised, and they said unto him, Master, what shall we do? ¹³He said unto them, Exact nothing more than is appointed for you. ¹⁴And the military men also asked him, And what shall we do? And he said unto them, Extort nothing by force; nor turn informers; and be content with your pay.

¹⁵Now when the people were in expectation, and many reasoned in their hearts respecting John, whether he were the Messiah, ¹⁶John addressed himself to them all, saying, I indeed baptise you with water; but one mightier than I is coming, the thong of whose sandals I am not worthy to untie: he shall baptise you with the Holy Ghost and with fire; ¹⁷whose winnowing fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly cleanse his threshing-floor, and collect the wheat into his granary; but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable. ¹⁸Thus in many and various discourses exhorting them, he preached the glad tidings of the gospel to the people.

¹⁹Now Herod the tetrarch, being reprov'd by him, on account of Herodias his brother Philip's wife, and for all the other wicked actions which he had done, ²⁰added this also to all the rest, and shut up John in prison.

²¹Now it came to pass, at the time when John was baptising all the people, that Jesus also was baptised, and as he prayed, the heaven was opened, ²²and the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily form, like a dove, upon him, and a voice came from heaven, saying, Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased.

²³And Jesus himself was about thirty years of age when he began his ministry, being (as was supposed the son of Joseph) of Heli, ²⁴of Matthat, of Levi, of Melchi, of Janna, of Joseph, ²⁵of Mattathias, of Amos, of Naum, of Esli, of Nagge, ²⁶of Maath, of Mattathias, of Semei, of Joseph, of Juda, ²⁷of Joanna, of Rhesa, of Zerubbabel, of Salathiel, of Neri, ²⁸of Melchi, of Addi, of Cosam, of Elmodam, of Er, ²⁹of Jose, of Eliezer, of Jorim, of Matthat, of Levi, ³⁰of Simeon, of Judah, of Joseph, of Jonan, of Eliakim, ³¹of Melea, of Menan, of Mattatha, of Nathan, of David, ³²of Jesse, of Obed, of Booz, of Salmon, of Naasson, ³³of Aminadab, of Aram, of Esrom, of Phares, of Judah, ³⁴of Jacob, of Isaac, of Abraham, of Terah, of Nachor, ³⁵of Saruch, of Ragau, of Phalec, of Heber, of Sala, ³⁶of Cainan, of Arphaxad, of Sem, of Noe, of Lamech, ³⁷of Methusaleh, of Enoch, of Jared, of Maleleel, of Cainan, ³⁸of Enos, of Seth, of Adam, *the son* of God.

CHAP. IV.

THEN Jesus full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the spirit into the wilderness, ²being tempted forty days by the devil; and did eat nothing during those days: and when they were ended, afterwards he was hungry. ³And the devil said to him, If thou art the Son of God, command this stone that it become a loaf. ⁴And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, "Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God."

⁵And the devil taking him up into an exceeding high mountain, displayed before him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time: ⁶and the devil said unto him, I will give thee all this authority, and the glory of these; for to me it is delivered, and to whomsoever I will, I give it. ⁷If therefore thou wilt worship before me, all shall be thine. ⁸And Jesus answering him, said, Get thee behind me, Satan, for it is written,

“Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and to him alone shalt thou pay divine honour.”

⁹And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a wing of the temple, and said to him, If thou art the Son of God, cast thy self down from hence: ¹⁰for it is written, “He shall give his angels a charge over thee, to guard thee safely; ¹¹and that in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.” ¹²And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, “Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.” ¹³And when the devil had closed all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.

¹⁴And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and a report went out into all the region round about concerning him. ¹⁵And he taught in their synagogues, being universally admired. ¹⁶And he came to Nazareth, where he was brought up; and he went, according to his usual custom, into the synagogue on the sabbath-day, and rose up to read. ¹⁷And there was given to him the book of the prophet Isaiah: and unrolling the volume, he found the passage where it is written, ¹⁸“The spirit of the Lord is upon me, for the work whereunto he hath anointed me; he hath sent me to preach glad tidings to the poor; to heal the contrite in heart; to proclaim liberty to the captives; and restore sight to the blind; to send forth the bruised free from bonds; ¹⁹to publish the acceptable year of the Lord.” ²⁰And rolling up the volume, he gave it to the attendant officer, and sat down. And the eyes of all who were in the synagogue were attentively fixed on him. ²¹And he began to say to them, To day this scripture is fulfilled in your ears. ²²And all concurred in their testimony to him, and marvelled at the gracious words which proceeded from his mouth. And they said, Is not this the son of Joseph? ²³And he said unto them, Ye will probably say to me this parable, Physician, heal thyself! the works which we have heard to have been performed by thee at Capernaum, do the like here in thy own country. ²⁴But he said, Verily, I say unto you, that no prophet is acceptable in his own country. ²⁵Now I tell you of a certainty, that there were many widows in the days of Elias, in Israel, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, so that a grievous famine was upon all the land. ²⁶And unto none of them was Elias sent, but unto Sarepta, a city of Sidon, to a widow woman. ²⁷And many lepers were in Israel in the days of the prophet Elisha, and no one of them was cleansed, but Naaman the Syrian. ²⁸And they were all filled with rage in the synagogue, when they heard these observations: ²⁹and rising up, dragged him out of the city, and led him to the brow of the hill, on which their city was built, in order to cast him down headlong: ³⁰but he passing through the midst of them, went away.

³¹And he came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and was teaching them on the sabbath. ³²And they were struck with astonishment at his teaching; for his discourse was with authority. ³³And there was in the synagogue a man, who had a spirit of an unclean devil, and he roared out with a great cry, ³⁴saying, Let us alone; what have we to do with thee, Jesus the Nazarean? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art; the Holy One of God. ³⁵And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Stop thy mouth, and come out of him. And the devil throwing him down into the midst, came out of him, doing him no injury. ³⁶And amazement seized on all present, and they spake one to another, saying, What a word is this? for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out. ³⁷And the fame of him went forth into all the adjacent region.

³⁸Then rising up out of the synagogue, he came into the house of Simon: and Simon’s mother-in-law was seized with a violent fever, and they besought him on her behalf. ³⁹And standing over her, he charged the fever *to depart*; and it left her: and immediately she arose, and waited upon them.

⁴⁰So when the sun was set, all who had any indisposed with various diseases, brought them to him; and laying his hands severally on each of them, he cured them. ⁴¹And devils also went out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art the Messiah the Son of God. And rebuking them, he suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was the Messiah.

⁴²And as the day was coming on, he went forth and departed into a desert place: and the multitude sought him out, and came to him, and would have detained him that he should not leave them. ⁴³But he said unto them, I must preach the glad tidings of the kingdom of heaven in other cities also: for on this service am I sent. ⁴⁴And he continued

CHAP. V.

AND it came to pass, as the multitude were thronging upon him, in order to hear the word of God, that he was standing by the lake of Gennesaret: ²and he saw two vessels a-ground near the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and washing their nets. ³Then he went on board one of the vessels, which was Simon's, and desired him to put off a little from the land: and sitting down, he taught the multitudes out of the vessel. ⁴And when he ceased speaking, he said to Simon, Go off into deep water, and shoot your nets for a draught. ⁵And Simon answering, said unto him, Sir, we have been toiling all night, and have taken nothing: but at thy command I will shoot the net. ⁶And having done so, they inclosed a prodigious multitude of fishes; and their net was broken. ⁷And they made signals to their partners in the other vessels, that they should come to their assistance. And they came, and filled both the vessels, so that they were ready to founder. ⁸Then Simon Peter seeing it, fell down on his knees before Jesus, saying, Go from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord! ⁹For amazement had seized on him, and on all who were with him, at the draught of fishes which they had taken: ¹⁰as also on James and John the sons of Zebedee, who were partners with Simon. And Jesus said to Simon, Fear not: henceforward thou shalt catch men. ¹¹And when they had brought their vessels on shore, they left all, and followed him.

¹²And it came to pass as he was just at one of the cities, behold, a man full of leprosy! and seeing Jesus, he fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. ¹³And he stretching out his hand touched him, saying, I will: be thou cleansed. And instantly the leprosy departed from him. ¹⁴And he commanded him to tell no man: but go shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy purification, as Moses enjoined, for a testimony unto them. ¹⁵Now the discourse concerning him more and more spread through the country: and vast multitudes came together to hear him, and to be cured by him of their disorders. ¹⁶But he himself was in the desert for retirement and prayer.

¹⁷And on a certain day it happened that he was teaching, and there were sitting Pharisees, and doctors of the law, who had come from every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord for healing them was exercised. ¹⁸And behold, men carried on a couch a man who was a paralytic; and sought to bring him into the house, and to place him before him. ¹⁹And not discovering by what means they could introduce him, because of the crowd, they went up to the roof, and through the tiling let him down with his little couch into the midst, before Jesus. ²⁰And seeing their faith, he saith to him, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee. ²¹And the scribes and Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this that speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sins but God alone? ²²And Jesus knowing their reasoning, in reply said to them, Why do ye reason in your hearts? ²³for which is the easier? to say, Thy sins are forgiven; or to say, Arise and walk? ²⁴But that ye may know that the Son of man hath authority upon earth to forgive sins, (he saith to the paralytic,) I say to thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go into thy house. ²⁵And instantly he rose up before them, took up that on which he had lain, and went away to his house, giving glory to God. ²⁶And an extacy of admiration seized upon them all, and they glorified God; and they were filled with awe, saying, We have seen wondrously strange things to-day.

²⁷And after these things he went out, and saw a farmer of the taxes, named Levi, sitting at the custom-house: and he said unto him, Follow me. ²⁸And leaving all behind, he rose, and followed him. ²⁹And Levi made him a great entertainment at his house and there was a great number of publicans and others, sitting at table with them. ³⁰And their scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners? ³¹And Jesus answering said unto them, They who are well, have no need of a physician: but they who have illness. ³²I came not to call righteous men, but sinners, to repentance.

³³Then said they unto him, Why do the disciples of John observe frequent fasts, and make prayers; but thine are eating and drinking? ³⁴And he said unto them, Can you make the children of the bridechamber fast, as long as the bridegroom is with them? ³⁵But the days will come,

when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, then shall they fast in those days. ³⁶Then he spake a parable unto them, No man putteth a patch of new cloth on an old garment; but if otherwise, both the new makes a rent, and the patch from the new is not of a piece with the old. ³⁷And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; for if he doth, the new wine will burst the bottles, and it will itself be spilled, and the bottles be destroyed. ³⁸But new wine should be put into new bottles; then both are preserved. ³⁹And no man drinking old wine, immediately desires new: for he saith, The old is better.

CHAP. VI.

AND it came to pass on the sabbath after the second day of the passover, that he was passing through the cornfields; and the disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing them out in their hands. ²Then said some of the Pharisees unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawful on the sabbath-day? ³And Jesus answering said to them; Have ye never read what David did, when he was hungry, and those who were with him? ⁴how he entered into the house of God, and took the loaves of shew-bread, and did eat, and gave also to those who were with him; which it was not lawful for any to eat, but the priests alone? ⁵And he said, The Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath-day.

⁶And it came to pass on another sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue and taught: and a man was there, and his right hand was shrunk. ⁷Then the scribes and Pharisees watched him, if he would heal on the sabbath-day, that they might find an accusation against him. ⁸Now he knew their thoughts, and said to the man who had the withered hand, Rise, and stand in the midst. And he arose, and stood up. ⁹Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you a question; Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath-day, or to do evil? to preserve life or to destroy it? ¹⁰And looking round upon them all, he said to the man, Stretch out thine hand; and he did so: and his hand was restored sound as the other. ¹¹But they were filled with madness, and talked earnestly to each other what they could do to Jesus.

¹²Now it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray and continued all night in an oratory of God. ¹³And when it was day, he called his disciples to him; and elected from them twelve, whom he named Apostles: ¹⁴Simon, whom he also called Peter, and Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew, ¹⁵Matthew and Thomas, James son of Alpheus, and Simon called the Zealous, ¹⁶Jude the brother of James, and Judas Iscariot, who also was the traitor. ¹⁷And coming down with them, he stood on a level spot: and the crowd of his disciples, and a vast multitude of people from all Judea and Jerusalem, and the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, who came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases; ¹⁸and they who were disturbed with unclean spirits: and they were cured. ¹⁹And all the multitude strove to touch him, for there went virtue out of him, and healed them all.

²⁰And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, Blessed are ye poor, for yours is the kingdom of God. ²¹Blessed are ye who hunger now, for ye shall be filled. Blessed are ye that weep now, for ye shall laugh. ²²Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from them, and shall revile you, and shall cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. ²³Rejoice in that day, and leap for joy; for, lo! your reward is great in heaven: for after the same manner did your fathers to the prophets. ²⁴But wo unto you who are rich! for ye have received your consolation. ²⁵Wo unto you who are full! for ye shall hunger. Wo unto you who laugh now! for ye shall mourn and weep. ²⁶Wo unto you, when men shall speak well of you! for just so did their fathers of the false prophets. ²⁷But I say to you who hear, Love your enemies, do good to those who hate you; ²⁸bless those who curse you, and pray for those who wantonly insult you. ²⁹To him that smiteth thee on the cheek, offer the other also; and from him who would take from thee thy cloak, withhold not thy coat also. ³⁰And give to every one that asketh thee; and from him who would take thy goods, demand them not again. ³¹And as ye would that men should do unto you, do ye also to them in like manner.

³²And if ye love them that love you, what thanks are due to you? for even sinners love those who love them. ³³And if ye do good to them who do good to you, what thanks have ye? do not even sinners the same thing? ³⁴And if ye lend to those, from whom ye hope to receive back

again, what thanks are due to you? for sinners lend to sinners, that they may receive an equivalent. ³⁵But love your enemies, and do good and lend, hoping for nothing in return: and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Most High; for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the wicked. ³⁶Be ye therefore compassionate, as also your Father is compassionate. ³⁷And judge not, that ye be not judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: ³⁸give, and there shall be given unto you; good measure pressed down, and shook, and running over, shall they give into your lap. For with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured back to you again.

³⁹And he spake a parable unto them, Can the blind lead the blind? will they not both fall into the pit? ⁴⁰The disciple is not above his teacher; but every one who is completely taught shall be as his master.

⁴¹But why beholdest thou the mote which is in thy brother's eye, but observest not the beam which is in thine own eye? ⁴²Or how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, permit me to take off the mote which is on thine eye, not seeing thyself the beam in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite! cast out the beam which is in thine eye, and then shalt thou see distinctly to take off the mote which is in thy brother's eye. ⁴³For there is no good tree which produceth fruit of a bad quality; neither doth a tree of a bad sort produce good fruit. ⁴⁴Every tree is known by its own peculiar fruit. For men do not gather figs from off thorns, nor do they gather from the bramble a bunch of grapes. ⁴⁵A good man, out of the good treasure of his heart, produceth what is good; and a wicked man, from the evil treasure in his heart, produceth that which is evil: for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. ⁴⁶And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say? ⁴⁷Every one who cometh to me, and heareth my words, and puts them in practice, I will shew you to whom he is like: ⁴⁸he is like to a man, building a house, who digged, and sunk deep, and laid the foundation on a rock; and when there was a flood, the river rushed violently against that house, and was not of force to shake it, for it was founded on a rock. ⁴⁹But he that heareth, and doth not practice, is like a man who built his house on the earth without a foundation; against which the river rushed violently, and immediately it fell; and the crash of the fall of that house was great.

CHAP. VII.

NOW after he had finished all these sayings in the ears of the people, he entered into Capernaum. ²And the servant of a certain centurion, who was very valuable to him, being seized with an illness, was ready to die. ³But when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, entreating him that he would come and preserve the life of his servant. ⁴And when they came to Jesus, they entreated him importunately, saying, He is a worthy man on whom thou wilt confer this favour: ⁵for he loveth our nation, and hath himself built us a synagogue. ⁶Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion dispatched towards him friends, saying to him, Lord, trouble not thyself: for I am not deserving that thou shouldst enter beneath my roof. ⁷Therefore neither did I think myself worthy to come unto thee, but speak in a word, and my servant will be cured. ⁸For I also am a man under authority, and have under my command soldiers; and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come hither, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it. ⁹Then Jesus, on hearing these things, respected him highly, and turning to the multitude which was following him, he said, I tell you, I have not found such faith, even in Israel. ¹⁰And they who were sent, on their return to the house, found the servant who was sick in perfect health.

¹¹And it came to pass the next day, that he went into a city called Nain; and a considerable number of his disciples went with him, and a vast multitude. ¹²And as he drew near the gate of the city, behold, a dead man was carrying out, an only son to his mother, and she a widow; and a great concourse of the city was with her. ¹³And when Jesus saw her, he was moved with compassion for her, and said unto her, Weep not. ¹⁴And approaching, he touched the bier: and the bearers stood still; and he said, Young man, I say to thee, Arise. ¹⁵And the dead man sat up, and began to speak: and he delivered him to his mother. ¹⁶And fear fell on all, and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us, and that God hath looked down with mercy on his people. ¹⁷And this account respecting him went abroad through all Judea, and all

the region adjacent.

¹⁸And his disciples informed John of all these things. ¹⁹And John calling two certain persons of his disciples, sent them to Jesus, saying, Art thou he that cometh, or are we to expect another? ²⁰Then the men came to him, saying, John Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that cometh, or are we to expect another? ²¹And in that very hour he cured many of diseases and acute complaints, and evil spirits; and to many blind persons he gave sight. ²²And Jesus addressing them, said, Go, tell John what things ye have seen and heard: that the blind recover sight, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, the poor have the gospel preached unto them. ²³And blessed is he, whosoever shall not be offended at me.

²⁴Now when John's messengers were departed, he began to speak to the people concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind? ²⁵But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in delicate garments? Behold, they who indulge in soft raiment, and delicate food, are in king's palaces. ²⁶But what went ye out to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet. ²⁷For this is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, who shall prepare thy way before thee. ²⁸For I tell you, of those born from woman, there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdom of heaven, is greater than he. ²⁹And all the people when they heard it, and the publicans, glorified God, being baptised with the baptism of John. ³⁰But the Pharisees and teachers of the law rejected the counsel of God towards themselves, not being baptised by him.

³¹And the Lord said, To what then shall I compare the men of this generation? and to what are they like? ³²They are like to children sitting in the markets, and calling to each other, and saying, We have played the flute to you, and ye have not danced; we have raised the cry of mourning, and ye have not wept. ³³For John the Baptist came neither eating bread, nor drinking wine; and ye say, He hath a devil. ³⁴The Son of man is come eating and drinking, and ye say, A gluttonous man, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners! ³⁵though wisdom hath been justified by her children.

³⁶Then one of the Pharisees invited him to eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to table. ³⁷And, behold, a certain woman in the city, who was a notorious offender, when she knew that Jesus was sitting at table in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster vessel of odoriferous balm, ³⁸and standing at his feet behind him, began to water his feet with her tears, and to wipe them with the hair of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the perfumed balm. ³⁹And when the Pharisee who had invited him saw it, he said within himself, If this man were a prophet, he would know who and what kind of a woman this is that toucheth him; for she is a notorious sinner. ⁴⁰And Jesus addressing himself to him said, Simon, I have somewhat to say to thee. And he said, Master, speak freely.

⁴¹A certain creditor had two debtors, the one owed five hundred denarii, and the other fifty. ⁴²But having nothing to pay, he forgave them both. Tell me, which of these, then, will love him most? ⁴³And Simon answering said, I suppose, he to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast judged rightly. ⁴⁴So turning to the woman, he said to Simon, Thou seest this woman? I came into thine house, even water for my feet thou gavest not; but she hath washed my feet with her tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head. ⁴⁵One kiss hast thou not given me, but she from the time she hath come in, hath not ceased tenderly to kiss my feet. ⁴⁶My head with oil thou hast not anointed; but she hath anointed my feet with odoriferous balm. ⁴⁷For which cause, I tell thee, her many sins are forgiven, for she hath loved much: but to whom a little is forgiven, he loveth little. ⁴⁸And he said to her, Thy sins are forgiven. ⁴⁹And they who sat at table with him began to say in themselves, Who is this, who even forgives sins? ⁵⁰But he said unto the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

CHAP. VIII.

AND it came to pass afterwards, that he went through every city and village, preaching and publishing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God, and the twelve with him. ²And certain women who had been cured of evil spirits and sicknesses, Mary called Magdalene, from

whom seven devils had gone out. ³And Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herod's lieutenant-governor, and Susanna, and many others, who ministered to his support out of their possessions.

⁴Now when a vast multitude was collected, even those who came to him out of every city, he spake by a parable. ⁵A sower went out to sow his seed; and as he sowed, some fell by the road side, and was trodden under foot, and the birds of the air devoured it up. ⁶And other seed fell on a rock, and vegetating, withered because it had no moisture. ⁷And other seed fell amidst thorns, and the thorns springing up with it, choked it. ⁸And some fell on good ground, and shooting up, produced fruit an hundred fold. So saying, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

⁹Then his disciples asked him, saying. What might this parable mean? ¹⁰And he said, To you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God; but to the rest in parables: that seeing they may not perceive, and hearing may not comprehend. ¹¹Now this is the parable: The seed is the word of God. ¹²They by the road side, are such as hear; then cometh the devil, and taketh the word from their heart, that they should not be saved in believing. ¹³And they on the rock, are such as when they have heard, with joy embrace the word; and these have not root, who for a time believe, and in a season of trial apostasize. ¹⁴And that which fell among thorns, are they having heard, and going away, are choked by the cares, and wealth, and pleasures of life, and bring forth no perfect fruit. ¹⁵But that on the good ground are they who having heard the word, retain it in a heart excellent and good, and bring forth fruit with patience.

¹⁶No man lighting a lamp hides it with a cover, or putteth it under a bed, but on a stand, that they who are coming in, may see the light.

¹⁷For there is nothing hid which shall not be made manifest, nor concealed, which shall not be known and brought to light. ¹⁸Take heed therefore how ye hear: for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, even what he seemeth to have shall be taken away from.

¹⁹Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come near him because of the crowd. ²⁰And it was told him, saying, Thy mother and thy brethren are standing without, desirous of seeing thee. ²¹Then he answered and said to them, My mother and my brethren are they, who hear the word of God, and practise it.

²²And it came to pass on one of the days, that he went himself into a ship, and his disciples, and said unto them, Let us pass over to the farther side of the lake. And they set fail. ²³And while they were on the passage, he went to sleep: and a hurricane of wind rushed down on the lake; and they were filled with water, and imminent danger. ²⁴Then they came and awoke him, saying, Master, Master, we are perishing. Then arising, he issued his command to the wind, and the billows of water, and they subsided, and there was a calm. ²⁵And he said to them, Where is your faith? And they feared and were astonished, saying one to another, Well! what a man is this! that he commands even the winds and the sea, and they obey him.

²⁶And they sailed over unto the region of the Gadarenes, which is opposite Galilee. ²⁷And as he landed, there met him a certain man from the city, who had devils for a long while, and kept no clothes on him, and never abode in a house, but in the tombs. ²⁸But when he saw Jesus, roaring out, he fell down before him, and said with a loud voice, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God Most High? I pray thee, torment me not. ²⁹For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man; for many times it had seized on him; and though under a guard, and bound with chains and fetters; yet bursting the bonds, he was driven by the devil into the desert places. ³⁰Then Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? and he said, Legion: for many devils were entered into him. ³¹And he besought him that he would not order them to go into the abyss. ³²Now a herd of many swine was there feeding on the mountain; and they besought him that he would permit them to enter into them. And he permitted them. ³³Then the devils going out of the man, entered into the swine; and the herd rushed down a precipice into the lake, and was suffocated. ³⁴But when those who fed them saw what was done they fled, and went and told it in the city and in the country places. ³⁵And they came out to see what had happened; and they came to Jesus, and found the man sitting, from whom the devils were gone out,

clothed, and in his sound mind, at the feet of Jesus; and they were afraid. ³⁶Then they also who had seen how the demoniac was recovered, told them. ³⁷And the whole multitude of the country around the Gadarenes, entreated him to depart from them; for they were seized with great terror: and he embarked on the vessel, and returned. ³⁸And the man out of whom the devils had gone, besought him to be with him; but Jesus sent him away, saying, ³⁹Return to thy house, and declare what things God hath done for thee. And he went away, and published through the whole city what things Jesus had done for him.

⁴⁰And it came to pass, when Jesus returned, the people welcomed him, for they were all waiting for him. ⁴¹And, behold, there came a man whose name was Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue: and falling at the feet of Jesus, he entreated him to come to his house; ⁴²for he had an only daughter, about twelve years old, and she was dying: and as he was going, the multitude thronged him. ⁴³And a woman, who had a flux of blood, for twelve years, who had spent all her substance on physicians, and could not get a cure from any; ⁴⁴coming behind him, touched the fringe of his garment; and instantly the flux of her blood stopped. ⁴⁵And Jesus said, Who touched me? And when all denied, Peter, and those who were with him, said, Master, the multitudes throng and press thee, and sayest thou, Who hath touched me? ⁴⁶Then said Jesus, Some person hath touched me, for I know that miraculous power is gone out from me. ⁴⁷Then the woman seeing she was not hid, came trembling, and falling down before him, declared to him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him; and how she was cured instantaneously. ⁴⁸Then he said unto her, Be of good cheer, daughter, thy faith hath made thee well; go in peace.

⁴⁹And while he was yet speaking, a person came to the ruler of the synagogue, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead, give the master no further trouble. ⁵⁰Then Jesus hearing it, addressed him, saying, Fear not, only believe, and she shall be saved. ⁵¹And entering into the house, he suffered no person to come in, but Peter, and James, and John, and the father and mother of the child. ⁵²Now all were weeping and lamenting her: and he said, Weep not, she is not dead, but asleep. ⁵³And they derided him, for they knew that she was dead. ⁵⁴And he put them all without, and taking her by the hand, cried, saying, Maid, arise! ⁵⁵And her spirit returned, and she immediately arose; and he commanded to give her something to eat. ⁵⁶And her parents were struck with amazement. But he enjoined them to tell no man what was done.

CHAP. IX.

THEN calling his twelve disciples, he gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases. ²And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick. ³And he said to them, Take nothing for the journey, neither staffs, nor satchel, nor bread, nor money, nor have two coats each. ⁴And into whatsoever house ye enter, there abide, and thence go out. ⁵And whosoever shall not receive you, when ye go out of that city, shake off the dust from your feet, for a testimony against them. ⁶And they went forth, and passed through the villages, preaching the gospel, and performing cures everywhere.

⁷Then Herod the tetrarch heard of all things that were done by him; and he was in much distraction of mind, because it was said by some, that John was risen from the dead: ⁸and of some that Elias had appeared; and of others, that one of the ancient prophets was risen again. ⁹And Herod said, John I beheaded; but who is this, of whom I hear such things? And he sought to see him.

¹⁰And when the apostles returned, they told him what they had done. And taking them, he withdrew privately into a desert place belonging to the city called Bethsaida. ¹¹But when the multitudes knew it, they followed him and receiving them, he spake to them concerning the kingdom of God, and healed those who had need of a cure. ¹²Now the day began to decline: and the twelve coming to him, said, Dismiss the multitude, that going away into the villages and farms round about, they may lodge and find provision; for here we are in a desert place. ¹³Then he said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said, We have no more than five loaves, and two fishes; unless we go somewhere and buy provisions for all this multitude: ¹⁴for there were about five thousand men. Then said he to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties each in

companies. ¹⁵And they did so: and they made them all sit down. ¹⁶And taking the five loaves, and the two fishes, looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude. ¹⁷And they did all eat, and were filled; and there were taken up of the fragments which were more than enough for them, twelve baskets.

¹⁸And it came to pass, as he had been praying in retirement, his disciples were with him, and he asked them, Who do the multitudes say that I am? ¹⁹And they answering said, John the Baptist; but some Elias; and others, that one of the old prophets is risen again. ²⁰And he said to them, But who do ye say that I am? Then Peter answering said, The Messiah of God. ²¹And strictly charging them, he commanded, that they should tell no man this: ²²saying, The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be put to death, and on the third day rise again.

²³And he said unto them, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. ²⁴For whosoever would preserve his life shall lose it; but whosoever would lose his life for my sake, shall preserve it. ²⁵For what advantage hath a man in gaining all the world, if he destroy himself, or be punished with the loss of life? ²⁶For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in his own glory, and his father's, and of the holy angels. ²⁷And I tell you of a certainty, there are some of those who stand here, who shall not taste death, till they see the kingdom of God.

²⁸And it was about eight days after these discourses, that taking Peter, and John, and James, he went up into a mountain to pray. ²⁹And it came to pass, as he was at prayer, that the appearance of his countenance was altered, and his raiment white and refulgent. ³⁰And, lo! two men conversed with him, who were Moses and Elias: ³¹who appeared in glory, and mentioned his departure, which he was ready to accomplish at Jerusalem. ³²But Peter and they who were with him were weighed down with sleep: but when they awoke, they beheld his glory, and the two men who were standing with them. ³³And it came to pass, as they were departing from him, Peter said unto Jesus, it is well that we are here, and we will make three tents, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias; not knowing what he said. ³⁴And as he was thus speaking, a cloud came and overshadowed them: and they were afraid as they were entering into the cloud. ³⁵And a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son; hear him. ³⁶And when the voice ceased, Jesus was found alone. And they held their peace, and told no man in those days a word of the things which they had seen.

³⁷And it came to pass, on the next day, when they came down from the mountain, a great multitude met him. ³⁸And, behold, a man from among the multitude cried out aloud, saying, Master, I pray thee, look upon my son; for he is my only begotten. ³⁹And, behold! a spirit taketh him, and suddenly he crieth out, and convulseth him, with foaming; and bruising him, with difficulty retires from him. ⁴⁰And I besought thy disciples that they would cast him out, and they could not. ⁴¹Then Jesus answering, said, O faithless and perverse generation! how long shall I be with you, how long shall I bear with you? bring hither thy son. ⁴²And while he was yet approaching the devil threw him down, and violently convulsed him. Then Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and cured the child; and restored him to his father. ⁴³And they were all struck with amazement at the mighty power of God. And while they were all wondering at the things which Jesus did, he said to his disciples, ⁴⁴Keep ye these sayings in your ears; for the Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men. ⁴⁵And they understood not that declaration, and it was hid from them, that they should not comprehend its meaning: and they were afraid to ask him concerning that saying.

⁴⁶Then a dispute sprang up among them, which of them should be the greatest. ⁴⁷But Jesus knowing the reasoning of their hearts, took a little boy, and set him by his side, ⁴⁸and said unto them, Whosoever shall receive this little child in my name, receiveth me; and whosoever receiveth me, receiveth Him that sent me: for he who is the least among you all, he shall be great.

⁴⁹Then John addressing him said, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and we forbid him, because he followed not with us. ⁵⁰And Jesus said to him, Forbid him not; for he that is not against us, is

for us.

⁵¹And it came to pass, as the days hastened to their period when he should be received up *to glory*, that he resolutely set his face to go to Jerusalem; ⁵²and sent messengers before his face; and they advancing entered into a Samaritan village, to make preparation for him. ⁵³And they would not admit him, because his face was directed to Jerusalem. ⁵⁴And when the disciples James and John saw it, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven and destroy them, just as Elias did? ⁵⁵And turning to them, he reproveth them, and said, Ye know not what spirit ye are of: ⁵⁶for the Son of man came not to destroy men's lives, but to preserve them. And he proceeded to another village.

⁵⁷And it came to pass, as they were walking on the road, a certain person said to him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. ⁵⁸And Jesus Said to him, The foxes have holts, and the birds of the air, nests, but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

⁵⁹And he said to another, Follow me. And he said, Lord, permit me first to return home, and put my father in his grave. ⁶⁰And Jesus said unto him, Leave the dead to bury their own dead, but go thou, preach the kingdom of God.

⁶¹Then said another, I will follow thee, Lord, but give me leave first to bid adieu to those at my house. ⁶²But Jesus said unto him, No man laying his hand on the plough, and looking to the things left behind, is fit for the kingdom of God.

CHAP. X.

THEN after these things the Lord appointed other seventy persons also, and sent them, two and two before his face, into every city and place, whither he himself designed to go. ²He said therefore unto them, The harvest indeed is plenteous, but the labourers few: pray ye therefore to the Lord of the harvest, that he would send out labourers into his harvest. ³Go forth! behold, I send you out as lambs in the midst of wolves. ⁴Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor sandals: and stay to salute no man on the road. ⁵And into whatever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house. ⁶And if the Son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it; but if not, it shall return back to you again. ⁷And in the same family abide, eating and drinking such as they have: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not about from house to house. ⁸And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they welcome you, eat whatever is set before you: ⁹and heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. ¹⁰And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go out into the streets of it, and say, ¹¹Even the dust of your city, which sticks to us, we shake off against you: nevertheless this know, that the kingdom of God is come near to you. ¹²Now I tell you, that it shall be more tolerable for Sodom in that day, than for that city. ¹³Wo to thee Chorazin! wo to thee Bethsaida! for if the miracles which have been done in thee, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, long ago sitting in sackcloth and ashes, would they have repented. ¹⁴But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the judgment than for you. ¹⁵And thou Capernaum, which hast been lifted up to heaven, shalt be cast down to hell. ¹⁶He that heareth you, heareth me; and he that despiseth you, despiseth me; and he that despiseth me, despiseth Him that sent me.

¹⁷Then the seventy returned with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject to us through thy name. ¹⁸And he said unto them, I beheld Satan falling as lightning from heaven. ¹⁹Behold, I give you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy; and nothing shalt in any wise hurt you. ²⁰Nevertheless, in this rejoice not, that the spirits are made subject to you; but rejoice rather, that your names are inscribed in the heavens.

²¹In the same hour Jesus exulted in spirit, and said, I ascribe glory to thee, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and intelligent, and hast revealed them to babes: be it so, O Father! since such is thy good pleasure. ²²All things are given up to me by my Father: and no man knoweth who is the Son, but the Father; and who is the Father, but the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son is pleased to reveal him. ²³Then turning to the disciples, he said privately, Blessed are the eyes which see the things which ye see: ²⁴for I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see the things which ye

see, and have not seen them; and to hear the things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

²⁵And, behold, a certain doctor of the law arose, to make trial of him, saying, Master, by doing what shall I inherit eternal life? ²⁶And he said unto him, What is written in the law? How readest thou? ²⁷And he answering said, "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might, and with all thy understanding, and thy neighbour as thyself." ²⁸And he said unto him, Thou hast answered rightly: this do, and thou shalt live. ²⁹Then he, desirous to make himself appear a righteous person, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour? ³⁰Then Jesus answering said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among robbers, who, when they had both stripped him, and covered him with wounds, got off, leaving him half dead. ³¹And it so fell out, that a certain priest went down that way, and seeing him, he kept the opposite side of the road. ³²And a Levite also, in the same way, being near the place, came, and seeing him, kept the opposite side of the road. ³³But a certain Samaritan travelling, came by him, and seeing him, was moved with compassion, ³⁴and coming up to him, bound up his wounds, after pouring on them oil and wine; then setting him on his own beast, he led him to an inn, and took particular care of him. ³⁵And on the morrow, as he was departing, he took out of his purse two denarii, and gave them to the innkeeper, and said to him, Take great care of him; and whatever farther expence may be incurred, when I return, I will repay thee. ³⁶Which then of these three do you suppose to be the neighbour of him who fell into the robbers' hands? ³⁷And he said, He that shewed mercy towards him. Then said Jesus to him, Go, and do thou exactly the same.

³⁸And it came to pass, as they were travelling, that he entered into a certain village; and a woman, named Martha, received him into her house. ³⁹And she had a sister called Mary, who sitting down also at the feet of Jesus, hearkened to his discourse. ⁴⁰But Martha was hurrying about to provide a large entertainment, and coming up to him, she said, Lord, is it no concern to thee, that my sister hath left me to make the whole provision by myself? bid her therefore to assist me. ⁴¹But Jesus answering said to her, Martha, Martha, thou art anxious and disturbing thyself about many things. ⁴²But of one thing there is need: and Mary hath made her election of that good portion, which shall not be taken away from her.

CHAP. XI.

AND it came to pass, as he was in a certain place praying, when he had done, one of his disciples said to him, Lord, teach us to pray, even as John also taught his disciples. ²And he said unto them, When ye pray say, Our Father, which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name: thy kingdom come: thy will be done as in heaven so upon earth. ³Give us our necessary food, day by day: ⁴and forgive us our sins, for we also forgive every one who is indebted to us. And bring us not into temptation; but deliver us from the wicked one.

⁵And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and he shall go to him at midnight, and say to him, Friend, lend me three loaves; ⁶for a friend of mine is come to me off a journey, and I have nothing to set before him. ⁷And he from within answering, shall say, Give me no farther trouble: my door is already locked, and my children are with me in bed; I am unable to rise and give thee. ⁸I tell you, though even he would not rise and give him because he is his friend; yet because of his importunity, roused up, he will give him as many as he needeth. ⁹And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. ¹⁰For every one who asketh, receiveth; and he that seeketh, findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. ¹¹For what father of you, if his son ask a loaf, will he give him a stone? or if a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? ¹²or if he ask also an egg, will he give him a scorpion? ¹³If ye then, evil as ye are, know how to give good gifts to your children; how much more shall your Father, who is in heaven, give his Holy Spirit to those who ask him?

¹⁴And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb. And it came to pass, when the devil was gone out, the dumb person spake, and the people marvelled. ¹⁵But some of them said, He casteth out devils by Beelzebub the prince of the devils. ¹⁶But others, tempting him, sought of

him a sign from heaven. ¹⁷But he, knowing their thoughts, said to them, Every kingdom divided against itself is laid waste; and a house against a house, falleth. ¹⁸And if Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom be established? because ye say, that I cast out devils by Beelzebub. ¹⁹But if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges. ²⁰But if with the finger of God I cast out devils, then, verily the kingdom of God is come unto you. ²¹When a strong man, in complete armour, guards his palace, his goods are in peace. ²²But when a stronger person than he coming, vanquisheth him, he takes away his suit of armour in which he confided, and distributes the spoils. ²³He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad.

²⁴When the unclean spirit goeth out of a man, he passes through places destitute of water, seeking repose; and not finding it, saith, I will go back to my habitation from whence I came out: ²⁵and coming, he findeth it swept and furnished. ²⁶Then goeth he, and taketh seven other spirits, more wicked than himself; and they entering in, take up their abode there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first.

²⁷And it came to pass as he was speaking these words, a certain woman from among the multitude lift up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the breasts which thou hast sucked. ²⁸But he said, Yea rather, blessed are they who hear the word of God and observe it.

²⁹Then the multitudes thronging around him, he began to say, This is a wicked generation: it seeketh a sign, and no sign shall be given it, but the sign of Jonah the prophet. ³⁰For as Jonas was a sign to the Ninevites, so shall the Son of man also be to this generation. ³¹The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment against the men of this generation, and shall condemn them: for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here. ³²The men of Nineveh shall rise up in judgment against this generation, and shall condemn it, for they repented on the preaching of Jonah, and, behold, a greater than Jonah is here.

³³But no man lighting a lamp putteth it in a concealed place, or under a bushel, but on a stand, that they who are coming in, may see the light.

³⁴The lamp of the body is the eye: when therefore thine eye is clear, thy whole body will be luminous, but if it be vitiated, thy whole body will be darkened. ³⁵Let it be thy aim then, that the light which is in thee do not become darkness. ³⁶If then thy whole body be illuminated, not having any dark part, it will be wholly luminous, as a lamp by its brightness diffuseth light.

³⁷Now as he was speaking, a certain Pharisee invited him to dine with him; and going in with him, he sat down. ³⁸But the Pharisee seeing it, marvelled, that he had not washed before dinner. ³⁹Then said the Lord unto him, Now ye Pharisees make the outside of the cup and of the dish clean, but your inward parts are full of extortion and wickedness. ⁴⁰Ye senseless men! did not he who made that which is without, make also that which is within? ⁴¹But give what is within them for alms; and, lo! all will be pure unto you. ⁴²But wo to you, Pharisees, because ye tithe mint, and rue, and every herb, and pass by judgment and the love of God. These ought ye to have done, and not to have omitted the other. ⁴³Wo unto you, Pharisees, for ye love the first seats in the synagogues, and salutations in the places of public concourse. ⁴⁴Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are as graves concealed, which men, while walking over them, see not.

⁴⁵Then one of the doctors of the law addressing him, said, Master, thus speaking, thou reproachest us also. ⁴⁶And he said, Wo also to you, teachers of the law! for ye load men with burdens hardly bearable, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. ⁴⁷Wo unto you! for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them. ⁴⁸Ye do indeed bear witness to, and with pleasure concur in your fathers' deeds; for they truly killed them, and ye build their sepulchres. ⁴⁹Therefore also the wisdom of God hath said, I will send them prophets and apostles, and some of them they shall kill, and shall persecute: ⁵⁰that the blood of all the prophets, which hath been shed since the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation: ⁵¹from the blood of Abel to the blood of Zachariah, who was slain between the altar and the temple: verily I tell you, It shall be required of this generation. ⁵²Wo unto you, teachers of the law! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge;

ye yourselves enter not in, and those who were entering ye have hindered.

⁵³And as he was saying these things unto them, the scribes and Pharisees began to urge him vehemently, and to extort answers from him respecting many things; ⁵⁴laying snares for him, and seeking to catch hold of something from his mouth, that they might accuse him.

CHAP. XII.

MEANTIME myriads of people collecting, so that they trod on one another, he began to speak to his disciples, Take heed principally of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. ²For there is nothing concealed, that shall not be laid open; nor hid, which shall not be known. ³Wherefore whatsoever things ye have spoken in darkness, they shall be reported in the light; and what ye have whispered into the ear in the closets, shall be proclaimed on the house-tops. ⁴But I say to you my friends, Be not afraid of those who may kill the body, but after that, have nothing farther which they can do. ⁵But I will point out to you, whom ye should fear: Fear him, who, after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him! ⁶Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, yet not one of them is forgotten before God? ⁷But even the hairs of your head are all numbered: fear not then, ye are of more value than many sparrows. ⁸But I tell you, Every one who shall confess me before men, him will the Son of man also confess before the angels of God: ⁹but he that disowns me before men, shall be disowned before the angels of God. ¹⁰And every one who shall utter a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; but for him who hath blasphemed against the Holy Ghost, there shall be no forgiveness.

¹¹And when they shall bring you before the synagogues, and magistrates, and the ruling powers, be under no anxiety how or what defence ye shall make, or what ye shall say: ¹²for the Holy Ghost will teach you at that very hour what ye ought to say.

¹³Then spake one of the multitude to him, Master, order my brother to divide the inheritance with me. ¹⁴But he said to him, Man, who made me a judge and a divider among you? ¹⁵Then said he to them, Beware, and be on your guard against covetousness; for a man's life doth not depend on the abundance of his possessions. ¹⁶And he spake a parable unto them, saying,

The estate of a certain rich man bore plentifully: ¹⁷and he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do? for I have not room where I may house my crops. ¹⁸And he said, I will do this; I will take down my barns, and build them larger, and collect there all my crops, and my good things! ¹⁹And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast a multitude of good things in store for many years, be at ease, eat, drink, and be merry! ²⁰But God said to him, Thou fool! this night shall they demand thy life from thee; and the things which thou hast prepared, whose shall they be? ²¹Just such is every one who heapeth up treasure for self, and is not rich towards God.

²²Then said he to his disciples, For this reason I tell you, Be under no anxiety about your life, what ye shall eat, nor for your body, how ye shall be clothed. ²³The life is more than food, and the body than raiment. ²⁴Consider the ravens, for they neither sow nor reap; they have neither storehouse nor barn; yet God feedeth them: how much are ye more excellent than the birds? ²⁵Which of you, with all his anxiety, can add one moment to his life? ²⁶If therefore ye are unable to do the least thing, why are ye anxious about the others? ²⁷Observe the lillies how they grow up, they toil not, nor spin; but I tell you, that Solomon in all his glory, was not arrayed like one of these. ²⁸If God then so clothe the grass in the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow is thrown into the furnace; how much more you, O ye of little faith? ²⁹So then be not ye inquisitive what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, nor be agitated with restless anxiety. ³⁰For after all these things are the nations of the world seeking; and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. ³¹But seek ye the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be given you over.

³²Fear not, little flock! for your Father takes delight in giving you the kingdom. ³³Sell all your possessions, and give in charity; make yourselves purses that wax not old, a treasure never failing in the heavens, where no thief approaches, nor doth the moth destroy. ³⁴For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

³⁵Let your loins be firmly girded round, and your lamps burning: ³⁶and ye like men, expecting their master, when he shall return from the marriage; that when he comes and knocks, they may instantly open the door for him. ³⁷Blessed are those servants, whom the Master, when he cometh, shall find watchful: verily I say unto you, that he will gird up himself, and make them sit down at table, and come and wait upon them. ³⁸And if he come in the second watch, or in the third watch, and find them so watchful, blessed are those servants. ³⁹Now this be assured of, that if the master of the family had known at what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken through. ⁴⁰Therefore be ye also ready, for at an hour that ye think not of, the Son of man cometh.

⁴¹Then said Peter unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable to us, or also for all? ⁴²And the Lord said, Who indeed is a faithful steward, and prudent, whom the lord will place over his household, to give them their proportion of provision at the proper season? ⁴³Blessed is that servant, whom his lord, when he cometh, shall find so employed. ⁴⁴Verily I say unto you, that he will place him over all his property. ⁴⁵But if that servant say in his heart, My master will be a long while ere he comes; and shall begin to beat the men and maid-servants, and to eat and to drink, and to get drunk; ⁴⁶the master of that servant will come in a day when he doth not expect him, and at an hour which he knoweth not, and shall cut him asunder, and give him his portion with the unfaithful. ⁴⁷And that servant, who knew his master's will, and made no preparation for him, nor did according to his pleasure, shall be beaten with many stripes. ⁴⁸But he that knew it not, yet did things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few. For of every one to whom much is given, much shall be required from him: and to whom men commit much, they will of him demand abundantly more.

⁴⁹I am come to cast fire on the earth, and what is my wish? that it may be now kindled. ⁵⁰But I have a baptism to be baptised with; and how am I distressed in spirit till it is finished! ⁵¹Think ye that I came to bring peace upon earth? No, I tell you; but rather division: ⁵²for henceforth five shall be in one house, divided, three against two, and two against three. ⁵³The father shall take part against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the step-mother against her daughter-in-law, and the son's wife against her mother-in-law.

⁵⁴Then said he to the multitudes, When ye see a cloud rising from the west, ye say immediately, There cometh a shower; and it is so. ⁵⁵And when the south wind gently blows, ye say, It will be sultry hot; and so it is. ⁵⁶Ye hypocrites! ye know how to discern by experience from the appearance of the earth and of the sky; but how is it that ye do not discern this particular time? ⁵⁷And why even of yourselves do ye not decide what is just? ⁵⁸For as thou art going with thy prosecutor to the magistrate, on the way endeavour to make up the matter with him; lest he drag thee before the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison. ⁵⁹I tell thee, thou mayest in no wise come out from thence, until thou hast paid the very last mite.

CHAP. XIII.

NOW there were some present at that time who informed him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. ²And Jesus in reply said to them, Think ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things? ³I tell you, No: for except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. ⁴Or those eighteen, on whom the tower in Siloam fell, and killed them, think ye that they were debtors to divine justice above all the men who dwell at Jerusalem? ⁵I tell you, No: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

⁶Then he spake this parable: A certain man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard; and he came, expecting fruit on it, and found none. ⁷Then said he to the vine-dresser, Lo! for three years have I come, expecting fruit on this fig-tree, and find none: cut it down; why doth it render the ground thus useless? ⁸He answering said to him, Sir, let it e'en remain this year, until that I dig around it, and spread some manure: ⁹perhaps it may then produce fruit: but if it does not, afterwards thou shalt cut it down.

¹⁰And he was teaching in one of the synagogues, on the sabbath. ¹¹And, behold, there was a woman who had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and unable to raise herself at all up. ¹²But when Jesus saw her, he called out aloud, and said to her, Woman, thou art delivered from thine infirmity. ¹³And he laid his hands upon her: and instantly she became erect, and glorified God. ¹⁴Then the ruler of the synagogue, indignant, that on the sabbath Jesus had performed the cure, addressing himself to the multitude, said, There are six days in which work is to be done: on these therefore come and be cured, and not on the sabbath-day. ¹⁵Then the Lord answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not every one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the manger, and lead him to water? ¹⁶And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, to be loosed from this bond on the sabbath-day? ¹⁷And when he had made this speech, all his opposers were covered with shame: and all the multitude rejoiced in all the glorious things which were done by him. ¹⁸Then said he, To what is the kingdom of God like? and whereunto shall I compare it? ¹⁹It is like a grain of mustard, which a man took and put into his garden; and it grew, and became a great tree; and the fowls of the air lodged on its branches.

²⁰And again he said, To what shall I liken the kingdom of God? ²¹It is like leaven, which a woman taking, covered up in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

²²And he passed through the cities and villages, teaching, and making his way towards Jerusalem. ²³And a person said to him, Lord, are the saved few? And he said unto them, ²⁴Exert all your powers to enter through the strait gate: for many, I tell you, will seek to enter, but will not be able. ²⁵When the master of the family shall have arisen, and shut the door, and ye shall begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Master, master, open it for us! and he answering will tell you, I know you not whence ye are: ²⁶then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. ²⁷And he will say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity. ²⁸There shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom, and yourselves cast out. ²⁹And they shall come from the east, and west, and from north, and south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. ³⁰And, behold, there are last who shall be first, and there are first who shall be last.

³¹The same day came certain Pharisees, saying to him, Depart, and begone from hence: for Herod will kill thee. ³²And he said to them, Go tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and perform cures today and to-morrow, and on the third day I shall be perfected. ³³But I must go on to-day and to-morrow, and the day following: for it is impossible that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

³⁴O Jerusalem! Jerusalem! thou that killest the prophets, and stonest those who are sent unto thee; how often would I have collected thy children unto me, just as a hen gathereth her brood under her wings, and ye would not! ³⁵Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: verily I say unto you, That ye shall see me no more, till the day come when ye shall say, Blessed is he who cometh in the name of the Lord.

CHAP. XIV.

AND it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the principal Pharisees, to eat bread on the sabbath, that they were watchfully observant of him. ²And, behold, there was a certain man who had a dropsy, before him. ³And Jesus addressing himself to the teachers of the law and the Pharisees, spake, saying, Is it lawful to perform cures on the sabbath? ⁴And they said nothing. And he took him, and healed him, and sent him away; ⁵and addressing them, said, Whose ass or ox is fallen into a pit, and doth he not immediately pull him out on the sabbath-day? ⁶And they were unable to answer him in opposition to these things.

⁷Then he spake to those who were invited, a parable, when he observed how they chose the principal seats; saying unto them, ⁸When thou art invited of any person to a marriage entertainment, recline not on the principal couch; lest a more honourable personage than thyself be invited by him; ⁹and he that invited thee and him, coming say to thee,

Yield this person the place; and so thou shalt begin with shame to go down to the lowest place. ¹⁰But when thou art invited, go and sit down in the lowest place; that when he who invited thee comes, he may say to thee, Friend, go up higher; then shalt thou have respect in the presence of those who are seated with thee. ¹¹For every one who exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

¹²Then said he also to the person who had invited him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, invite not thy friends, nor thy brethren, nor thy relations, nor thy rich neighbours; lest they also invite thee again, and a recompence be made to thee. ¹³But when thou makest an entertainment, invite the poor, the maimed, the halt, the blind: ¹⁴and thou shalt be blessed; because they cannot recompense thee: for a recompence shall be made thee at the resurrection of the just.

¹⁵Then one of those who sat at table hearing these things, said to him, Blessed is he who shall eat bread in the kingdom of God. ¹⁶And he said unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and invited many: ¹⁷and sent his servants at supper-time to say to the invited, Come; for all things are now ready. ¹⁸And they all began with one voice to frame excuses. The first said to him, I have bought a field, and I must of necessity go and survey it: I pray thee hold me excused. ¹⁹And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and am going to make a trial of them: I pray thee accept my excuse. ²⁰And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. ²¹And that servant returning, informed his master of these things. Then the master of the family, being highly incensed, said to his servant, Go out instantly into the streets and alleys of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind. ²²And the servant said, Sir, it is done as thou orderedst, and yet there is room. ²³And the master said to the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and urge them to come in, that my house may be filled. ²⁴For I say unto you, That not one man of those who were invited shall taste of my supper.

²⁵And great multitudes followed him about: and he turned, and spoke to them, ²⁶If any man cometh after me, and hateth not father, and mother, and wife and children, and brothers, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. ²⁷And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, he cannot be my disciple. ²⁸For what man of you designing to erect a tower, doth not first sitting down calculate the expence, if he have sufficient to complete the work? ²⁹lest haply, after having laid the foundation, and being unable to finish it, all who look upon it begin to ridicule him, ³⁰saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish. ³¹Or what king, going forth to encounter another king in battle, doth not sit down first, and consult if he is able with ten thousand men to meet him who is coming against him with twenty thousand? ³²and if he be not, whilst he is still at a distance, he sendeth an embassy, and desires terms of peace. ³³So then, every one of you who will not part with all his possessions, cannot be my disciple.

³⁴Salt is good: but if the salt become insipid, by what shall it be seasoned? ³⁵It is neither fit for the land, nor for manure; but they cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

CHAP. XV.

THEN drew nigh unto him all the tax-farmers and the sinners to hear him. ²And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying, This man entertains sinners, and eateth with them. ³Then spake he unto them this parable, saying, ⁴What man is there of you, possessing an hundred sheep, though he lose but one of them, will he not leave the ninety-nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? ⁵and when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. ⁶And coming home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Congratulate me; for I have found that sheep of mine which was lost. ⁷I tell you, that just so will there be joy in heaven over one repentant sinner, more than over ninety-nine righteous persons, who hold not their need of repentance. ⁸Or what woman having ten pieces of silver coin, if she lose one of them, doth she not light a lamp, and sweep the house, and make diligent search until she find it? ⁹And having found it, she calleth her female friends and neighbours together, saying, Congratulate me; for I have found the silver piece I had lost. ¹⁰Even so, I tell you, there is joy among the angels of God, over one repentant sinner.

¹¹Then he said, A certain man had two sons: ¹²and the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of substance which falls to my share. And he divided with them his fortune. ¹³And not many days after, the younger son, collecting his all, travelled into a far distant country, and there dissipated his substance in a life of debauchery. ¹⁴But when he had spent all, there came a terrible famine in that region; and he began to know want. ¹⁵And he went and connected himself with one of the citizens of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. ¹⁶And he eagerly longed to fill his belly with the charob berries which the swine did eat: and no person gave him *a morsel*. ¹⁷Then coming to himself, he said, How many hirelings of my father abound with loaves of bread, and I am pining away with famine! ¹⁸I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, ¹⁹and I am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hirelings. ²⁰And he arose and came to his father. But when he was yet at a considerable distance, his father discovered him, and was moved with compassion, and running, fell on his neck, and kissed him again and again. ²¹Then said the son unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. ²²But the father said to his servants, Bring out the best robe, and clothe him; and put a ring on his hand, and sandals on his feet: ²³and bring hither the stall-fed steer, and kill it; and let us eat, and be joyous. ²⁴For this my son was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found. And they began to be joyous. ²⁵Now his elder brother had been in the field: and when coming home he drew near the house, he heard a concert of music, and the chorus. ²⁶And calling one of the servants, he inquired what these things meant. ²⁷And he said, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed for him the stall-fed steer, because he hath received him in health. ²⁸Then he was in great wrath, and would not enter the doors: therefore his father came out, and entreated him. ²⁹But he answering said to his father, Lo, these many years I am serving thee, and never have transgressed thy command: yet to me thou hast never once given a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: ³⁰but no sooner is this son of thine come, who hath devoured thy substance with whores, than thou hast killed for him the stall-fed steer. ³¹And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all my possessions are thine. ³²But it was right that we should rejoice, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

CHAP. XVI.

THEN said he also to his disciples, There was a certain rich man, who had a steward; and he received an information against him, as having dissipated his treasures. ²And calling him, he said to him, What is this report I hear of thee? give up the account of thy stewardship; for thou mayest be no longer in that office. ³Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do? because my master is taking away the stewardship from me: to dig, I have not the strength; to beg, I am ashamed. ⁴I know what I will do, that, when I am removed from the stewardship, they may entertain me at their houses. ⁵So calling upon every one of his master's debtors, he said to the first, How much owest thou to my master? ⁶And he said, A hundred baths of oil. And he said, Take thy account, and sit down directly, and write fifty. ⁷Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, An hundred core of wheat. And he saith to him, Take thy account, and write fourscore. ⁸And the master praised the unjust steward, because he had acted providently: for the children of this world are more provident among their own generation of men, than the children of light. ⁹And I say unto you, Make yourselves friends with the unrighteous mammon that when ye fail, they may receive you into the eternal mansions.

¹⁰He that is faithful in the least thing, is faithful also in much: and he who is unjust in the least, is unjust also in much. ¹¹If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will entrust you with the true? ¹²and if ye have not been faithful in that which belongs to another, who will give up to you that which is your own? ¹³No domestic can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or he will cleave to the one, and neglect the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

¹⁴Then the Pharisees also, who were dear lovers of money, heard all

these things, and they sneered at him. ¹⁵And he said unto them, Ye are they who affect to be righteous persons before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men, is an abomination in the sight of God. ¹⁶The law and the prophets were until John: since that the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it. ¹⁷But it is easier for heaven and earth to pass away, than for one tittle of the law to fail. ¹⁸Every one who putteth away his wife and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and every one who marrieth a woman divorced from her husband, committeth adultery.

¹⁹Now there was a certain rich man, and he was clothed in purple and fine linen, making splendid entertainments every day: ²⁰and there was a certain pauper, named Lazarus, who was laid at his gate covered with ulcers, ²¹and importunately desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: yea even the dogs came and licked his ulcers. ²²Now it came to pass that the poor man died, and was carried up by angels into the bosom of Abraham. Then the rich man also died, and was buried: ²³and in hell, lifting up his eyes, being in torments, he seeth Abraham at a vast distance, and Lazarus in his bosom. ²⁴And crying out, he said, Father Abraham, have compassion on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented with this flame. ²⁵But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou hast received thy good things during thy life, and Lazarus, in like manner, what was afflictive: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented. ²⁶And besides all these considerations, between us and you there is a vast chasm fixed: so that they who might be willing to pass from hence to you, cannot; neither can they pass through to us, from thence. ²⁷And he said, I entreat thee then, father, that thou wouldest send him to my paternal mansion: ²⁸for I have five brothers: that he may testify to them, that they also come not into this place of torment. ²⁹Abraham saith to him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hearken to them. ³⁰But he said, Ah no, father Abraham! but if one came to them from the dead, they will repent. ³¹Then he said to him, If they hearken not to Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rose from the dead.

CHAP. XVII.

THEN he said to his disciples, It is impossible that offences should not come; but wo to him through whom they come! ²It would be advantageous for him, if a milstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea, rather than offend one of these little ones. ³Take heed to yourselves: if thy brother sin against thee, reprove him; and if he repent, forgive him. ⁴And if seven times in the day he sin against thee, and seven times in the day return to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

⁵And the disciples said unto the Lord, increase our faith. ⁶And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard, ye might say to that sycamore-tree, Be rooted up, and be planted in the sea; and it would obey you.

⁷But which of you, having a servant plowing or keeping sheep, when he cometh from the field, will say immediately, Come, sit down at table? ⁸And will he not rather say, Prepare for me to sup, and gird thyself, and wait upon me, till I eat and drink; and after that, thou shalt eat and drink thyself? ⁹Doth he hold it as a favour from that servant, that he did the things which were ordered him? I think not. ¹⁰So also ye, when ye have done all things commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: for we have but done what was our duty to do.

¹¹And it came to pass, as he was going towards Jerusalem, he passed also through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. ¹²And as he was entering a certain village, ten leprous men met him, who stood at a distance: ¹³and they lift up their voice, saying, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us! ¹⁴And looking towards them, he said, Go, shew yourselves to the priests. And it came to pass, that as they were on the road, they were made clean. ¹⁵Then one of them, seeing that he was cured, returned, and with a loud voice gave glory to God, ¹⁶and fell prostrate at his feet giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan. ¹⁷Then Jesus spake and said, were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine? ¹⁸There are none found returning to give glory to God, but this alien. ¹⁹And he said to him, Arise, go thy way: thy faith hath saved thee.

²⁰And being asked by one of the Pharisees, When cometh the kingdom of God? he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: ²¹neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you. ²²Then said he to the disciples, The days will come when ye shall eagerly desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and shall not see it. ²³And they will say to you, Lo here! and lo there! go not after them, nor follow them. ²⁴For as the lightning flashing from one quarter under heaven, shineth to another quarter under heaven; so shall the Son of man also be at his day. ²⁵But he must first suffer many things, and be rejected by this generation. ²⁶And as it was in the days of Noah, so shall it also be in the days of the coming of the Son of man. ²⁷They did eat, they drank, they married, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and the deluge came, and destroyed them all.

²⁸Even so, likewise, it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; ²⁹but the day Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. ³⁰Just so will it be in the day when the Son of man shall be revealed. ³¹In that day, let not the man who is upon the roof, and his goods in the house, go down to carry them away: and he that is in the field, in like manner, let him not return for any things behind him. ³²Remember Lot's wife. ³³Whosoever seeketh to preserve his life shall lose it; and whosoever would lose it, shall preserve it. ³⁴I tell you, in that night two shall be in the same bed; the one shall be seized, and the other dismissed. Two women shall be grinding together: the one shall be seized, and the other dismissed. ³⁵Two shall be in the field; the one shall be seized, and the other dismissed. ³⁶TEXT OMITTED ³⁷And they answering, said to him, Where, Lord? And he said, Wherever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together.

CHAP. XVIII.

THEN he spake also to them a parable, to shew that we ought to pray always, and not faint; ²saying, There was a certain judge in a particular city, having no fear of God, nor respect for man: ³and there was a certain widow in that city; and she came to him, saying, Do me justice against my adversary. ⁴And he would not for a long while: but after this he said, Though I fear not God, nor respect man; ⁵yet because this woman is so troublesome to me, I will do her justice, lest by her perpetual coming she stun me with her importunity, ⁶Then said the Lord, Hear what the unjust judge saith. ⁷And shall not God execute vengeance for his own elect, who cry out to him day and night, though he bear long with them? ⁸Yes, I tell you, that he will avenge them quickly. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, ah! shall he find faith on the earth?

⁹Then he spake also this parable to certain persons, who had confidence in themselves, that they were righteous, and despised others: ¹⁰Two men went up to the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, the other a tax-farmer. ¹¹The Pharisee, standing by himself, made this prayer: God, I thank thee, that I am not as the rest of mankind, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or as this tax-gatherer. ¹²I keep a fast twice a week, I pay the tenth of all things I possess. ¹³And the tax-gatherer standing at a distance, would not even so much as lift his eyes heaven-ward, but smote on his breast, saying, May God accept the atonement for me a sinner! ¹⁴I say to you, Went this man down to his house justified, or the other? for every one who exalteth himself shall be humbled; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

¹⁵Then they brought him infants also, that he should touch them: but the disciples, when they saw it, rebuked them. ¹⁶But Jesus calling them to him, said, Permit little children to come to me, and hinder them not for of such is the kingdom of God. ¹⁷Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

¹⁸And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, by doing what shall I inherit eternal life? ¹⁹Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good, but one, even God.

²⁰Thou knowest the commandments, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother. ²¹Then he said, All these

things have I observed from my youth. ²²Then Jesus hearing this, said to him, Yet one thing thou lackest: sell all whatsoever thou hast, and distribute to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me. ²³But he, on hearing these things, was exceeding sorrowful: for he was very rich. ²⁴Then Jesus, observing that he was very sorrowful, said, How difficultly shall they who have riches, enter into the kingdom of God! ²⁵It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. ²⁶And those who heard it said, Who then can be saved? ²⁷And he said, The things impossible with men, are possible with God. ²⁸Then said Peter, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee. ²⁹And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that there is no man who hath left family, or parents, or brothers, or wife, or children, for the sake of the kingdom of God, ³⁰who shall not receive back manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting.

³¹Then taking aside the twelve, he said to them, Lo, we are going up to Jerusalem, and all things written by the prophets concerning the Son of man will be fulfilled. ³²For he shall be delivered up to the Gentiles, and they shall insult him, and treat him with indignity, and spit upon him: ³³and after scourging, shall slay him: and the third day he shall rise again. ³⁴And they understood none of these things: and the saying was concealed from them, and they knew not the things which were spoken.

³⁵And it came to pass, as he drew nigh to Jerusalem, a certain blind man sat by the road-side begging: ³⁶and hearing the multitude passing by, he inquired what was the cause. ³⁷And they told him, that Jesus the Nazarean is going by. ³⁸And he cried, saying, Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me! ³⁹And they who were going before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried so much the more, Son of David, have mercy on me! ⁴⁰Then Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be brought to him: and when he was come near, he asked him, ⁴¹saying, What wist thou that I should do for thee? Then he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight. ⁴²And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight: thy faith hath saved thee. ⁴³And instantly he received sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people, when they saw it, gave praise to God.

CHAP. XIX.

AND entering into Jericho, he passed through. ²And there was a person whose name was Zaccheus, and he was a principal farmer of the taxes, and the man was rich. ³And he was desirous to have a sight of Jesus, what sort of person he was; and he could not, because of the crowd, for he was short of stature. ⁴So running before, he climbed up a sycamore-tree, in order to get a sight of him: for he was about to pass that way. ⁵And when he was come to the spot, Jesus looking up, saw him, and said to him, Zaccheus, come down speedily; for to-day I must abide at thy house. ⁶And he hastened to come down, and entertained him gladly. ⁷And when they all saw it, they murmured, saying, That he is gone to lodge with a man, a notorious sinner. ⁸Then Zaccheus standing up, said unto the Lord, Behold, the half of my goods, Lord, I give unto the poor; and if I have got any thing from any man, by laying false informations, I am ready to restore fourfold. ⁹Then said Jesus unto him, To-day is salvation come to this house, because that he also is a son of Abraham. ¹⁰For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.

¹¹And as they were hearkening to these things, he proceeded on, and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and they supposed that immediately the kingdom of God would openly appear. ¹²He said therefore, A certain man of noble family went into a distant region, to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. ¹³And calling his ten servants, he gave them ten manehs¹⁵, and said unto them, Employ yourselves in traffic, till I come back. ¹⁴But his citizens hated him, and sent an embassy after him, saying, We will not have this man to rule over us. ¹⁵And it came to pass, at his return, after receiving the kingdom, that he ordered the servants to be called, to whom he had given the money, that he might know what every one had gained by his traffic. ¹⁶Then came the first, and said, Sir, thy maneh has gained ten manehs. ¹⁷And he said unto him, Well done, good servant: because thou hast been faithful in the least matter, hold thou dominion over ten cities. ¹⁸And the second

came, saying, Lord, thy maneh hath gained five manehs. ¹⁹Then said he also to this man, Be thou also over five cities. ²⁰And another came, saying, Master, there is thy maneh, which I have kept wrapt up in a napkin: ²¹for I was afraid of thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up where thou hadst laid nothing down, and reapest where thou didst not sow. ²²And he said to him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant. Thou knewest that I am an austere man, taking up what I laid not down, and reaping what I did not sow; ²³why then gavest thou not my money to the bank, so when I came I might have required it with interest? ²⁴And he said to those who stood by, Take from him the maneh, and give it to him who hath the ten manehs. ²⁵(And they say unto him, Sir, he hath ten manehs.) ²⁶For I say unto you, That to every one who hath, shall more be given; but from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away from him. ²⁷But as for these enemies of mine, who would not that I should reign over them, bring them hither, and slay them before me.

²⁸And having thus spoken, he proceeded forward, going up to Jerusalem. ²⁹And it came to pass, as he drew near to Bethphage and Bethany, to the mount called the mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples, ³⁰saying, Go into the opposite village; in which, as ye are at the entrance, ye will find a foal tied, on which no man hath ever yet sat: loose, and bring him. ³¹And if any man ask you, Why ye loose it? thus shall ye say to him, That the Lord hath need of him. ³²Then they who were sent, going, found it just as he had described to them. ³³And as they were untying the foal, the owners of it said to them, Why loose ye the foal? ³⁴And they said, The Lord hath need of him. ³⁵And they brought him to Jesus: and throwing their cloaks on the foal, they set Jesus thereon. ³⁶And as he went, they spread under him their garments on the road. ³⁷And when he was now approaching, at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples rejoicing began to praise God with a loud voice for all the miracles which they had seen; ³⁸saying, Blessed is the King, who cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

³⁹And some of the Pharisees from the crowd said unto him, Master, reprove thy disciples. ⁴⁰And he replying said to them. I tell you that, should these be silent, the very stones would cry out.

⁴¹And as he drew near, beholding the city, he wept over it, ⁴²saying, Oh that thou hadst known, even in this thy day, the things that are for thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes. ⁴³For the days will come upon thee, when thy enemies shall cast up a trench around thee, and encircle thee about, and straiten thee on every side, ⁴⁴and will dash thee on the ground, and thy children within thee; and will not leave in thee one stone upon another: because thou knewest not the season of thy visitation.

⁴⁵And entering into the temple, he began to cast out those who sold and bought in the temple; ⁴⁶saying unto them, It is written, My house is the house of prayer¹⁶: but ye have made it a den of robbers.

⁴⁷And he continued daily teaching in the temple. Then the chief priests and the scribes sought to destroy him, with the heads of the people, ⁴⁸but did not discover how they could do any thing: for all the people attentively hung on his lips.

CHAP. XX.

AND it came to pass, on one of those days, as he was teaching the people in the temple, and preaching the gospel, the chief priests and scribes with the elders came upon him, ²and spake to him, saying, Tell us by what authority thou doest these things or who is he that giveth thee this authority? ³Then he answering said to them, I also will ask you one question; and resolve me: ⁴The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men? ⁵And they reasoned among themselves, saying, If we reply, From heaven; he will say, Wherefore then did ye not believe him? ⁶But if we say, Of men; all the people will stone us: for they are persuaded that John was a prophet. ⁷And they answered, We know not from whence. ⁸And Jesus said to them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

⁹Then he began to speak to the people this parable: A certain man planted a vineyard, and delivered it to husbandmen, and went abroad for a long while. ¹⁰And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant,

that they might give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat, and sent him away empty. ¹¹And he again sent another servant: and him also they beat, and treating him with indignity, sent him away empty. ¹²And he sent yet a third: and him they also wounded, and cast out. ¹³Then said the master of the vineyard, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: probably when they see him, they will shew him respect. ¹⁴But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the heir: come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be our own. ¹⁵So casting him out of the vineyard, they slew him. What then will the master of the vineyard do with these men? ¹⁶He will come and destroy these husbandmen, and give the vineyard to others. And when they heard it, they said God forbid. ¹⁷Then he looked on them, and said, What is this then which is written ¹⁷, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner? ¹⁸Every one who falleth upon this stone shall be broken to pieces; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder. ¹⁹And the chief priests and the scribes sought to lay hands on him at that time; and were afraid of the people: for they knew that he had spoken this parable against them.

²⁰And watching him, they sent men they had suborned, who pretended that they were righteous persons, in order to lay hold of some word of his, that they might deliver him to the power and authority of the governor. ²¹And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou speakest and teachest rightly, and respectest no man's person, but teachest the way of God in truth: ²²Is it lawful for us to pay tribute to Cæsar, or not? ²³Then he, aware of their crafty design, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? ²⁴Shew me a denarius. Whose image and inscription hath it? And they answering said, Cæsar's. ²⁵Then said he to them, Pay therefore to Cæsar the things which are Cæsar's, and to God the things which are God's. ²⁶And they were unable to lay hold of a single expression of his before the people: and marvelling at his answer, they were silenced.

²⁷Then certain of the Sadducees, who contend that there is no resurrection, asked him, ²⁸saying, Master, Moses wrote for us ¹⁸, If a man's brother die, having a wife, and he die childless, that his brother should take the wife, and raise up seed for his brother. ²⁹Now there were seven brothers: and the first taking a wife, died childless. ³⁰And the second taking the wife, he also died childless. ³¹Then the third took her; and also all the seven in like manner: and left no children, and died. ³²And last of all died also the woman. ³³In the resurrection therefore whose wife of them shall she be? for the seven had her to wife. ³⁴And Jesus in reply said to them, The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage: ³⁵but they who are counted worthy to attain to that world, and the resurrection of the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: ³⁶neither can they die any more: for they are like the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection. ³⁷Now that the dead are raised, even Moses intimated at the bush ¹⁹, when he called the Lord, "the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob." ³⁸Now God is not the God of the dead, but of the living: for all live with him. ³⁹Then some of the scribes addressing him said, Master, admirably hast thou spoken! ⁴⁰And after that they durst not put another question to him.

⁴¹Then he spake to them: How say they that the Messiah is the son of David? ⁴²Yet David himself, in the book of Psalms, saith, "The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit down at my right hand, ⁴³until I put thine enemies for a footstool of thy feet ²⁰." ⁴⁴David then calleth him Lord, and how then is he his son?

⁴⁵And whilst all the people were hearkening, he said to his disciples, ⁴⁶Beware of the scribes, who desire to walk about in trailing robes, and love salutations in the public places, and the principal seats in the synagogues, and the most honourable couch at suppers; ⁴⁷who devour the houses of widows, and for a pretext make long prayers: these shall receive a more abundant punishment.

CHAP. XXI.

AND as he looked up, he saw some casting their gifts into the treasury who were rich. ²And he observed also a certain widow, miserably poor, put in there two mites. ³And he said, Of a truth I tell you

that this poor widow hath put in more than all they: ⁴for all they have of their superfluity cast into the oblations for God: but she out of her indigence hath cast in all the substance which she possessed.

⁵And some of them talking of the temple, how adorned it was with the beautiful stone-work and the dedicated offerings, he said, ⁶As for these things which ye are gazing upon, the days will come, in which one stone will not be left upon another, that shall not be utterly thrown down. ⁷And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what is the sign, when these things are ready to come to pass? ⁸Then he said, Take heed that ye be not deluded: for many will come in my name, saying, I am he; and the period approaches: go not therefore after them. ⁹But when ye shall hear of wars and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to pass; but the conclusion is not immediately. ¹⁰Then saith he unto them, Nation shall rise up against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: ¹¹and great earthquakes shall be in different places, and famines, and pestilences; and in the heaven shall be frightful appearances, and mighty signs. ¹²But before all these things, they will lay hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and to prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my name's sake. ¹³And it shall afford you an opportunity to bear your testimony. ¹⁴Therefore rest satisfied in your hearts, not to premeditate what apology to make: ¹⁵for I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall be utterly unable to contradict or resist. ¹⁶But ye shall be betrayed even by parents, and brethren, and relations, and friends; and some of you they shall put to death. ¹⁷And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake. ¹⁸Though a hair of your head shall in nowise perish. ¹⁹In your patience possess ye your souls. ²⁰But when ye see Jerusalem, encircled with armies, then know that the desolation of it approaches. ²¹Then let those who are in Judea fly unto the mountains; and let those who are in the midst of her get far away: and they who are in the countries, let them not enter into her. ²²For these are the days of vengeance, when all things which are written shall be fulfilled. ²³But wo to those who are big with child, and have infants at their breasts, in those days! for there shall be great distress on the earth, and wrath upon this people. ²⁴And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden under foot of the Gentiles, until the times appointed for the Gentiles shall come to their period. ²⁵And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; ²⁶men terrified to death with fear, and expectation of the calamities coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. ²⁷And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud, with power and great glory. ²⁸And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.

²⁹And he spake a parable unto them, Behold the fig-tree, and all the trees, ³⁰when they now put forth, as soon as ye see it ye know in yourselves that the summer is now near: ³¹so ye also, when ye see these things come to pass, know that the kingdom of God is at hand. ³²Verily I say unto you, That this generation shall in nowise pass away, until all these things come to pass. ³³Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall never pass away. ³⁴But take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts should be overloaded with surfeiting and drunkenness, and the anxious cares of life, and that day should come upon you unawares. ³⁵For as a snare shall it come upon all that are settled on the face of the whole earth. ³⁶Watch therefore, praying at every proper opportunity, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things which are ready to come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

³⁷And during the day he continued teaching in the temple; but at night he went out, and lodged in the mountain called the mount of Olives. ³⁸And all the people came to him early in the morning at the temple, to hear him.

CHAP. XXII.

AND the feast of unleavened bread, which is called the Passover, was at hand. ²And the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might destroy him; for they were afraid of the people. ³Then entered Satan into Judas called Iscariot, though he was of the number of the

twelve. ⁴And he went and conversed with the chief priests and the captains, by what means he could betray him unto them. ⁵And they were glad, and agreed with him to give him a sum of money. ⁶And he gave them his promise, and sought the favourable opportunity to betray him to them, in the absence of the multitude.

⁷Then came the day of unleavened bread, on which the passover must be killed. ⁸And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go, prepare for us the passover, that we may eat it. ⁹And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare it? ¹⁰And he said unto them, Lo! as you are at the entrance of the city, there will a man meet you, carrying a pitcher of water; follow him into the house whither he is going. ¹¹And say to the master of that family, The teacher saith to thee, Where is the dining-room, in which I can eat the passover with my disciples? ¹²And he will shew you a large upper room furnished: there make ready. ¹³And they going away, found it just as he had told them: and they made ready the passover. ¹⁴And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. ¹⁵And he said unto them, With earnest desire have I longed to eat this passover with you before I suffer: ¹⁶for I tell you, that I will no more ever eat of it, until it shall be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. ¹⁷And taking the cup, after having given thanks, he said, Take this, and divide among yourselves: ¹⁸for I say unto you, that I shall no more drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God come. ¹⁹And taking a loaf, he gave thanks, and brake, and gave it to them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: do this in remembrance of me. ²⁰And the cup in like manner, after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you. ²¹But lo! the hand of him that betrayeth me is with me at the table. ²²And the Son of man indeed goeth, as is decreed: but wo to that man by whom he is betrayed! ²³And they began to question among themselves, who it could possibly be of them who should do this thing.

²⁴Now it came to pass, that there was also a contention among them, even which of them should be accounted to be the greatest. ²⁵And he said to them, The kings of the Gentiles lord it over them; and they who exercise authority over them are called benefactors. ²⁶But ye shall not act thus: but the superior among you, let him be as the junior; and he that presideth, as he that serveth. ²⁷For which is the greater, he that sitteth at table, or he that waits? is not he that sitteth at table? but I am in the midst of you as he that serveth. ²⁸Ye are they who have continued with me during my trials. ²⁹And I appoint you, as my Father hath appointed me, a kingdom; ³⁰that ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and be seated on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

³¹And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, lo! Satan hath earnestly sought you, that he might sift you as wheat: ³²but I have prayed for thee, that thy faith may not fail: and when thou art returned, stablish thy brethren. ³³Then he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, to prison, and to death! ³⁴And he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before thou shalt thrice deny having known me.

³⁵And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, or scrip, or sandals, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing. ³⁶Then said he to them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him also take a scrip: and he that hath none, let him sell his cloak, and buy a sword. ³⁷For I tell you, that what hath already been written must be fulfilled in me, namely, "He was numbered with the transgressors²¹:" for the things also concerning me draw to their period. ³⁸Then they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords, and he said to them, It is enough.

³⁹And going out, he went, according to his custom, to the mount of Olives; and his disciples also followed him. ⁴⁰And when he came to the spot, he said unto them, Pray that ye enter not into temptation. ⁴¹And he withdrew from them about a stone's cast, and kneeling down, he prayed, ⁴²saying, Father, if thou wilt, remove this cup from me! nevertheless, not my will, but thine, be done. ⁴³And an angel from heaven appeared to him, strengthening him. ⁴⁴And being in an agony, he prayed with greater intenseness: and his sweat was as clots of blood falling on the ground. ⁴⁵And when he rose up from prayer, on coming to his disciples, he found them sleeping from sorrow. ⁴⁶And he said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise up, and pray, that ye enter not into temptation.

⁴⁷And while he was yet speaking, behold a multitude, and he who was

called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and approached Jesus to kiss him. ⁴⁸Then said Jesus unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss? ⁴⁹Then when they who were about him saw what was ready to happen, they said unto him, Lord, shall we strike with the sword? ⁵⁰And one of them struck at a servant of the high-priest, and cut off his right ear. ⁵¹Then Jesus, addressing them, said, Permit me thus far: and touching his ear, he healed him. ⁵²Then said Jesus to the chief priests and captains of the temple, and to the elders who were come forth against him, Are ye come out as against a robber, with swords and staves? ⁵³When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched out no hands upon me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkness.

⁵⁴Then seizing upon him, they led him away, and brought him into the palace of the high-priest. But Peter followed at a distance. ⁵⁵And as they had lighted a fire in the middle of the hall, and had seated themselves in a company, Peter sat down in the midst of them. ⁵⁶But a certain maid-servant who sat at the fire, eyeing him, and looking at him stedfastly, said, This man was also with him. ⁵⁷But he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not. ⁵⁸And after a little while another seeing him, said, Surely thou art one of them. Then said Peter, Man, I am not. ⁵⁹And at about an hour's distance, another person strongly asserted, saying, Of a certainty this fellow was also with him: for he too is a Galilean. ⁶⁰And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And instantly, while he was yet speaking, the cock crew. ⁶¹And the Lord, turning round, looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said to him, That before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. ⁶²And Peter going without, wept bitterly.

⁶³And the men who held Jesus insulted him, beating him with rods; ⁶⁴and blindfolding him, smote him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecy, who is he that struck thee? ⁶⁵And many other things, blaspheming, spake they against him.

⁶⁶And when the day broke, the elders of the people and the chief priests and scribes assembled, and brought him into their sanhedrim, saying, ⁶⁷If thou art the Messiah, tell us. And he said unto them, If I tell you, ye will not believe: ⁶⁸and if I shall ask you any question, ye will neither answer me, nor let me go free. ⁶⁹Hereafter shall the Son of man sit at the right hand of the power of God. ⁷⁰Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, Yourselves say that I am. ⁷¹Then they said, What further need have we of witness? for we have heard it from his own mouth.

CHAP. XXIII.

AND the whole multitude of them rising up, led him to Pilate, ²and began to accuse him, saying, We have found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to pay tribute to Cæsar; pretending that he himself is the King Messiah. ³Then Pilate interrogated him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answering said to him, Thou sayest so. ⁴Then said Pilate unto the chief priests and the multitudes, I find nothing culpable in this man. ⁵But they were urgent, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching through all Judea, beginning from Galilee even to this place. ⁶When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean? ⁷And when he knew that he came out of Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who was himself at Jerusalem in those days.

⁸Now when Herod saw Jesus, he was vastly delighted: for he had been long desirous to see him, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to see some miracle wrought by him. ⁹And he put a variety of questions to him; but he made him no reply. ¹⁰And the chief priests and the scribes stood up vehemently accusing him. ¹¹Then Herod with his guards treated him with contempt, and in derision clothed him in a splendid robe, and sent him back to Pilate. ¹²And Pilate and Herod the same day became friends together: for they had previously been at enmity with each other.

¹³Then Pilate, convoking the chief priests and the rulers and the people, ¹⁴said unto them, Ye have brought this man to me, as one who perverteth the people: and lo! on examining him before you, I have found nothing culpable in this man, respecting the charges ye bring against him: ¹⁵nor Herod neither: for I referred you to him; and, lo, nothing is done to this man, as if he deserved death. ¹⁶I will therefore, after

scourging, discharge him. ¹⁷(Now he held it necessary to release one to them at the feast.) ¹⁸Then the whole multitude set up a cry, saying, Away with this fellow, and release unto us Barabbas! ¹⁹(who for a certain sedition raised in the city, and for murder, had been cast into prison.) ²⁰Again therefore Pilate called out to them, desirous to see Jesus at liberty. ²¹But they clamoured the more, saying, Crucify, crucify him. ²²Then the third time he said to them, What evil hath this man done? I have found nothing deserving death in him: I will therefore, after scourging, discharge him. ²³But they were instant with the most clamorous vociferations, soliciting that he might be crucified. And their clamours, and those of the chief priests, bore him down. ²⁴Then Pilate decreed that their petition should be granted.

²⁵Then released he to them him who for sedition and murder had been cast into prison; but he gave up Jesus to their will. ²⁶And as they led him out, laying hold on one Simon, a Cyrenian, who was coming from the country, they laid on him the cross, to carry after Jesus. ²⁷And a great multitude of the people and of women followed him, who also beat their breasts and lamented him bitterly. ²⁸But Jesus turning to them, said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but for yourselves, and for your children. ²⁹For, behold, the days are coming, in which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs which have not borne, and the breasts which never suckled. ³⁰Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us! and to the hills, Cover us! ³¹For if they do all these things with the green wood, what will be done with the dry?

³²Now there were two other persons, malefactors, led out with him to be executed. ³³And when they came to a place called Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactors, the one on the right hand, and the other on the left. ³⁴And Jesus said, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. Then dividing his garments, they cast the lot.

³⁵And the people stood looking on. And the rulers also with them derided him, saying, He saved others; let him save himself, if this fellow is the Messiah, the elect of God. ³⁶And the soldiers also insulted him, coming and offering him vinegar, ³⁷and saying, if thou art the King of the Jews, save thyself. ³⁸And there was an inscription written over him in Greek, Roman, and Hebrew characters, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

³⁹Then one of the suspended malefactors blasphemed him, saying, If thou art the Messiah, save thyself and us. ⁴⁰But the other addressing him, rebuked him, saying, Hast thou no fear of God, when thou art under the same condemnation? ⁴¹And we indeed justly, for we receive deserved punishment for the crimes we have committed: but this man hath done nothing amiss. ⁴²And he said to Jesus, Remember me, Lord, when thou comest in thy kingdom. ⁴³And Jesus said to him. Verily I say unto thee, To-day thou shalt be with me in paradise.

⁴⁴And it was about the sixth hour, and there was darkness over all the land until the ninth hour. ⁴⁵And the sun was darkened, and the veil of the temple was rent in the midst. ⁴⁶And Jesus crying with a loud voice, said, Father, into thy hands I commit my spirit: and having said this, he expired. ⁴⁷And the centurion observing what had come to pass, glorified God, saying, Verily this man was a righteous person.

⁴⁸And all the multitudes who had come together for this spectacle, when they saw the things which were done, beating their breasts, returned. ⁴⁹And all his acquaintance stood afar off, and the women which followed him from Galilee, beholding these things.

⁵⁰And lo! a man named Joseph, being a member of the council, a good man, and a just; ⁵¹(who had not given his assent to their determination and deed;) being of Arimathea, a city of the Jews: who himself also expected the coming of the kingdom of God. ⁵²He went in to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. ⁵³And taking it down from the cross, he wrapped it in linen cloth, and laid it in a sepulchre hewn out of a rock, where none had ever yet lain. ⁵⁴And that was the preparation-day, and the sabbath's twilight²² was approaching.

⁵⁵Then the women also, his attendants, who had followed him out of Galilee, observed the sepulchre, and how his corpse was laid out. ⁵⁶And returning, they made preparation of aromatics and unguents; and they rested the sabbath-day, according to the commandment.

NOW on the first day of the week, at the earliest dawn of day, they came to the sepulchre, bringing the aromatics which they had prepared, and certain others with them. ²And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre. ³And on entering, found not the body of the Lord Jesus. ⁴And it came to pass, as they were in the greatest perplexity concerning this matter, then behold, two men stood by them in resplendent garments: ⁵and when they were exceedingly terrified, and inclined their face to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living among the dead? ⁶he is not here; he is risen: remember how he spoke to you, while he was yet in Galilee, ⁷saying, That the Son of man must be delivered up into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again. ⁸And they remembered his declarations, ⁹and returning from the sepulchre, told all these things to the eleven, and to the rest. ¹⁰Now there were Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James, and the other women who were with them, that told these things to the apostles. ¹¹And their declarations seemed in their view as a mere fancy, and they gave them no credence. ¹²Then Peter rising up, ran off to the sepulchre, and leaning forward saw the linen clothes laid separately, and went away wondering in himself what was become of him.

¹³And behold, two of them were going the same day to a village, distant about sixty furlongs from Jerusalem, called Emmaus. ¹⁴And they were conversing with each other, concerning all those things which had happened. ¹⁵And it came to pass, as they were conversing together, and talking the matter over, even Jesus himself drew near, and walked on with them. ¹⁶But their eyes were under a restraint, that they might not discover him. ¹⁷And he said unto them, What are these discourses that ye interchange among you, as ye are walking, and bear such a face of dejection? ¹⁸Then one of them, named Cleopas, answering said, Art thou the only sojourner at Jerusalem, who hath not known the singular events of those days? ¹⁹And he said to them, Of what sort? and they said to him, Those which relate to Jesus the Nazarean, who was a man, a prophet, mighty in word and deed before God and all the people: ²⁰and how our chief priests and rulers delivered him up to a sentence of death, and crucified him. ²¹But we had entertained hopes that this was the person who should have redeemed Israel: and ah! besides all these things, to-day concludes that third day since these things were done. ²²And indeed, certain women belonging to us exceedingly amazed us who were very early at the sepulchre; ²³and not finding his body, came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, who told them that he was alive. ²⁴And some of those who were with us went to the sepulchre, and found every thing just as the women had said: but him they did not see. ²⁵And he said unto them, O ye void of understanding, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken! ²⁶Ought not the Messiah to suffer these things, and to enter into his glory? ²⁷And beginning from Moses and all the prophets, he explained to them in all the scriptures, the things relating to himself. ²⁸And they drew nigh to the village, whither they were going: and he was proceeding on, as if going farther. ²⁹And they warmly pressed him, saying, Stay with us: for the evening draws on, and the day declines. And he went in to stay with them. ³⁰And it came to pass, when he was sitting down at table with them, taking up a loaf, he blessed it, and breaking, distributed it to them. ³¹Then their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he became invisible to them. ³²And they said to each other, Did not our hearts burn within us, as he talked with us on the road, and as he distinctly opened to us the scriptures? ³³And rising up the same hour, they returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven and those who were with them crowded together, ³⁴saying, The Lord is risen assuredly, and hath appeared to Simon. ³⁵Then these recounted what had passed on the road, and how he was known to them by the breaking of the bread.

³⁶While they were relating these things, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you! ³⁷But terrified and affrighted, they thought they saw a spirit. ³⁸And he said to them, Why are ye under such agitation of mind? and why do reasonings arise in your hearts? ³⁹look upon my hands and my feet, that it is my very self: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have. ⁴⁰And thus speaking, he exposed to them his hands and his feet. ⁴¹But when they still could not credit it for joy, and marvelled, he said unto them, Have ye here any thing eatable? ⁴²Then they gave him a part

of a broiled fish, and a piece of honey-comb. ⁴³And receiving it, he did eat in their presence. ⁴⁴And said unto them, These are the sayings which I spake unto you, when I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which are written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the Psalms, concerning me. ⁴⁵Then opened he thoroughly their understanding, that they should understand the scriptures, ⁴⁶and said to them, That thus it is written, and thus must the Messiah suffer, and rise again from the dead the third day ⁴⁷and that repentance and remission of sin should be preached in his name unto all nations, beginning from Jerusalem. ⁴⁸And ye are the witnesses of these things. ⁴⁹And, behold, I send unto you the promise of my Father: but sit ye down in the city of Jerusalem, until ye shall be endued with power from on high. ⁵⁰And he led them without *the city* as far as Bethany, and lifting up his hands he blessed them. ⁵¹And it came to pass, as he pronounced the benediction upon them, he was parted from them, and taken up into heaven. ⁵²And they, after paying him their adorations, returned to Jerusalem with vast joy: ⁵³and were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.

THE GOSPEL

ACCORDING TO

J O H N.

CHAP. I.

IN the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. ²He was in the beginning with God. ³All things were made by him; and without him was not one thing made that was made. ⁴In him was life; and the life was the light of men. ⁵And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness did not comprehend it.

⁶A man was sent from God, whose name was John. ⁷He came for a witness, that he might bear testimony concerning the Light, that all men through him might believe. ⁸He was not the Light, but sent that he should bear testimony concerning the Light. ⁹He was that true Light, which illumines every man by his coming into the world. ¹⁰He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. ¹¹He came unto his peculiar people, and his peculiar people did not receive him. ¹²But as many as did receive him, on them he bestowed authority to become children of God, even on those who believe on his name: ¹³who were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. ¹⁴And the Word became incarnate, and tabernacled with us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

¹⁵John bore witness concerning him, and cried, saying, This is he of whom I said, He that is coming after me, is before me: because before me he was. ¹⁶And from his plenitude we all have received, even grace corresponding with *his* grace. ¹⁷For the law was given by Moses, but the grace and the reality came by Jesus Christ. ¹⁸No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, who is in the bosom of the Father, he hath thoroughly described him.

¹⁹And this is the testimony of John, when the Jews sent from Jerusalem priests and Levites, that they should question him, Who art thou? ²⁰And he confessed, and denied it not; but acknowledged, I am not the Messiah. ²¹And they asked him, What then? art thou Elias? and he said, I am not. Art thou that prophet? and he answered, No. ²²Then said they to him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to those who sent us: What description givest thou of thyself? ²³He said, I am a voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way for the Lord, as said the prophet Isaiah. ²⁴And they who were sent, were of the Pharisees. ²⁵And they questioned him, and said to him, Why then dost thou baptise, if thou be not the Messiah, nor Elias, nor that prophet? ²⁶John answered them, saying, I baptise with water: but in the midst of

you hath stood a person, whom ye have not known; ²⁷it is he, though coming after me, who was before me, the thong of whose sandal I am not worthy to untie. ²⁸These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John was baptising.

²⁹The next day John seeth Jesus coming to him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sin of the world, ³⁰This is he of whom I spake, After me cometh a man who was before me: for before me he existed. ³¹And I knew him not: though that he might be manifested to Israel, therefore am I come baptising with water. ³²And John bore witness, saying, I saw the Spirit descending as a dove from heaven, and it rested upon him. ³³And I did not know him: but he that sent me baptising with water, he said to me, Upon whomsoever thou shalt see the Spirit descending as a dove, and resting upon him, that is he who baptiseth with the Holy Ghost. ³⁴And I have seen it, and have borne testimony that this is the Son of God.

³⁵On the morrow John was again standing with two of his disciples; ³⁶and looking upon Jesus as he walked by, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God! ³⁷And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus. ³⁸Then Jesus turned about, and seeing them following, saith to them, What are ye seeking? They said unto him, Rabbi (which signifies, when translated, Master), where is thy abode? ³⁹He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he abode, and continued with him that day: and it was about the tenth hour.

⁴⁰One of the two, who had heard from John mention of Jesus, and had followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother. ⁴¹He first finds his own brother Simon, and saith to him, We have found the Messiah (which is, being translated, the Christ). ⁴²And he brought him to Jesus. Then Jesus looking on him, said, Thou art Simon the son of Jonas: thou shalt be called Cephas, which, interpreted *in Greek*, is Petros, a Rock.

⁴³The next day Jesus resolved to go into Galilee, and he findeth Philip, and saith to him, Follow me. ⁴⁴Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter. ⁴⁵Philip findeth Nathaniel, and saith to him, We have found him whom Moses in the law has described, and the prophets, Jesus the son of Joseph, who is of Nazareth. ⁴⁶And Nathaniel said to him, Can any thing good come out of Nazareth? Philip saith to him, Come and see. ⁴⁷Jesus saw Nathaniel coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite in reality, in whom there is no guile! ⁴⁸Nathaniel saith unto him, From whence canst thou know me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig-tree, I saw thee. ⁴⁹Nathaniel answered and said to him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the king of Israel. ⁵⁰Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said to thee, I saw thee under the fig-tree, dost thou believe? thou shalt see greater things than these. ⁵¹And he saith to him, Verily, verily, I tell you, From henceforth ye shall see heaven opened, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

CHAP. II.

AND on the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there: ²So Jesus also, and his disciples, were invited to the marriage. ³And the wine being exhausted, the mother of Jesus saith to him, They have no more wine. ⁴Jesus saith unto her, What is that to me and thee, woman? my hour is not yet come. ⁵His mother saith to the waiters, Whatsoever he orders you, do it. ⁶Now there stood there six large stone jars, for the customary purifying ablution of the Jews, containing two or three baths each. ⁷Jesus saith to them, Fill these jars with water. And they filled them to the brim. ⁸And he said unto them, Draw out now, and carry to the president of the table. So they carried it. ⁹And when the president of the table had tasted the water become wine, and knew not whence it came: (but the waiters knew, who drew the water;) the president of the table called the bridegroom, ¹⁰and saith to him, Every man at first produces the good wine; and after men have drunk plentifully, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept back the good wine until now. ¹¹This beginning of miracles Jesus wrought in Cana of Galilee, and displayed his glory; and his disciples believed on him.

¹²After this he went down to Capernaum, he and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples: and he continued there not many days. ¹³And the passover of the Jews was nigh, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

¹⁴And he found in the temple those who sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the moneychangers seated: ¹⁵and having made a whip of cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen; and scattered the money of the exchangers, and overturned the tables; ¹⁶and said to those who sold doves, Take these hence; make not my Father's house a house of merchandise. ¹⁷Then the disciples remembered that it was written, "The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up." ¹⁸The Jews then addressed him, and said to him, What miracle shewest thou, seeing thou actest thus? ¹⁹Jesus answered and said to them, Pull down this temple, and in three days I will rear it up again. ²⁰Then said the Jews, This temple has been forty-six years in building, and canst thou rear it up in three days? ²¹Now he had spoken with reference to the temple of his own body. ²²When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had spoken thus unto them; and they believed the scriptures, and the word which Jesus had spoken.

²³Now while he was at Jerusalem at the passover, during the feast, many believed on his name, when they beheld the miracles which he did. ²⁴But Jesus himself did not trust himself to them, because he knew them all, ²⁵and because he had no need that any man should testify respecting man; for he knew what was in man.

CHAP. III.

NOW there was a man of the Pharisees, whose name was Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: ²this man came to Jesus in the night, and said to him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles which thou dost, unless God be with him. ³Jesus answered and said to him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. ⁴Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter a second time into his mother's womb, and be born? ⁵Jesus replied, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. ⁶That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. ⁷Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. ⁸The wind bloweth where it will, and thou hearest the sound of it, but knowest not from whence it cometh, nor whither it goeth: just so is every one who is born of the Spirit. ⁹Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be? ¹⁰Jesus answered and said to him, Art thou a teacher of Israel, and knowest not these things? ¹¹Verily, verity, I tell thee, That what we know we speak, and what we have seen we affirm; and ye receive not our testimony. ¹²If I have told you of earthly things, and ye believe not, how will you believe, if I tell you of heavenly things? ¹³Though no man hath ascended into heaven, except he that descended from heaven, that Son of man the I AM in heaven. ¹⁴And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, in like manner must the Son of man be lifted up: ¹⁵that every one who believeth on him may not perish, but have life eternal. ¹⁶For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that every one who believeth in him should not perish, but have life eternal. ¹⁷For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world by him might be saved. ¹⁸He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is already under condemnation, because he hath not believed on the name of the only begotten Son of God. ¹⁹Now this is the condemnation, that the light is come into the world, and men loved the darkness rather than the light, because their deeds were evil. ²⁰For every one whose practices are foul hateth the light, and cometh not to the light, that his actions may not be brought to conviction. ²¹But he who practices the truth, cometh to the light, that his actions may be evident, as being done for God.

²²After these things Jesus and his disciples went into the land of Judea; and there he abode with them, and baptised. ²³Now John also was baptising at Enon, near to Salem, for there were many streams of water there: and they came, and were baptised. ²⁴For as yet John was not cast into prison.

²⁵Then a dispute arose between the disciples of John and the Jews with regard to purification. ²⁶And they came to John, and said to him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou gavest testimony, lo! this man baptiseth, and all men come to him. ²⁷John answered and said, A man cannot assume any thing, except it be given

him from heaven. ²⁸Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Messiah, but that I am sent before him. ²⁹It is the bridegroom, who possesses the bride: and the friend of the bridegroom, standing by and hearing him, rejoiceth exceedingly at the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled. ³⁰He must grow great, but I diminutive. ³¹He that cometh from above is above all: he whose origin is from earth is of the earth, and speaketh of the earth: he who cometh from heaven is above all. ³²And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth; though no man receiveth his testimony. ³³He that receiveth his testimony hath avouched that God is true. ³⁴For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God hath not given the Spirit by measure unto him. ³⁵The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand. ³⁶He that believeth on the Son hath life eternal: and he that believeth not on the Son shall not see life: but the wrath of God abideth upon him.

CHAP. IV.

AS soon then as the Lord knew that the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptised more disciples than John ²(though Jesus himself did not baptise, but his disciples), ³he left Judea, and went again into Galilee. ⁴Now he must necessarily pass through Samaria. ⁵Then he cometh to a city of Samaria, called Sichar, near the spot of ground which Jacob gave to his son Joseph. ⁶And Jacob's well was there. Therefore Jesus, weary with his journey, e'en sat himself down on the well: it was about the sixth hour. ⁷A woman of Samaria comes to draw water: Jesus saith to her, Give me to drink. ⁸(For his disciples were gone into the city to buy provisions.) ⁹The Samaritan woman therefore saith to him, How canst thou, a Jew, ask of me, who am a Samaritan woman, to drink? for Jews avoid all intercourse with Samaritans. ¹⁰Jesus answered and said to her, If thou hadst known the gift of God, and who he is that speaketh to thee, thou wouldest have requested him, and he would have given thee life-giving water. ¹¹The woman saith unto him, Thou hast no bucket, and the well is deep: whence then canst thou have this water that giveth life? ¹²Art thou greater than our father Jacob, who gave us the well, and drank of it himself, and his children, and his cattle? ¹³Jesus answered and said unto her, Every one who drinketh of this water shall thirst again: ¹⁴but whosoever shall drink of the water which I shall give him, he shall no more thirst to eternity; but the water which I will give him, shall be in him a fountain of water springing up to life eternal. ¹⁵The woman saith to him, Sir, give me this water, that I may no more thirst, nor come hither to draw. ¹⁶Jesus saith to her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither. ¹⁷The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus saith to her, Thou hast spoken right, that thou hast no husband: ¹⁸for thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in this thou hast spoken true. ¹⁹The woman saith to him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet. ²⁰Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye affirm, That the place where we ought to worship is at Jerusalem. ²¹Jesus saith to her, Woman, believe me, that the hour approaches, when ye shall worship the Father neither in this mountain, nor at Jerusalem. ²²Ye worship ye know not what: we worship what we do know: for salvation cometh from the Jews. ²³But the hour is coming, yea, is now come, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such worshippers of him. ²⁴God is a Spirit: and they who worship him, must worship him in spirit and in truth. ²⁵The woman saith, I know that Messiah is coming (who is called Christ): when he cometh, he will inform us of all things. ²⁶Jesus saith unto her, I that am speaking to thee am he.

²⁷And upon this came his disciples, and wondered that he talked with the woman: yet no one said, What art thou seeking? or, Why art thou talking with her?

²⁸Then the woman left her pitcher, and went into the city, and said to the men, ²⁹Come with me; behold a man, who told me all things that I ever did: is not this the Messiah? ³⁰Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

³¹In the mean time his disciples invited him, saying, Rabbi, eat. ³²But he said to them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of. ³³Then said his disciples to each other, Hath any person brought him ought to eat? ³⁴Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me,

and to finish his work. ³⁵Do ye not say, That yet there are four months, and then the harvest cometh? behold, I tell you, lift up your eyes, and look upon the fields; for they are now white for harvest. ³⁶And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal: that both he that soweth and he that reapeth may rejoice together. ³⁷For herein is the saying true, That one soweth and another reapeth. ³⁸I have sent you to reap that on which ye have bestowed no labour: others have laboured, and ye have entered into their labour.

³⁹Now many of the Samaritans of that city believed on him, on the report of the woman, who said, That he told me all things I ever had done. ⁴⁰So on this the Samaritans came to him, and besought him to abide with them: and he tarried there two days. ⁴¹And many more believed because of his own word; ⁴²and said to the woman, Now we believe, not merely on account of thy relation: for we ourselves have heard, and know that this is of a certainty the Saviour of the world, the Messiah.

⁴³Then after two days he departed thence, and went into Galilee. ⁴⁴For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own country. ⁴⁵When therefore he was come into Galilee, the Galileans welcomed him, having seen all the things which he did at the feast: for they also had gone to the feast. ⁴⁶Then came Jesus again to Cana of Galilee, where he had made the water wine. And there was a certain attendant on the king, whose son was sick at Capernaum. ⁴⁷This person having heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, went to him, that he might come down, and cure his son: for he was at the point of death. ⁴⁸Then said Jesus unto him, Unless ye see miracles and wonders, ye will not believe. ⁴⁹The courtier said to him, Sir, come down before my child is dead. ⁵⁰Jesus saith to him, Go home; thy son liveth. And the man believed the word which Jesus had spoken, and went home. ⁵¹And as he was now going down home, his servants met him, and told him, saying, Thy son is recovered! ⁵²Then inquired he of them the hour at which he began to amend? and they told him, It was yesterday, at the seventh hour, when the fever left him. ⁵³Then the father knew that it was the very hour when Jesus said, Thy son liveth: and himself believed, and his whole family. ⁵⁴This is again a second miracle which Jesus did, when he came from Judea into Galilee.

CHAP. V.

AFTER these things there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. ²Now there is at Jerusalem near the sheep-market a pool, called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porticos. ³In these lay a vast multitude of infirm persons, blind, lame, withered, waiting the motion of the water. ⁴For occasionally an angel descended into the pool, and put the water into commotion: he therefore who first stepped in after the commotion of the water became well, under whatever complaint he had laboured. ⁵And there was a certain man there, who had a complaint of thirty years standing. ⁶Jesus seeing him laid there, and knowing that he had been so for a long while, saith to him, Wilt thou be made sound? ⁷The infirm man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is disturbed, to cast me into the pool: but when I am coming, another goeth down before me. ⁸Jesus saith to him, Arise, take up thy bed, and walk. ⁹And instantly the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked away: and that day was the sabbath. ¹⁰The Jews therefore said to him that was cured, It is the sabbath: it is not lawful for thee to carry thy bed. ¹¹He answered them, He that made me whole, the same person said to me, Take up thy bed, and walk. ¹²Then they asked him, Who is the man that said to thee, Take up thy bed, and walk? ¹³Now he that was cured knew not who he was: for Jesus had slipped away, a crowd being on the spot.

¹⁴After these things Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Take care; thou art made whole: sin no more, lest something worse befall thee. ¹⁵The man went, and informed the Jews, that it was Jesus who had made him whole. ¹⁶And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to kill him, because he had done these things on the sabbath-day.

¹⁷Then Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work. ¹⁸Therefore sought they the more to kill him, because he had not only broken the sabbath, but called God his own Father, setting himself on an

equality with God. ¹⁹Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing by himself, except what he hath seen the Father do: for whatsoever things he doeth, the same and in the same manner doth the Son. ²⁰For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things which he himself doeth: and greater works than these will he shew him, that ye may wonder. ²¹For as the Father raiseth the dead, and quickeneth them; so also doth the Son quicken whom he pleases. ²²For the Father never judgeth any man, but hath committed all judgment to the Son: ²³in order that all may honour the Son, just as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, doth not honour the Father who sent him. ²⁴Verily, verily, I say unto you, That he that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into judgment; but is passed from death into life. ²⁵Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, yea, it is now, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. ²⁶For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son also to have life in himself; ²⁷and hath given him authority also to execute judgment, because he is the Son of man. ²⁸Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in which all who are in the graves shall hear his voice, ²⁹and they shall come forth; they who have done good actions to the resurrection of life; and they who have been guilty of foul practices, to the resurrection of damnation. ³⁰I am not able to perform any thing by myself: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; for I seek not my own will, but the will of my Father who sent me. ³¹If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true. ³²There is another who beareth witness of me, and I know that his witness is true which he witnesseth concerning me. ³³Ye sent to John, and he bore testimony to the truth. ³⁴But I receive not testimony from man: but I speak these things, that ye may believe. ³⁵He was a lamp glowing and luminous: and ye were pleased for a time to exult in his light. ³⁶But I have a testimony greater than that of John: for the works which the Father hath given me that I should fulfil them, these very works which I am doing, they bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. ³⁷And the Father who sent me, himself hath borne witness concerning me. Ye have neither at any time heard his voice, nor seen his form. ³⁸And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not. ³⁹Search the scriptures; for ye suppose in them ye have eternal life: and these are they which testify of me. ⁴⁰And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. ⁴¹I receive not glory from men. ⁴²But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you. ⁴³I have come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another come in his own name, him ye will receive. ⁴⁴How can ye believe, who receiving honour one from another, seek not the honour which cometh from God alone? ⁴⁵Do not suppose that I shall accuse you to my Father: there is one who is accusing you, even Moses, on whom ye place your hope. ⁴⁶For if ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for of me did he write. ⁴⁷But if ye believe not his writings, how will ye believe my words?

CHAP. VI.

AFTER these things Jesus went beyond the sea of Galilee, that is of Tiberias. ²And a vast multitude followed him, because they saw the miracles which he performed on those who were diseased. ³Then Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat down with his disciple. ⁴And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh. ⁵Then Jesus lifting up his eyes, and seeing that a vast concourse of people was come to him, said to Philip, Whence shall we buy loaves, that these may eat? ⁶And this he said to try him: for himself knew what he would do. ⁷Philip answered him, Two hundred denarii spent in bread would not procure a sufficiency for them, that every one of them might have a morsel. ⁸One of his disciples saith to him, (Andrew, Simon Peter's brother,) ⁹There is a little lad here, who hath five barley-loaves, and two small fishes: but these, what are they among so many? ¹⁰Then said Jesus, Make the men sit down. For there was plenty of grass on the spot. Therefore the men sat down, in number about five thousand. ¹¹And Jesus took the loaves; and giving thanks, gave to the disciples, and the disciples to those who were sat down; and in the same manner of the fishes, as much as they chose. ¹²And when they had made a hearty meal, he saith to his disciples, Gather up the broken bits which are left, that not a morsel be wasted.

¹³Then they collected them, and filled twelve baskets with fragments out of the five barley-loaves, which were more than enough for those who had eaten. ¹⁴When therefore the men saw the miracle which Jesus had done, they said, This is of a certainty that prophet which is to come into the world. ¹⁵Then Jesus, knowing their intention to come and to seize him by force, in order to make him king, retired again into the mountain by himself alone.

¹⁶So when evening was now come, his disciples went down to the seaside, ¹⁷and embarking on a vessel were coming across the sea to Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them. ¹⁸And the sea was greatly agitated by a tempestuous wind that blew. ¹⁹Having rowed therefore about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, they saw Jesus walking on the sea, and coming near the vessel, and they were affrighted. ²⁰But he saith to them, It is I; be not afraid. ²¹Then they desired to take him into the vessel: and instantly the vessel was at the land whither they were going.

²²The next day the multitude who stayed on the other side of the sea, when they saw that there was no little vessel there, except the one into which his disciples went, and that Jesus went not with his disciples in the vessel, but that his disciples went away alone; ²³(but now little vessels had come from Tiberias near to the spot where they had eaten bread, after the Lord had given thanks:) ²⁴then when the multitude saw that Jesus was not there, nor his disciples, they also went into the vessels, and came to Capernaum, in search of Jesus. ²⁵And when they found him on the other side the sea, they said to him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither? ²⁶Jesus replied to them and said, Ye seek me, not because ye have seen the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled. ²⁷Labour not for the meat which is perishable, but for that meat which endureth unto life eternal, which the Son of man will give you: for him hath the Father sealed, even God. ²⁸Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we may work the works of God? ²⁹Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye should believe on him whom he hath sent. ³⁰Then said they to him, What miracle therefore dost thou, that we may see and believe thee? what dost thou work? ³¹Our fathers did eat manna in the wilderness; as it is written, "He gave them bread from heaven to eat." ³²Then said Jesus unto them, Verily, verily, I tell you, It was not Moses who gave you the bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the real bread from heaven. ³³For he that cometh down from heaven, and giveth life to the world, is the bread of God. ³⁴Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. ³⁵Then said Jesus to them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst more. ³⁶But I have told you, That though ye have seen me, yet ye have not believed. ³⁷Every individual which the Father giveth me will come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in nowise cast out. ³⁸For I came down from heaven, not with a view to do my own will, but the will of him that sent me. ³⁹Now this is the will of the Father who sent me, That every thing which he hath given me I should not be deprived of it, but raise it up at the last day. ⁴⁰And this is the will of him that sent me, That every one who seeth the Son, and believeth on him, should have life eternal: and I will raise him up at the last day.

⁴¹Then the Jews murmured against him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven. ⁴²And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how then saith this man, That I came down from heaven? ⁴³Jesus answered and said to them, Murmur not among yourselves. ⁴⁴No man can come to me, except the Father who hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. ⁴⁵It is written in the prophets, And "they shall all be taught of God." Every one therefore who heareth from the Father, and learneth, cometh to me. ⁴⁶Not that any man hath seen the Father, except he that is with God, he hath seen the Father. ⁴⁷Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life. ⁴⁸I am the bread of life. ⁴⁹Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and they are dead. ⁵⁰This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that any person may eat of it, and never die. ⁵¹I am the bread that giveth life, which came down from heaven: if any person eat of this bread, he shall live to eternity; and the bread indeed which I shall give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

⁵²Then the Jews contended with each other, saying, How can this man

give us his flesh to eat? ⁵³Jesus therefore said to them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in yourselves. ⁵⁴He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath life eternal: and I will raise him up at the last day. ⁵⁵For my flesh truly is meat, and my blood truly is drink. ⁵⁶He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, abideth in me, and I in him. ⁵⁷As the life-giving Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father; so he that eateth me, the same shall live by me. ⁵⁸This is the bread which came down from heaven, not as the manna your fathers did eat, and died: he that eateth this bread shall live to eternity.

⁵⁹These things he spake in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum. ⁶⁰Many therefore of his disciples, who heard him, said, Difficult is this discourse, who is able to fathom it? ⁶¹Then Jesus, conscious in himself that his disciples murmured concerning this discourse, said unto them, Doth this stumble you? ⁶²What then if ye see the Son of man ascending where he was formerly? ⁶³The Spirit is the life-giving power; the flesh contributeth nothing: the declarations which I make to you, they are spirit, and they are life. ⁶⁴But there are some of you who do not believe. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were who did not believe, and who the person was that should betray him. ⁶⁵And he said, Therefore have I informed you, That no man can come to me, except it be given him of my Father.

⁶⁶From that *discourse* many of his disciples went away back, and no more followed him about. ⁶⁷Then said Jesus to the twelve, Will ye also go away? ⁶⁸Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, unto whom shall we go from thee? thou hast the words of eternal life. ⁶⁹And we have believed and known that thou art the Messiah, the Son of the living God. ⁷⁰Jesus answered them, Have I not chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil? ⁷¹Now he spake of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon: for this man was ready to betray him, though he was one of the twelve.

CHAP. VII.

AND Jesus after these things travelled about in Galilee: for he would not go about in Judea, because the Jews sought to kill him. ²And a feast of the Jews was nigh, the feast of tabernacles. ³Then said his disciples to him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may see thy works which thou doest. ⁴For no man doeth any thing in secret, yet seeketh himself to appear publicly: if thou doest these things, exhibit thyself to the world. ⁵For even his own brethren did not believe on him. ⁶Jesus therefore saith to them, My proper time is not yet come: but your time is always ready. ⁷The world cannot hate you, but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that its deeds are evil. ⁸Go ye up to this feast: for I am not yet going up to this feast, because my fixed time is not yet arrived. ⁹Thus speaking to them then, he continued in Galilee. ¹⁰But as soon as his disciples were gone up, then went he also himself up to the feast: not in public, but as in concealment.

¹¹The Jews then sought for him at the feast, and said, Where is he? ¹²And there was a great murmur concerning him among the multitude: some said, Surely he is a good man: others said, No; he only deceiveth the people. ¹³Yet no person spake openly of him for fear of the Jews.

¹⁴But now at the middle of the feast Jesus went up into the temple, and taught. ¹⁵And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man the scriptures, not being a scholar? ¹⁶Jesus answered them and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me. ¹⁷If any man will do his will, he shall know respecting the doctrine, whether it is of God, or whether I speak from myself. ¹⁸He that speaketh from himself, seeks his own individual honour: but he that seeketh the glory of him that sent him, he is true, and iniquity in him there is none. ¹⁹Hath not Moses given you the law, yet none of you practises the law? Why do ye seek to kill me? ²⁰The multitude answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who is seeking to kill thee? ²¹Jesus answered and said unto them, I have performed one work, and ye all marvel. ²²Because Moses ordered you circumcision; (not that it comes from Moses, but from our ancestors;) so ye circumcise a man on the sabbath-day. ²³If a man receive circumcision on the sabbath-day, that the law of Moses should not be violated; are ye incensed against me, because I have made a man whole on the sabbath-day? ²⁴Judge not by appearance, but judge righteous judgment. ²⁵Then said some of the

people of Jerusalem, is not this the man whom they are seeking to kill?
²⁶And, lo! he speaketh openly, and they say not a word to him. Do the rulers certainly know that this man is really the Messiah? ²⁷But we know this man whence he is: but when the Messiah cometh, no man knoweth whence he is. ²⁸Then spake Jesus aloud as he was teaching in the temple, and said, Ye both know me, and ye know from whence I am: and I came not of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not. ²⁹But I know him: for I am from him, and he hath sent me.

³⁰Then they sought to apprehend him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come. ³¹But many of the multitude believed on him, and said, When the Messiah cometh, will he do greater miracles than those which this man doth? ³²The Pharisees heard the people muttering these things respecting him; and the Pharisees and chief priests sent officers to apprehend him. ³³Then said Jesus unto them, A little while longer I am with you, and I am going to him that sent me. ³⁴Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, ye cannot come. ³⁵Then said the Jews among themselves, Whither will this man go, that we shall not find him? will he go to the dispersed among the Grecians, and teach the Greeks? ³⁶What is this saying which he hath spoken, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, ye cannot come?

³⁷Now on the last day, the great day of the feast, Jesus stood up and spake aloud, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me and drink. ³⁸He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, from his belly shall rivers flow of living water. ³⁹(Now he spake this in reference to the Spirit, which they who believe on him should afterwards receive: for as yet the Holy Ghost was not given; because Jesus was not yet glorified.) ⁴⁰Many then of the multitude, when they heard this declaration, said, This man is certainly a prophet. ⁴¹Others said, He is the Messiah. But others said, No: for cometh the Messiah out of Galilee? ⁴²Doth not the scripture say, That the Messiah cometh of the seed of David, and from the town of Bethlehem, whence David originally was? ⁴³There was a division therefore among the multitude on account of him. ⁴⁴Now some of them were desirous to apprehend him; but no one laid hands upon him. ⁴⁵Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisee; and they said to them, Why have ye not brought him? ⁴⁶The officers answered, Never did man before speak in such a manner as this man. ⁴⁷The Pharisees then replied to them, Are ye also deluded? ⁴⁸Hath any one of the rulers or of the Pharisees believed on him? ⁴⁹But this rabble, which knoweth not the law, is accursed. ⁵⁰Nicodemus saith unto them, (the same person who came to him by night, being one of their body,) ⁵¹Doth our law condemn a man, without first hearing his defence, and knowing what he hath done? ⁵²They answered and said to him, Art thou not from Galilee too? Search and see: for a prophet, out of Galilee, never was raised up. ⁵³So each went to his own home.

CHAP. VIII.

THEN Jesus went to the mount of Olives. ²But early in the morning he came again to the temple, and all the people came to him; and sitting down he taught them. ³Then the scribes and Pharisees brought to him a woman caught in adultery; and placing her in the midst, ⁴they say unto him, Master, this woman was caught in adultery, in the very act. ⁵Now Moses in the law commanded, that such women should be stoned: therefore what sayest thou? ⁶But this they said, trying to entrap him, that they might have ground of accusation against him. But Jesus stooping down, with his finger wrote on the ground. ⁷Now when they continued questioning him, raising himself up, he said to them, Let the person who is sinless among you, first cast a stone at her. ⁸And again stooping down, he wrote on the ground. ⁹But when they heard him, and felt the conviction of their conscience, they slunk away one by one, beginning from the elders to the last: so Jesus was left alone, with the woman standing in the midst. ¹⁰Then Jesus raising himself up, and seeing no person but the woman, said unto her, Woman, where are these thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee? ¹¹She said, No man, Lord. Then said Jesus unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.

¹²Then spake Jesus again to them, saying, I am the light of the world:

he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life. ¹³The Pharisees said to him, Thou bearest witness of thyself; thy witness is not true. ¹⁴Jesus answered and said to them, Though I do bear witness of myself, my witness is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I am going; but ye know not whence I come, nor whither I am going. ¹⁵Ye judge after the flesh; I judge no man. ¹⁶But though I should judge, my judgment is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father who sent me. ¹⁷Now even in your law it is written, that the testimony of two men is true. ¹⁸I am a witness for myself, and the Father who sent me beareth witness of me. ¹⁹Then said they to him, Where is thy father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye would have known my Father also. ²⁰These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no person apprehended him; for his hour was not yet come.

²¹Then spake Jesus again to them, I am going away, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sin: whither I am going ye cannot come. ²²The Jews said therefore, Will he kill himself? because he said, Whither I go, ye cannot come. ²³And he said to them, Ye are from those beneath; I am from those above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. ²⁴I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I AM, ye shall die in your sins. ²⁵They said, therefore to him, Who art thou? And Jesus said to them, Assuredly the same as I am telling you. ²⁶I have many things to speak and to decide concerning you: but he that sent me is true; and the things which I have heard from him I speak to the world. ²⁷They knew not that he spake to them of the Father.

²⁸Then said Jesus to them, When ye shall have lifted up on high the Son of man, then shall ye know that I AM, and of myself have I done nothing; but as the Father hath instructed me, so I speak. ²⁹And he that sent me is with me: the Father hath not left me alone; because I always do the things acceptable to him. ³⁰As he spake these words, many believed on him.

³¹Then said Jesus to those Jews who believed on him, If ye abide in my word, assuredly ye are my disciples; ³²and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. ³³They answered him, We are Abraham's seed, and never were in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, That we shall be made free? ³⁴Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, That every one who committeth sin is the slave of sin. ³⁵But the slave abideth not in the family for ever: but the son abideth for ever. ³⁶If the Son therefore make you free, ye will be truly free. ³⁷I know that ye are Abraham's seed; yet ye seek to kill me, because my word has no place in you. ³⁸I speak what I have seen with my Father: and ye do therefore what ye have seen with your father. ³⁹They answered and said unto him, Our Father is Abraham. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were the children of Abraham, ye would have done the works of Abraham. ⁴⁰But now ye seek to kill me, a man who hath told you the truth, which I have heard from God. Abraham did not so. ⁴¹Ye do the works of your father. They said unto him, We are not born of whoredom; we have one Father, even God. ⁴²Then said Jesus unto them, If God was your Father, ye would have loved me: for I came out from God, and I am coming; neither indeed came I of myself, but he hath sent me. ⁴³Wherefore do ye not understand my speech? because ye cannot hear my word. ⁴⁴Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will practise. He was a murderer from the beginning, and stood not fast in the truth, because truth was not in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh what is peculiarly his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. ⁴⁵But because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not. ⁴⁶Which of you can convict me of sin? Now if I speak the truth, why do ye not believe me? ⁴⁷He that is of God heareth the words of God: ye therefore do not hear him, because ye are not of God.

⁴⁸Then answered the Jews, and said to him, Do we not rightly affirm, that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil? ⁴⁹Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honour my Father, and ye dishonour me. ⁵⁰But I seek not my own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth. ⁵¹Verily, verily, I say unto you, If any man observe my saying, he shall never see death to all eternity. ⁵²Then said the Jews to him, Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, If any man observe my word, he shall never taste of death to eternity. ⁵³Art thou greater than our father Abraham, who is dead? and the prophets are

dead: whom makest thou thyself?

⁵⁴Jesus answered, If I assume glory to myself, my glory is nothing: it is the Father who glorifies me; of whom ye say, that he is your God: ⁵⁵yet have ye not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, that I know him not, I should be like you, a liar: but I know him, and observe his word. ⁵⁶Your father Abraham exulted for joy that he should see this day of mine: and saw it, and rejoiced. ⁵⁷Then said the Jews unto him, Thou hast not yet reached the age of fifty, and hast thou seen Abraham? ⁵⁸Jesus said unto them, Before Abraham had a being, I Am. ⁵⁹Then took they up stones to hurl at him: but Jesus was hid, and went out of the temple, passing through the midst of them, and so went away.

CHAP. IX.

AND as he passed along, he saw a man blind from his birth. ²And his disciples inquired of him, saying, Rabbi, who was in fault, this man or his parents, that he was born blind? ³Jesus answered, Neither hath this man been in fault, nor his parents; but it is in order to make manifest the works of God in him. ⁴I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night is coming, when no man can work. ⁵As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world. ⁶So speaking, he spat on the ground, and made mud with the spittle, and anointed with the mud the eyes of the blind man; ⁷and said to him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam, (which signifies, Sent.) Then he went and washed, and came seeing.

⁸The neighbours therefore, and they who saw him formerly, that he was blind, said, Is not this the man who was sitting and begging? ⁹Some said, That this is he: but others, That he is like him: he himself said, I am he. ¹⁰When said they to him, How were thine eyes opened? ¹¹he answered and said, A man called Jesus made mud, and anointed my eyes, and said to me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: then I went, and washing received sight. ¹²They said to him, Where is he? He replied, I know not.

¹³They brought him to the Pharisees, who had before been blind. ¹⁴(Now it was the sabbath-day when Jesus made the mud, and opened his eyes.) ¹⁵The Pharisees therefore questioned him again, How he had received sight? And he told them, He put mud upon my eyes, and I washed, and do see. ¹⁶Then said certain of the Pharisees, This man is not from God, because he observeth not the sabbath. Others said, How is it possible for a wicked man to do such miracles? And there was a division among them. ¹⁷They say to the blind man again, What sayest thou of him? that he opened thine eyes? Then he replied, That he is a prophet.

¹⁸Then the Jews did not believe that he had been blind, and received sight, until that they had called the parents of him who had received sight. ¹⁹And they questioned them, saying, Is this your son, of whom ye say, that he was born blind? how then doth he now see? ²⁰His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind: ²¹but how he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age; ask him: he himself will tell you about it. ²²So spake his parents, because they were afraid of the Jews: for the Jews had already come to a resolution, that if any person acknowledged him Messiah, he should be excluded the synagogue. ²³Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.

²⁴The second time therefore they called the man who had been blind, and said unto him, Give the glory to God: we know that this man is a sinner. ²⁵Then answered he and said, Whether this man be a sinner, I know not: one thing I do know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see. ²⁶Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? ²⁷He answered them, I have already told you, and ye did not hearken: why do ye wish to hear it again? will ye also become his disciples? ²⁸Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple, but we are the disciples of Moses. ²⁹We know that God spake to Moses: but we know nothing of this man, whence he is. ³⁰The man replied, and said to them, Now herein is something very surprising, that you know not whence he is, though he hath opened my eyes. ³¹Now we know that God doth not hearken to sinners: but if any man be a devout worshipper, and doeth his will, him he heareth. ³²From the creation of the world hath it never been heard, that any man opened the eyes of one born blind. ³³If this man were not from God, he could not do any thing. ³⁴They answered

and said unto him, Thou wast wholly born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out. ³⁵Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and finding him, said to him, Believest thou in the Son of God? ³⁶The man answered and said, Who is he, Sir, that I might believe on him? ³⁷Then said Jesus him, Thou hast even seen him, and he that is now talking with thee is the very person. ³⁸Then he said, Lord, I believe: and worshipped him.

³⁹And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they who see not may see; and they who see become blind. ⁴⁰And some of the Pharisees who were with him heard these things, and said to him, Are we blind also? ⁴¹Jesus said to them, If ye were blind, ye should not have had sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin is permanent.

CHAP. X.

VERILY, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheep-fold, but getteth in some other way, that person is a thief and a robber. ²He that entereth by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. ³To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own peculiar sheep by name, and leadeth them forth. ⁴And when he bringeth out his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: because they know his voice. ⁵And a stranger will they not follow, but will fly from him: for they know not the voice of strangers. ⁶This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they knew nothing of the things which he spake to them.

⁷Therefore Jesus said unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, that I am the door of the sheep. ⁸All, as many as have gone before me, are thieves and robbers: but the sheep hearkened not to them. ⁹I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved; and shall go in and out, and find pasture. ¹⁰The thief cometh not but to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly. ¹¹I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd layeth down his life for the sheep. ¹²But the hireling, and he that is not the shepherd, whose own property the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth; and the wolf seizes upon them, and disperseth the sheep. ¹³Now the hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep. ¹⁴I am the good shepherd, and know my own *sheep*, and am known of my own. ¹⁵As the Father knoweth me, so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep. ¹⁶And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: these also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, one shepherd. ¹⁷Therefore doth the Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I may take it again. ¹⁸No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment I have received from my Father.

¹⁹There was therefore a division again among the Jews, on account of these sayings. ²⁰Then many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad; why hearken to him? ²¹Others said, These are not the discourses of a demoniac. Can a devil open the eyes of the blind?

²²Then was the feast of dedication at Jerusalem, and it was winter. ²³And Jesus was walking in the temple, in Solomon's portico. ²⁴Then the Jews came about him, and said to him, How long dost thou keep our soul in suspense? If thou art the Messiah, tell us plainly. ²⁵Jesus answered them; I told you, and ye believed not: the works which I do in the name of my Father, they bear witness of me. ²⁶But ye believe not, for ye are not of my sheep, as I told you. ²⁷My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: ²⁸and I give unto them everlasting life and they shall never perish to eternity, and no person shall pluck them out of my hand. ²⁹My Father, who gave them to me, is greater than all and no one shall pluck them out of my Father's hand. ³⁰I and my Father are one.

³¹Then the Jews again brought stones, in order to stone him. ³²Jesus said unto them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; for which work of these are ye going to stone me? ³³The Jews answered him, For a good work we do not stone thee; but for blasphemy; and that thou, being merely a man, makest thyself God. ³⁴Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, "I said ye are gods?" ³⁵If he called those gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken; ³⁶do ye say of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world,

Thou blasphemest because I said, I am the Son of God? ³⁷If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. ³⁸But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him. ³⁹Then sought they again to apprehend him and he departed out of their reach, ⁴⁰and went again beyond Jordan, unto the place where John at first baptised; and there he abode. ⁴¹And many came to him, and said, That John indeed performed no miracle: but all things whatsoever John spake of this man were true. ⁴²And many believed on him there.

CHAP. XI.

NOW there was a sick man, Lazarus, of Bethany, the village of Mary and her sister Martha. ²(It was the Mary who had anointed the Lord with the balm, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.) ³The sisters therefore sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick. ⁴When Jesus heard it, he said, This sickness is not for death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God may be glorified thereby.

⁵Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. ⁶Then, though he heard he was ill, yet notwithstanding he abode in the same place where he was two days. ⁷But after that he saith to his disciples, Let us go again into Judea. ⁸The disciples say unto him, Rabbi, the Jews have just now sought to stone thee; and art thou going thither again? ⁹Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he doth not stumble, because he seeth the light of this world. ¹⁰But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light with him. ¹¹These things said he: and after that he saith to them, Our friend Lazarus is asleep; but I go to waken him up. ¹²Then said his disciples, Lord, if he is asleep, he will recover. ¹³Now Jesus had spoken of his death: but they apprehended that he spake of taking rest in sleep. ¹⁴Then Jesus therefore told them plainly, Lazarus is dead. ¹⁵And I rejoice on your account that I was not there, in order that ye may believe; but let us go to him. ¹⁶Then said Thomas, (called Didymus, the twin,) to his fellow-disciples, Let us go too, that we may die with him.

¹⁷Then Jesus, when he came; found that he had already lain in the tomb four days. ¹⁸Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off: ¹⁹and many of the Jews had come with the women who were about Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother. ²⁰Then Martha, when she heard that Jesus was coming, met him: but Mary sat in the house. ²¹And Martha said to Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. ²²But even now I know, that whatsoever things thou shalt ask of God, God will give thee. ²³Jesus saith to her, Thy brother shall rise again. ²⁴Martha saith to him, I know that he shall rise at the resurrection in the last day. ²⁵Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: ²⁶and every one who is alive, and believeth in me, shall never die to eternity. Believest thou this? ²⁷She saith to him, Yes, Lord I believe that thou art the Messiah, the Son of God, who cometh into the world.

²⁸So when she had thus spoken, she went away, and called her sister Mary privately, saying, The Master is near at hand, and calleth for thee. ²⁹As soon as she heard it, she rose hastily, and came to him.

³⁰Now Jesus was not yet come into the village, but was on the spot where Martha had met him. ³¹Then the Jews who were with her in the house, and comforting her, observing Mary, that she rose up hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, She is going to the tomb, to weep there.

³²When therefore Mary was come where Jesus was, beholding him, she fell at his feet, saying to him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother would not have died! ³³When Jesus then saw her weeping, and all the Jews who came with her lamenting, he groaned in spirit, and was himself greatly agitated: ³⁴and he said, Where have ye laid him? They say to him, Lord, come and see. ³⁵Jesus wept. ³⁶Then said the Jews, Behold, how he loved him! ³⁷But some of them said, Could not this man, who openeth the eyes of the blind, have caused that this person should not have died? ³⁸Then Jesus again groaning in himself, cometh to the sepulchre. It was an excavation, and a stone lay upon it. ³⁹Jesus saith, Remove the stone. The sister of the deceased, Martha, said to him, Lord,

he is by this time putrid: for he hath been dead four days. ⁴⁰Jesus saith unto her, Did I not tell thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shalt see the glory of God? ⁴¹Then they removed the stone where the deceased was lying. And Jesus lifted his eyes upwards, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me! ⁴²And I knew that thou always dost hear me: but for the sake of the multitude standing by I spake, that they may believe that thou hast sent me. ⁴³And when he had thus spoken, with a loud voice he cried, Lazarus, come forth! ⁴⁴And the deceased came forth, his feet and his hands wrapped with the linen swathes; and his face bound round with a napkin. Jesus saith to them, Loose him, and let him go!

⁴⁵Then many of the Jews who came to Mary, and saw what Jesus had done, believed on him. ⁴⁶But some of them went to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done. ⁴⁷The chief priests and Pharisees therefore called the sanhedrim together, and said, What are we about? for this man is doing many miracles. ⁴⁸If we suffer him to go on thus, all men will believe on him: and the Romans will come, and take away both our place and nation. ⁴⁹Then one particular person of them, Caiaphas, being the high-priest of that year, said unto them, Ye know nothing, ⁵⁰nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation be not destroyed. ⁵¹And this he spake not from himself: but being the high-priest of that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for the nation; ⁵²and not for that nation only, but that he should collect into one body the children of God wherever dispersed. ⁵³Then from that day they consulted together how they might kill him.

⁵⁴Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews, but went thence into the country bordering on the desert, to a city called Ephraim, and there he abode with his disciples. ⁵⁵Now the passover of the Jews was near, and many went up to Jerusalem out of the country before the passover, in order to purify themselves. ⁵⁶Then they sought for Jesus, and said one to another, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast? ⁵⁷Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given commandment, that, if any person knew where he was, they should declare it, that they might apprehend him.

CHAP. XII.

JESUS then before the days of the passover came to Bethany, where the deceased Lazarus was, whom he had raised from the dead. ²Therefore they made him a supper there; and Martha waited: but Lazarus was one of those who sat at table with him. ³Then Mary taking a pound of unadulterated balm of nard, very valuable, anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment. ⁴Then said one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon, who was preparing to betray him, ⁵Wherefore was not this aromatic ointment sold for three hundred denarii, and given to the poor? ⁶Now he said this, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and kept the purse, and carried the money put therein. ⁷Then said Jesus, Let her alone: for the day of my burial hath she reserved this. ⁸For the poor ye have always with you; but me ye have not always.

⁹Then the whole multitude of the Jews knew that he was there: and they came not for the sake of Jesus only, but also that they might see Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead. ¹⁰Then the chief priests consulted how they might kill Lazarus also; ¹¹because on his account many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

¹²On the morrow a great multitude who came to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, ¹³took branches of palm, and went out to meet him, and cried, Hosanna! blessed is the king of Israel, that cometh in the name of the Lord.

¹⁴Then Jesus, having found a young ass, sat upon it; as it is written, ¹⁵"Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, thy King cometh, sitting on the foal of an ass." ¹⁶These things indeed knew not his disciples at first: but when Jesus was glorified, then they remembered that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him.

¹⁷Then the multitude that was with him, when he called Lazarus out of the tomb, and raised him from the dead, bore their testimony. ¹⁸Therefore also the multitude met him, because they had heard that he had done this miracle. ¹⁹Then said the Pharisees among themselves, Do

ye not perceive that ye gain no advantage? behold, the world is gone after him.

²⁰Now there were certain Greeks among those who went up to worship at the feast: ²¹these then came to Philip, who was of Bethsaida, of Galilee, and they asked him, saying, Sir, we wish to see Jesus. ²²Philip comes and speaks to Andrew: and again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus. ²³Then Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified. ²⁴Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a grain of wheat falling on the earth undergo a deathlike change, it abideth single: but if it *thus* die, it beareth abundant produce. ²⁵He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world, shall preserve it to life eternal. ²⁶If a man will be my servant, let him follow me; and where I am, there also shall my servant be: and if any man serve me, him will my Father honour. ²⁷Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour. ²⁸Father, glorify thy name! Then came a voice from heaven, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again. ²⁹The multitude that stood by, and heard it, said that it was thunder: others said, An angel hath spoken to him. ³⁰Jesus answered and said, This voice came not for my sake, but for your's. ³¹Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the ruler of this world be ejected out *of it*. ³²And I, when I am lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me. ³³And this he said, signifying by what death he should die.

³⁴Then the multitude answered him, We have heard out of the law, that the Messiah abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, That the Son of man must be lifted up? who is this Son of man? ³⁵Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest the darkness overtake you: he that walketh in darkness, knoweth not even whither he is going. ³⁶While ye have the light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of the light. These things spake Jesus, and going away, concealed himself from them.

³⁷Now, though he had done so many miracles before them, they believed not on him: ³⁸that the saying of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, "Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?" ³⁹For this reason they could not believe, because Isaiah had said again; ⁴⁰"He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their hearts; lest they should see with their eyes, and understand with the heart, and be converted, and I should heal them." ⁴¹These things said Isaiah, when he saw his glory, and spake of him. ⁴²However, notwithstanding, many even of the rulers believed on him; but on account of the Pharisees they did not make open profession, lest they should be put out of the synagogues: ⁴³for they loved honour from men, more than honour from God.

⁴⁴Then Jesus cried and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me. ⁴⁵And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me. ⁴⁶I am come a light into the world, that every one who believeth on me should not abide in darkness. ⁴⁷And if any man, hearing my words, believeth not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. ⁴⁸He that sets me at nought, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: even the word which I have spoken, the same shall judge him at the last day. ⁴⁹Because I have not spoken of myself; but the Father who has sent me, he gave me commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. ⁵⁰And I know that his commandment is life eternal: therefore the things which I speak to you, just as the Father spake to me, so speak I.

CHAP. XIII.

NOW before the feast of the passover, Jesus, knowing that his hour was come, that he should go out of this world to the Father, having loved his peculiar people that are in the world, he loved them to the end. ²And supper being served, (the devil having now injected into the heart of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon, that he should betray him;) ³Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he came out from God, and was going to God; ⁴he rises from supper, and lays aside his garments, and taking a towel, he wound it about himself. ⁵Then he poureth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel with which he was begirt. ⁶Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and he saith to him, Lord, dost thou wash my

feet? ⁷Jesus answered and said to him, What I am doing thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter. ⁸Peter saith to him, Thou shalt never wash my feet: no, never. Jesus answered him, Except I wash thee, thou hast no part with me. ⁹Simon Peter saith to him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head. ¹⁰Jesus saith to him, He that is washed hath need only to wash his feet, for he is entirely clean: and ye are clean, but not all. ¹¹(For he knew who would betray him; therefore he said, Ye are not all clean.) ¹²When therefore he had washed their feet, and taken his garments, and sat down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done unto you? ¹³Ye call me Master, and Lord: and ye speak truly; for such I am. ¹⁴If therefore I have washed your feet, though the Lord and the Master; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. ¹⁵For I have given you an example, that just as I have done to you, ye should do also. ¹⁶Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his master; nor the messenger greater than him that sent him. ¹⁷If ye know these things, blessed are ye if ye practise them. ¹⁸I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me, hath lift up his heel against me. ¹⁹Now I tell you previously, before this comes to pass, that, when it cometh to pass, ye may believe that I AM. ²⁰Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I shall send, receiveth me; and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

²¹As Jesus was speaking these words, he was greatly agitated in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me. ²²Then the disciples looked one at another, doubting of whom he spake. ²³Now there was one of the disciples reclining on the bosom of Jesus, whom Jesus loved. ²⁴Therefore Simon Peter gave him a significant look, that he should inquire of Jesus, which of them it should be of whom he spake. ²⁵And he leaning on the breast of Jesus, said to him, Lord, which is it? ²⁶Jesus answered, It is he to whom I shall give this morsel of bread, when I have dipped it. And dipping the morsel of bread, he gave it unto Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon. ²⁷And after the sop, then entered Satan into him. Jesus saith to him, What thou doest, do quickly. ²⁸Now none of those who sat at table knew wherefore he had spoken to him. ²⁹For some supposed, as Judas kept the purse, that Jesus was saying to him, Buy what we need for the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor. ³⁰Having then received the sop, he went out immediately: now it was night.

³¹When therefore he was gone, Jesus saith, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him. ³²If God is glorified in him, God will also glorify him with himself, and immediately glorify him. ³³My dear children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: as I said to the Jews, Whither I am going, ye cannot come; so say I now to you. ³⁴A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; even as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. ³⁵By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

³⁶Simon Peter saith to him, Lord, Whither art thou going? Jesus answered him, Whither I am going, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow me hereafter. ³⁷Peter saith to him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thee. ³⁸Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for me? Verily, verily, I tell thee, the cock will not crow, before thou shalt deny me thrice.

CHAP. XIV.

LET not your hearts be troubled: trust in God, and trust in me. ²In my Father's house are many mansions: and if not, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. ³And if I go and prepare you a place, I will come again, and receive you to myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. ⁴And whither I am going ye know, and the way ye know.

⁵Thomas saith to him, We know not whither thou art going; and how can we know the way? ⁶Jesus saith to him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life: no man cometh to the Father, but by me. ⁷If ye had known me, ye would have known my Father: and from henceforth ye know him and have seen him.

⁸Philip saith to him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. ⁹Jesus saith to him, Am I all this while with you, and hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest

thou, Shew us the Father? ¹⁰Dost thou not believe that I am in the Father, and that the Father is in me? the words which I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father, who dwelleth in me, he performeth these works. ¹¹Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: and at least believe me on account of the works themselves. ¹²Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works which I do shall he do also; yea, and greater than these shall he do; because I go to the Father. ¹³And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. ¹⁴If ye ask any thing in my name, I will do it. ¹⁵If ye love me, keep my commandments. ¹⁶And I will ask the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; ¹⁷the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; because he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. ¹⁸I will not leave you orphans: I am coming to you. ¹⁹Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also. ²⁰In that day ye shall know that I am in the Father, and ye in me, and I in you. ²¹He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he is the person who loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him.

²²Then Judas (not Iscariot) said to him, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself to us, and not unto the world? ²³Jesus answered and said to him, If any man love me, he will observe my word: and my Father will love him, and we will come to him, and make our abode with him. ²⁴He that loveth me not, doth not observe my sayings: and the word which ye are hearing is not mine, but of him that sent me. ²⁵These things have I spoken to you, while I continue among you. ²⁶But the Comforter, the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, which I have spoken to you. ²⁷Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I to you. Let not your heart be agitated, nor shrink back through fear. ²⁸Ye have heard that I told you, I am going away, though I am coming again to you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I am going to the Father: because my Father is greater than I. ²⁹And now I have informed you before it comes to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe. ³⁰I shall not speak many things more with you: for the ruler of this world is coming, though in me he hath no part. ³¹But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father hath given me commandment, so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

CHAP. XV.

I AM the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. ²Every branch in me that beareth no fruit, he taketh it away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he pruneth it clean, that it may bring forth more fruit. ³Ye are already clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. ⁴Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, unless it abide in the vine: so neither can ye, except ye abide in me. ⁵I am the vine, ye are the branches: he that abideth in me, and I in him, this person beareth much fruit: because without me ye can do nothing. ⁶If any man abide not in me, he is cast out as a branch, and withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. ⁷If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask whatsoever ye will, and it shall be done for you. ⁸Herein is my Father glorified, that ye should bring forth much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. ⁹Just as the Father hath loved me, I also have loved you: abide in my love. ¹⁰If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and as I abide in his love. ¹¹These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy may abide in you, and your joy may be full. ¹²This is my commandment, That ye love one another, just as I have loved you. ¹³Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. ¹⁴Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever things I command you. ¹⁵I no more call you servants; for the servant knoweth not what his master is doing: but I have called you friends because I have made known to you all things which I have heard of my Father. ¹⁶Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and appointed you that ye should go forth and bear fruit, and that your fruit should be permanent: that so whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he

may give it you. ¹⁷These things I command you, that ye love one another. ¹⁸If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before you. ¹⁹If ye were of the world, the world would love its own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have elected you out of the world, for this very cause the world hateth you. ²⁰Remember the word which I spake unto you, The servant is not greater than his master. If they have persecuted me, they will persecute you also; if they have observed my words, they will observe your's also. ²¹But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me. ²²Had I not come and spoken to them, they would not have had sin: but now they have no excuse for their sin. ²³He that hateth me hateth my Father also. ²⁴If I had not done among them the works which no other ever did, they would not have had sin: but now they have both seen and hated both me and my Father. ²⁵But it is in order that the word may be fulfilled which is written in their law, "They hated me without a cause." ²⁶But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, the Spirit of truth, who proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me: ²⁷and ye too shall bear your testimony, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

CHAP. XVI.

THESE things have I spoken, that ye might not be stumbled. ²They will put you out of their synagogues: yea, the hour is coming, that every one who killeth you will think he offers God a sacred service. ³And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me. ⁴But these things have I spoken to you, that when the hour is come, ye may remember the same for I had told you. But these things I told you not at the beginning, because I was with you. ⁵But now I am going away to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither art thou going? ⁶But because I have spoken these things to you, sorrow hath filled your heart. ⁷Yet I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I went not away, the Comforter would not come to you; but if I go, I will send him unto you. ⁸And when he cometh, he will convince the world of sin, of righteousness, and of judgment: ⁹of sin first, because they believe not in me; ¹⁰then of righteousness, because I am going to the Father, so ye see me no more; ¹¹and of judgment, because the ruler of this world hath sentence pronounced on him.

¹²I have many things to say to you, but ye cannot bear them just now. ¹³But when he is come, the Spirit of truth, he will conduct you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever things he shall hear, he shall speak: and he will declare to you the things that shall come hereafter. ¹⁴He shall glorify me: for he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you. ¹⁵All things whatsoever the Father hath are mine: therefore I said, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you. ¹⁶A little while longer, and ye shall not see me: and again a little while, and ye shall see me, because I am going to the Father.

¹⁷Then said some of the disciples unto each other, What is this which he saith to us, A little while longer, and ye shall not see me: and again a little while, and ye shall see me: and this, because I am going to the Father? ¹⁸They said therefore, What is this which he saith, This little while? we know not what he means.

¹⁹Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Are ye questioning among yourselves concerning this declaration, which I spake, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again a little while, and ye shall see me? ²⁰Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be very sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. ²¹A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but when the little son is born, she no more remembers the anguish, for joy that a man is brought into the world. ²²And ye therefore have indeed at present sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall be made glad, and your joy no man taketh from you. ²³And in that hour ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, That whatsoever things ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give you. ²⁴Hitherto ye have asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be complete. ²⁵These things have I spoken to you in parables: but the hour is coming when I will no more speak to you in parables, but will plainly inform you respecting the Father. ²⁶In that day ye shall ask in my name:

and I do not say to you, I will entreat the Father for you: ²⁷for the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God. ²⁸I came out from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I am leaving the world, and going to the Father.

²⁹His disciples said unto him, Lo! now thou speakest plainly, and speakest in no-wise proverbial. ³⁰Now we know that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any person should ask thee: by this we believe that thou hast come forth from God. ³¹Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe? ³²Behold, the hour is coming, yea, it is already come, that ye shall be dispersed, each after his own concerns, and shall leave me alone: though I am not alone, because the Father is with me. ³³These things have I spoken to you, that ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good courage; I have overcome the world.

CHAP. XVII.

THESE things spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son may glorify thee: ²even as thou hast given him authority over all flesh, that with regard to all those whom thou hast given him, he should give to them eternal life: ³and this is eternal life, that they should know thee the only true God, and him whom thou hast sent, Jesus, the Messiah. ⁴I have glorified thee upon earth: I have completed the work which thou gavest me to perform. ⁵And now, Father, do thou glorify me with thyself in the glory which I held with thee before the world was. ⁶I have made known thy name to the persons whom thou gavest me out of the world: for thee they had a being, and to me thou hast given them; and thy word have they kept. ⁷Now have they known, that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are from thee. ⁸For the declarations which thou gavest to me I have delivered to them; and they have received them, and have known assuredly that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou hast sent me. ⁹I entreat for them: I make no request for the world; but for those thou hast given me; for they are thine. ¹⁰And all mine are thine, and thine mine; and I have been glorified in them. ¹¹And now no longer am I in this world, but these are in the world, and I am coming to thee. Holy Father! preserve them for thy name's sake whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are. ¹²When I was with them in the world, I preserved them by thy name: those whom thou hast given me have I guarded, and not one of them is perished, except the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. ¹³But now I am coming to thee; and I am speaking these things in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves. ¹⁴I have given them thy word and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. ¹⁵I entreat not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest preserve them from the wicked one. ¹⁶They are not of the world, just as I am not of the world. ¹⁷Sanctify them by thy truth: thy word is truth. ¹⁸As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I sent them into the world. ¹⁹And for them I devote myself, that they also might be sanctified by the truth. ²⁰And not for them do I make request only, but also for those who shall believe in me through their word; ²¹that all may be one; as thou, Father, in me, and I in thee, that these also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. ²²And I have given them the glory, which thou hast given me; that they may be one, even as we are one: ²³I in them, and thou in me, that they may be perfected into one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. ²⁴Father, those whom thou hast given me, I will that where I am they may also be with me; that they may behold my glory, which thou gavest me: because thou hast loved me before the foundation of the world.

²⁵Righteous Father! though the world hath not known thee, yet I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. ²⁶And I have made known to them thy name, and will make it known: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them.

CHAP. XVIII.

HAVING thus spoken, Jesus went out with his disciples beyond the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into which he went himself, and

his disciples. ²Now Judas also, who betrayed him, knew the place: for frequently had Jesus consorted with his disciples there. ³Then Judas having taken a band of soldiers, and the inferior officers of the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns and torches and arms. ⁴Jesus therefore, conscious of all things that were coming upon him, going forward, said to them, Whom are ye seeking? ⁵They answered him, Jesus the Nazarean. Jesus saith unto them, I am he. Then stood also Judas, who betrayed him, with these men. ⁶As he then spake to them, I am he, they retreated backward, and fell flat on the ground. ⁷Again therefore he demanded of them, Whom seek ye? Then they said, Jesus the Nazarean. ⁸Jesus answered, I told you that I am he: if therefore ye are seeking me, permit these to go away: ⁹that the saying might be fulfilled, which he spake, That of those whom thou hast given me, I have not lost one of them.

¹⁰Then Simon Peter having a sword, drew it, and struck a servant of the high-priest, and cut off his right ear. Now the servant's name was Malchas. ¹¹Then said Jesus to Peter, Put up thy sword into the scabbard: the cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?

¹²The band therefore, and the chief captain, and the inferior officers of the Jews, seized on Jesus, and bound him, ¹³and led him away to Annas first; for he was father-in-law to Caiaphas, who was the high-priest of that year. ¹⁴Now Caiaphas was the person who had given his advice to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should be destroyed instead of the people.

¹⁵Now Simon Peter had followed Jesus, and another disciple: and that disciple was acquainted with the high-priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high-priest. ¹⁶But Peter stood without at the door. Then that other disciple, who was acquainted with the high-priest, went out, and spoke to the portress, and introduced Peter. ¹⁷Then said the damsel who kept the door to Peter, Art not thou also one of the disciples of this man? He saith, I am not. ¹⁸Now the servants and inferior officers having made a fire, for it was cold, stood and warmed themselves: and there stood Peter with them, and warmed himself.

¹⁹The high-priest then questioned Jesus concerning his disciples, and respecting his doctrine. ²⁰Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the world; I always taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews resorted; and in secret have I spoken nothing. ²¹Why dost thou question me? ask those who have heard me, what I have spoken to them: lo, they know what I said. ²²As he was thus speaking, one of the servants who stood by him gave Jesus a slap on the face, saying, Dost thou answer the high-priest in this fashion? ²³Jesus replied to him, If I have spoken in an improper manner, bear witness of the evil deed: but if properly, why strikest thou me? ²⁴Now Annas had sent him bound to Caiaphas the high-priest.

²⁵Meanwhile Simon Peter was standing and warming himself. Then said they to him, Art not thou also one of this man's disciples? He denied it, and said, I am not. ²⁶One of the servants of the high-priest, being a kinsman of him whose ear Peter cut off, said, Did I not see thee in the garden with him? ²⁷Then again Peter denied: and instantly the cock crew.

²⁸Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas to the prætorium: and it was early: and they themselves went not into the prætorium, that they should not be defiled; but that they might eat the passover. ²⁹Pilate then came out to them, and said, What accusation bring ye against this man? ³⁰They answered and said to him, If this fellow had not been a malefactor, we should not have delivered him up to thee. ³¹Pilate then said to them, Take him yourselves, and according to your own law judge him. The Jews then said to him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death: ³²that the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, intimating by what manner of death he should die.

³³Pilate therefore entered again into the prætorium, and called Jesus, and said to him, Art thou the king of the Jews? ³⁴Jesus answered him, Dost thou speak this from thyself, or did others speak to thee concerning me? ³⁵Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thy own nation and the chief priests have delivered thee to me: what hast thou done? ³⁶Jesus replied, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom had been of this world, then would my servants have struggled hard, that I should not have been delivered up to the Jews: but now my kingdom is not from hence. ³⁷Then said Pilate unto him. Art thou not a king then? Jesus answered, Thou

sayest that I am a king. For this end I was born, and for this I came into the world, that I should be a witness for the truth. Every one who is of the truth heareth my voice. ³⁸Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And having thus spoken, he went out again unto the Jews and saith to them, I find no fault in him. ³⁹But ye have a custom, that I should release to you one person at the passover: will ye therefore that I release unto you the King of the Jews? ⁴⁰Then again they all clamoured, saying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

CHAP. XIX.

THEN Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged him. ²And the soldiers having platted a crown of thorns, put it on his head, and they clothed him in a purple robe, ³and said, Hail, King of the Jews! and they gave him slaps on the face with their hands. ⁴Then again went Pilate out, and said to them, Behold, I bring him out to you, that ye may know that I find in him no fault at all. ⁵Then came Jesus out, bearing the thorny crown, and the purple robe. And he said to them, Behold the man! ⁶When the chief priests therefore and the officers saw him, they cried vociferously, saying, Crucify him! crucify him! Pilate saith to them, Take him yourselves, and crucify him: for I have not found in him a fault. ⁷The Jews replied to him, We have a law, and according to our law he ought to die, because he hath made himself the Son of God. ⁸When Pilate then heard this saying, he was the more afraid: ⁹and entered into the prætorium again, and saith to Jesus, From whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer. ¹⁰Then saith Pilate to him, Dost thou not speak to me? dost thou not know that I have power to crucify thee, and that I have power to release thee? ¹¹Jesus answered, Thou wouldest have had no authority over me, unless it had been given thee from above: for this reason, he that hath delivered me up to thee hath the greater crime. ¹²Upon this Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews clamoured, saying, If thou release this fellow, thou art no friend of Cæsar's: every one who professes himself a king, speaks in opposition to Cæsar.

¹³When Pilate therefore heard this speech, he brought Jesus out, and sat down on the judgment seat, in a place called the Stone Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha. ¹⁴And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour: and he saith to the Jews, Behold your King! ¹⁵But they cried vociferously, Away with him, away! crucify him! Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Cæsar.

¹⁶Then delivered he him therefore unto them, that he should be crucified. And they took Jesus and led him away. ¹⁷And carrying his cross he went forth to a place called the Place of a Skull, which in the Hebrew is termed Golgotha: ¹⁸where they crucified him, and two others with him, on this side and on that, and in the midst Jesus. ¹⁹And Pilate also wrote a title, and put it on the cross. And this was the writing: JESUS THE NAZAREAN, THE KING OF THE JEWS, ²⁰This title then many of the Jews read: for the spot where Jesus was crucified was nigh unto the city: and it was written in Hebrew, in Greek, and in Latin. ²¹The chief priests of the Jews then said to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but that he said, I am King of the Jews. ²²Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written.

²³Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, for each soldier a part; and his vest: now the vest was without a seam, woven from the upper parts throughout the whole. ²⁴They said therefore one to another, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, "They parted my garments among them, and for my vest they cast lots." So the soldiers therefore did these things.

²⁵Now beside the cross of Jesus stood his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the wife of Cleopas, and Mary Magdalene. ²⁶When Jesus then beheld his mother, and the disciple whom he loved, standing by, he saith to his mother, Woman, behold thy son! ²⁷Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother! And from that hour the disciple took her unto his own home.

²⁸After this, Jesus, conscious that all things were now finished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst. ²⁹Now there was placed a vessel full of vinegar: they then filling a sponge with the vinegar, and putting it on a stick of hyssop, carried it to his mouth. ³⁰When therefore

Jesus had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and inclining his head, he surrendered up his spirit.

³¹The Jews therefore, as it was the preparation, that the bodies might not remain on the cross on the sabbath, (for that sabbath-day was a great day,) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away. ³²Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other who was crucified with him. ³³But when they came to Jesus, as they saw that he was already dead, they brake not his legs: ³⁴but one of the soldiers with his lance pierced his side, and immediately there gushed out blood and water. ³⁵And he that saw it bore witness, and we know that his testimony is true: and he himself is conscious that he speaketh what is true, that ye might believe. ³⁶Now these things were done, that the scripture might be fulfilled, "A bone of him shall not be broken." ³⁷And again another scripture saith, "They shall look on him whom they have pierced."

³⁸And after these things Joseph of Arimathea, (being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews,) besought Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus and Pilate permitted him. Then he came and took away the body of Jesus. ³⁹And Nicodemus, who had come to Jesus by night formerly, came also, bringing a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred weight.

⁴⁰Then they took the body, and bound it with swathes together with the aromatics, as the custom is with the Jews to bury. ⁴¹And there was near the spot where he was crucified a garden and in the garden a new tomb, wherein no person had ever yet been laid. ⁴²Because of the preparation of the Jews therefore, they laid Jesus there; for the sepulchre was just by.

CHAP. XX.

AND on the first day of the week, Mary Magdalen came very early, whilst yet some darkness remained, to the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre. ²She therefore runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith to them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him. ³Then Peter went out, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre. ⁴And they two ran together: and the other disciple ran before more swiftly than Peter, and came first to the sepulchre. ⁵And stooping forward, he sees the swathing clothes lying there; yet he did not go in. ⁶Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and saw the swathing clothes lying, ⁷and the napkin, which had been round his head, not laid with the linen swathes, but apart folded up in another place. ⁸Then went in also the other disciple, who had come the first to the sepulchre, and saw, and believed. ⁹Though not even yet had they known the scripture, that he should rise from the dead. ¹⁰Then the disciples went back again to their companions. ¹¹But Mary stood at the sepulchre, without, weeping: as therefore she wept, she bent forward towards the sepulchre. ¹²And saw two angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain. ¹³And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith to them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him. ¹⁴And as she thus spoke, she turned about, and beheld Jesus standing by, and knew not that it was Jesus. ¹⁵Then Jesus said to her, Woman, why art thou weeping? whom art thou seeking? She, supposing that it was the gardener, said to him, Sir, if thou hast carried him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away. ¹⁶Jesus saith to her, Mary! Starting round, she said to him, Rabboni! that is, Master! ¹⁷Jesus saith to her, Touch me not; for I have not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and tell them, I am ascending to my Father, and your Father; to my God, and your God. ¹⁸Mary Magdalen cometh declaring to the disciples, that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things to her.

¹⁹When the evening therefore was come, on the same first day of the week, and the doors being fastened where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood in the midst, and said unto them, Peace be to you. ²⁰And thus speaking, he shewed them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad when they saw the Lord. ²¹Jesus therefore spake to them again, Peace be unto you: as the Father hath sent me, even so send I you. ²²And so speaking, he breathed on

them, and said, Receive the Holy Ghost: ²³whose soever sins ye forgive, they are forgiven them; and whose sins soever ye retain, they are retained.

²⁴Now Thomas, one of the twelve, who is called Didymus, the twin, was not with them when Jesus came. ²⁵Then the other disciples said to him, We have seen the Lord. But he said to them, Except I should see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I shall never believe it. ²⁶And eight days after, his disciples were again within, and Thomas with them: Jesus cometh, though the doors were fastened, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you. ²⁷Afterwards he spake to Thomas, Bring hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and take thy hand, and thrust into my side: and be not incredulous, but a believer. ²⁸And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God! ²⁹Jesus saith to him, Because thou hast seen me, Thomas, hast thou believed: blessed are they who though they have not seen me, yet have believed.

³⁰Now many other miracles did Jesus therefore also in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book: ³¹but these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Messiah, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.

CHAP. XXI.

AFTER these things Jesus again shewed himself to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and he appeared in the following manner:

²Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, the twin, and Nathaniel who was of Cana of Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two others of the disciples were together. ³Simon Peter said to them, I am going a-fishing. They say to him, We too will go with thee. They went out, and got on board the vessel immediately; and that night they caught nothing. ⁴But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood upon the beach: yet the disciples had not discovered that it was Jesus. ⁵Then saith Jesus unto them, My youths, have ye any thing eatable? They answered him, No. ⁶Then he said to them, Shoot the net on the right side of the vessel, and ye shall find fish. They shot it therefore, and now they were not able to drag it in from the quantity of fishes. ⁷Then said that disciple whom Jesus loved to Peter, It is the Lord! Then Simon Peter, when he heard that it was the Lord, girt his coat round him, (for he was stripped,) and threw himself into the sea. ⁸And the other disciples came in the little vessel, (for they were not far from land, only about two hundred cubits,) dragging the net with the fishes. ⁹When therefore they were come to land, they saw a fire laid, and a fish upon it, and a loaf. ¹⁰Jesus saith to them, Bring some of the fish which ye have just caught. ¹¹Simon Peter went aboard, and drew the net to land full of large fishes, to the number of a hundred and fifty-three: and though they were so many, yet was not the net rent. ¹²Jesus saith to them, Come, dine. Now not one of the disciples dared inquire, Who art thou? conscious that it was the Lord. ¹³Then Jesus cometh, and taketh the loaf, and distributed to them, and of the fish in like manner. ¹⁴Now this was the third time Jesus had shewed himself to the disciples, after he rose from the dead.

¹⁵When therefore they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith to him, Yes, Lord! thou knowest that I love thee. He saith to him, Feed my lambs. ¹⁶He saith to him again the second time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith to him, Yes, Lord! thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep. ¹⁷He saith to him the third time, Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said to him, Lord, thou knowest all things, thou knowest that I love thee! Jesus saith to him, Feed my sheep.

¹⁸Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast a younger man, thou didst gird up thyself, and go about whithersoever thy choice led thee: but when thou shalt grow old, another person extending thy hands, shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not. ¹⁹This he told him, to intimate by what kind of death he should glorify God. And having thus spoken, he said to him, Follow me. ²⁰Now Peter, turning about, saw the disciple whom Jesus loved following; who also at the supper reclined on his bosom, and said, Lord, which is the person who betrayeth thee? ²¹Peter looking at him, saith to Jesus, Lord, and what will become of this man? ²²Jesus saith to him, If I will that he abide till I come, what is that to thee? follow thou me. ²³Then this speech went forth among the

disciples, as though this disciple was not to die: yet Jesus had not said to him, That he shall not die; but, If I will that he abide till I come, what is that to thee?

²⁴This is the disciple who is testifying of these things, and hath written these things: and we know that his testimony is true. ²⁵And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if every particular was written, I am of opinion that the world itself would not be capable of retaining the books which should be written. Amen.

THE ACTS

OF THE

HOLY APOSTLES.

CHAP. I.

THE former treatise, Theophilus, I composed, concerning all things which Jesus began both to do and to teach, ²until that day, when having given a charge to his apostles through the Holy Ghost, whom he had chosen, he was taken up: ³to whom also he had shewed himself alive, after he had suffered, by many infallible proofs, during forty days being frequently seen by them, and speaking of the things which relate to the kingdom of God: ⁴and assembling them together, commanded them not to depart from Jerusalem, but to wait for the promise of the Father, which, said he, ye have heard from me. ⁵For John indeed baptised with water; but ye shall be baptised with the Holy Ghost not many days after the present.

⁶They then accordingly assembling together, asked him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time reestablish the kingdom of Israel? ⁷But he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times and the seasons, which the Father hath reserved under his own authority. ⁸But ye shall receive power, when the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses for me, both in Jerusalem, and throughout all Judea, and Samaria, and unto the extremity of the earth.

⁹And as he was speaking these things, while they were looking upon him, he was taken up; and a cloud enveloping him hid him from their eyes. ¹⁰And as they looked up earnestly into the heaven, while he was passing, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel; ¹¹who also said to them, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up to heaven? this Jesus, who hath been taken up from you into heaven, shall so come, in the same manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.

¹²Then they returned unto Jerusalem, from the mount called Olivet, which is near Jerusalem, about a sabbath-day's journey distant. ¹³And when they had arrived, they went up to an upper room, where abode Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James son of Alpheus, and Simon the zealous, and Jude brother to James. ¹⁴These all persevered unanimously in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brethren.

¹⁵And in those days arose Peter in the midst of the disciples, and said, (there was a number of persons together, about an hundred and twenty,)

¹⁶Men and brethren, it must needs be that this scripture should be fulfilled, which the Holy Ghost delivered before by the mouth of David concerning Judas, who was the conductor of those who seized on Jesus.

¹⁷For he was reckoned of our number, and had obtained an appointment to this ministry. ¹⁸This man indeed accordingly purchased a spot of ground with the wages of iniquity; and projected forward, he burst in the midst, and all his bowels fell out. ¹⁹And it was a fact known to all who dwelt at Jerusalem; so that this field is called in their own dialect, Aeldama, that is, The field of blood. ²⁰For it is written in the book of Psalms²³, Let his habitation be desolate, and let there be no man to dwell in it: and his office, as bishop, let another take²⁴.

²¹Wherefore from among the men who have associated with us always during the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us,

²²beginning from his baptism by John, until the day in which he was taken up from us, must there be chosen with us a witness of his resurrection, even one of these. ²³So they appointed two persons, Joseph called Barsabas, whose surname was Justus, and Matthias. ²⁴And joining in prayer, they said, Do thou, O Lord, who knowest the hearts of all men, point out the one of these two which thou hast chosen, ²⁵to take a part in this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, to go to his own place. ²⁶And they drew lots for them and the lot fell to Matthias and he was by unanimous suffrage numbered with the eleven apostles.

CHAP. II.

SO when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with unanimity assembled together. ²And there came suddenly from heaven a sound as it were of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled the whole house where they were sitting. ³And there was an appearance to them of divided tongues, as of fire, and it rested on every one of them. ⁴And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them power to express themselves.

⁵Now there were dwelling at Jerusalem, Jews, men of piety, from every nation under heaven. ⁶And when this report spread, the multitude collected around them, and were overwhelmed with astonishment, because they heard them speaking every one in his own peculiar dialect. ⁷And they were all amazed, and wondered, saying one to another, Are not all these who are speaking Galileans? ⁸And how do we hear every man in our own peculiar dialect, in which from our birth we were brought up? ⁹Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and they who inhabit Mesopotamia, and Judea, and Cappadocia, Pontus, and Asia, ¹⁰and Phrygia, and Pamphylia, Egypt, and the parts of Lybia adjoining Cyrene, and the sojourners, who are Romans, both Jews and proselytes, ¹¹Cretans and Arabians, we hear them speaking in our own several tongues the marvellous things of God. ¹²And they were all amazed, and much perplexed, and knew not what to think, saying one to another, What can this mean? ¹³But others scoffing said, These men are brimful of sweet wine. ¹⁴But Peter, standing up with the eleven, raised his voice, and addressed them; Men of Judea, and all ye who dwell at Jerusalem, let this be known to you, and listen to my words: ¹⁵for these men are not, as ye suppose, drunk, for it is only the third hour of the day. ¹⁶But this is what was spoken by the prophet Joel; ¹⁷"And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams: ¹⁸and upon my servants and my handmaidens in those days will I pour out of my spirit; and they shall prophesy: ¹⁹and I will perform prodigies in the heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath; blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke. ²⁰The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and illustrious day of the Lord come. ²¹And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the Lord shall be saved²⁵." ²²Men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus the Nazarean, a man from God, pointed out to you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as yourselves also know: ²³him, by the destined counsel and foreknowledge of God delivered up, ye have seized, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain: ²⁴whom God hath raised up, having loosed the pains of death: forasmuch as it was not possible that he should be held thereby. ²⁵For David speaketh concerning him, "I have seen the Lord always before me, for he is at my right hand, that I might not be shaken: ²⁶therefore is my heart full of joy, and my tongue hath exulted; and still shall my flesh also repose in hope, ²⁷that thou wilt not leave my soul in the mansion of the dead, nor permit that Holy One of thine to see corruption. ²⁸Thou hast made known to me the ways of life; thou shalt fill me with delight by thy countenance²⁶."

²⁹Men and brethren, permit me to speak with freedom to you concerning the patriarch David, that he hath been both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us to this day. ³⁰Being therefore a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn to him with an oath, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up the Messiah to sit upon his throne; ³¹he, foreseeing this, spake of the resurrection of the

Messiah, that his soul should not be left in the mansion of the dead, and that his flesh should not see corruption. ³²This very Jesus hath God raised up, of which we all are witnesses. ³³He therefore being exalted at the right hand of God, and having received from the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit, hath poured out this, which ye now see and hear. ³⁴For David is not ascended into the heavens: for he saith himself, "The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit on my right hand, ³⁵until I make thine enemies a footstool for thy feet²⁷." ³⁶Let all the house of Israel therefore know assuredly, that God hath made him Lord and Messiah, even that very Jesus whom ye crucified.

³⁷Now when they heard this, they were cut to the heart, and said unto Peter and the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do?

³⁸Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptised every one of you into the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. ³⁹For the promise is to you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off; even as many as the Lord our God shall call. ⁴⁰And with many other words he testified and exhorted, saying, Be saved from this untoward generation.

⁴¹They therefore who gladly received his discourse were baptised: and there were added to them that day about three thousand souls. ⁴²And they persevered stedfastly in the doctrine of the apostles, and in communion, and in breaking bread, and in prayers. ⁴³And on every soul there was an awe: and many miracles and signs were done by the apostles. ⁴⁴Now all who believed were together, and had all things common; ⁴⁵and sold their possessions and goods, and divided them among all, as every one had need. ⁴⁶And daily continuing with one mind at the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, they partook of their food with great joy and simplicity of heart, ⁴⁷praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added the saved ones daily to the church.

CHAP. III.

NOW at that time Peter and John were going up to the temple at the hour of prayer, the ninth; ²when a certain man who was lame from his mother's womb was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple called Beautiful, to ask alms of those who were entering into the temple; ³who seeing Peter and John just going into the temple, asked to receive alms.

⁴Then Peter fixing his eyes stedfastly on him with John, said, Look on us. ⁵So he attentively regarded them, expecting to receive something from them. ⁶Then said Peter, I have neither silver nor gold; but what I have, that I give thee: By the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarean, arise, and walk! ⁷And taking him by the right hand, he raised him up: and immediately his feet and ancles were restored to strength. ⁸And springing up he stood on his feet, and walked, and entered with them into the temple, walking, and leaping, and praising God. ⁹And all the people beheld him walking and praising God: ¹⁰and they took notice of him, that it was the same person who had sat for alms at the Beautiful gate of the temple: and they were filled with astonishment and amazed at what had happened to him. ¹¹But as the lame man that was cured held fast Peter and John, all the people ran together unto them into the portico called Solomon's, in vast amazement.

¹²Then Peter observing it, addressed himself to the people, Ye men of Israel, why marvel ye at this? or why gaze ye upon us, as if by our own power or piety we had enabled this man to walk?

¹³The God of Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, the God of our fathers, hath glorified his Son Jesus; whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he had determined to release him. ¹⁴But ye denied the Holy One and the Just, and besought that a man, a murderer, might as a favour be given unto you; ¹⁵but ye slew the Author of life, whom God raised from the dead: of which we are witnesses. ¹⁶And through faith in his name hath his name restored this man to strength, whom ye behold and know: yea, the faith which is by him hath given him this perfect soundness in the sight of you all. ¹⁷And now, brethren, I know that through ignorance ye did this deed, as did also your rulers. ¹⁸But the things which God before announced by the mouth of all his prophets, that Messiah should suffer, he hath thus fulfilled. ¹⁹Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when

refreshing seasons shall come from the presence of the Lord; ²⁰and he will send Jesus Christ, who was before preached unto you: ²¹whom the heaven indeed must receive, until the times of restoration of all things, which God hath spoken of by the mouth of all his holy prophets from the beginning of the world. ²²For Moses truly said unto the fathers, "A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you from among your brethren, like myself; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall speak to you. ²³But it shall come to pass, that every soul which will not hearken to that prophet, shall be utterly exterminated from amidst the people²⁸." ²⁴And all the prophets indeed from Samuel, and those who succeeded him, as many as have spoken, have also foretold those days. ²⁵Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, And "in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed²⁹." ²⁶Unto you in the first instance, hath God, after raising up his Son Jesus, sent him to bless you, to the end that every one of you should turn away from your iniquities.

CHAP. IV.

AND as they were thus speaking, the priests, and the captain of the temple-guard, and the Sadducees, came upon them, ²worn down with vexation, because they taught the people, and preached by Jesus the resurrection of the dead. ³And they laid hands on them, and committed them to prison till the next day: for it was then evening.

⁴But many of those who heard the word believed; and the number of the men was about five thousand. ⁵Now it came to pass that the next morning, their rulers, and elders, and scribes, were assembled at Jerusalem, ⁶and Annas the high-priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were the high-priest's relations. ⁷And placing them in the midst, they interrogated them, By what power, or by what name, have ye done this thing?

⁸Then Peter, filled with the Holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel, ⁹if we are this day examined relative to the good deed done to the infirm man, by what means he was restored; ¹⁰be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarean, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, by him doth this man stand here sound in your presence. ¹¹This is the stone which, though set at nought by you builders, is become the head of the corner³⁰. ¹²And there is no salvation in any other person: for there is no other name under heaven given unto men, whereby we must be saved.

¹³Attentively regarding then the noble confidence of Peter and John, and perceiving that they were men unlettered, and destitute of education, they were astonished; and they recollected them, that they had been with Jesus. ¹⁴But seeing the man who was healed standing with them, they had not a word to reply in contradiction. ¹⁵But bidding them retire out of the council-chamber, they conferred among themselves, ¹⁶saying, What shall we do with these men? for that an acknowledged miracle hath been wrought by them is evident to all the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and we cannot deny it. ¹⁷But that it be no farther spread among the people, we will menace them with threats, no more to speak in this name to any man. ¹⁸So calling them in, they charged them not to speak in any manner, nor to teach, in the name of Jesus.

¹⁹But Peter and John, answering them, said, If it be right in the sight of God to obey you rather than God, be yourselves the judges. ²⁰For we cannot refrain from speaking the things which we have seen and heard. ²¹Then they with many additional threatenings dismissed them, finding no pretext how they might punish them, because of the people: for all men glorified God for what had been done. ²²For the man was more than forty years of age, upon whom this miracle of healing was performed.

²³But they being dismissed, came unto their own friends, and told them all things which the high-priests and elders had said. ²⁴Now when they heard it, they lifted up their united voice to God, and said, Lord, thou art the God which made the heaven, and the earth, and the sea, and all things which are in them: ²⁵who by the mouth of David thy servant saidst, Why do the heathen so furiously rage, and the people meditate vain things? ²⁶The kings of the earth rose up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord and against his Messiah³¹. ²⁷For they have been in truth collected together against thy holy Son Jesus, whom

thou hast anointed, even Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the heathen, and the people of Israel, ²⁸to do all that thy hand and thy counsel predestined should come to pass. ²⁹And as to the present transactions, Lord, look upon their threatenings: and grant thy servants power with all boldness to speak thy word, ³⁰by stretching out thy hand for healing; and that signs and miracles may be performed by the name of thy holy child Jesus.

³¹And while they were praying, the place in which they were assembled was shaken; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldness.

³²And in the multitude of those that believed there was one heart and soul: and not one person said, that any part of his substance was his peculiar property; but all things were in common among them.

³³And with great power bore the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all. ³⁴Neither was there any person in want among them: for as many as were possessors of fields or houses disposed of them, and brought the prices of the things sold, ³⁵and laid them at the apostles' feet: and a distribution was made to every one according as he had need. ³⁶And Joses, who was surnamed Barnabas by the apostles, (which is, being interpreted, A son of consolation,) a Levite, a Cyprian by birth, ³⁷having a field belonging to him, sold it, and brought the money, and laid it at the apostles' feet.

CHAP. V.

NOW a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, had sold an estate, ²and secreted a part of the price paid, his wife also being privy to the transaction, and he brought a part, and laid it at the apostles' feet. ³But Peter said, O Ananias! why hath Satan filled thy heart that thou shouldst lie to the Holy Ghost, and secrete something from the price of the estate? ⁴it remained unsold, was it not vested in thee? and when sold, was it not in thine own power? why then hast thou determined in thine heart to do this deed? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God. ⁵Then Ananias, hearing those words, sunk down and expired: and great dread fell upon all who heard these things. ⁶Then the young men arose, and swathed him up, and carrying him out, buried him.

⁷Now it came to pass at the distance of about three hours, his wife also, not knowing what had passed, came in. ⁸And Peter addressed her, Tell me, if ye sold the estate for so much? And she said, Yes, for so much.

⁹Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have conspired together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? see, the feet of them who have buried thy husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out. ¹⁰Then she fell instantly at his feet, and expired: and the young men entering, found her dead, and carrying her out, buried her with her husband. ¹¹And great awe fell on all the Church, and on all who heard these things.

¹²But by the hands of the apostles were many signs and miracles done among the people; (and they were all with one accord in the portico of Solomon. ¹³But of the rest no man had the courage to unite himself with them: though the people extolled them. ¹⁴But believers on the Lord were abundantly added to them, multitudes, both of men and women.) ¹⁵Insomuch that they carried out into the streets the sick, and laid them on beds and couches, that when Peter was coming by, if but even his shadow might pass over some of them.

¹⁶Then came together also a multitude from the neighbouring cities to Jerusalem, bringing the sick, and those who were disturbed by unclean spirits; who were healed universally.

¹⁷Then arose the high-priest, and all those who were connected with him, (which was the sect of the Sadducees,) and were filled with zeal, ¹⁸and laid their hands on the apostles, and put them in the common prison. ¹⁹But the angel of the Lord by night opened the doors of the prison, and conducting them forth, said, ²⁰Go, and taking your station in the temple, speak to the people all the words of this life. ²¹Having heard this therefore, they entered very early in the morning into the temple, and taught. But when the high-priest came, and those who were with him, they convoked the sanhedrim, and all the assembly of elders of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to bring them. ²²But the officers, on their arrival, found them not in the prison: and returning, informed them, ²³saying; The prison indeed found we fast locked with all security, and the guards standing without, before the door: but when we

opened it, we found no person within.

²⁴Now when they heard these words, both the priest and captain of the temple and the chief priests were in the utmost perplexity concerning these things, what could be the meaning of it. ²⁵Then came a person and informed them, saying, the men whom ye put in prison are standing in the temple, and teaching the people. ²⁶Then went the captain, with the officers, and brought them; not forcibly, for they were afraid of the people, lest they should stone them. ²⁷But when they had conducted them, they placed them in the sanhedrim: and the high-priest interrogated them, ²⁸saying, Did we not lay our strict injunction upon you, that you should not teach in this name? and, lo, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and would fain bring this man's blood upon us.

²⁹Then Peter and the apostles answering said, We must obey God rather than men. ³⁰The God of our fathers hath raised up Jesus, whom ye had killed, suspending him on a tree. ³¹Him hath God exalted at his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, to give repentance unto Israel, and remission of sins. ³²And we are witnesses of these things; and the Holy Ghost also, which God hath given to those who obey him.

³³But when they heard this, they were cut asunder as with a saw, and took counsel how to make away with them.

³⁴Then arose a certain Pharisee, in the sanhedrim, named Gamaliel, a doctor of the law, held in high esteem by all the people, and ordered the apostles to be taken out for a little space; ³⁵and he said unto them, Men of Israel, take heed to yourselves respecting these men, what ye mean to do to them. ³⁶For before these days arose Theudas, saying that he himself was a singular personage: to whom a number of men, about four hundred, attached themselves: who was taken off; and as many as obeyed him, were dispersed, and came to nothing. ³⁷And after him arose Judas the Galilean, in the days of the enrolment, and drew away a multitude of the populace after him: he also perished, and all, as many as obeyed him, were dispersed. ³⁸And as to the matters now before you, I say unto you, Abstain from these men, and leave them to themselves: for if this design or this work be of men, it will come to nothing: ³⁹but if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; and in that case would be found fighters against God. ⁴⁰And to him they assented: and calling in the apostles, after scourging them, they commanded them not to speak in the name of Jesus, and dismissed them.

⁴¹Then they went rejoicing from the presence of the sanhedrim, that for his name's sake, they had been counted worthy to suffer this injurious treatment. ⁴²And all the day long in the temple, and from house to house, they never ceased teaching and preaching Jesus Christ.

CHAP. VI.

NOW in those days, when the disciples were multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecian proselytes against the Hebrews, because their widows were overlooked in the daily distribution. ²Then the twelve assembling the multitude of the disciples, said, It is not fit that we should leave the word of God, to make distribution to the tables. ³Therefore, brethren, do ye look out for seven men from among yourselves, the best approved, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint to superintend this business. ⁴But we will devote ourselves constantly to prayer, and to the ministry of the word.

⁵And this saying was very agreeable to all the multitude: and they elected Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicholas a proselyte a man of Antioch: ⁶whom they presented before the apostles: and having prayed, they laid their hands upon them.

⁷And the word of God increased: and the number of the disciples in Jerusalem was multiplied greatly; and a vast body of the priests were obedient to the faith.

⁸Now Stephen, full of faith and of power, wrought great miracles and signs among the people. ⁹Then rose up certain men of the synagogue of the freed-men, and of the Cyrenians, and of the Alexandrians, and of those from Cilicia and Asia, disputing with Stephen. ¹⁰And they could not resist the wisdom and the spirit with which he spoke. ¹¹Then they suborned men to say, We heard him speak blasphemous things against Moses, and against God. ¹²And they stirred up the people, and the elders, and the scribes, and coming upon him, they seized him together,

and dragged him to the sanhedrim; ¹³and they set up false witnesses, saying, This man doth not cease speaking blasphemous words against this holy place, and the law: ¹⁴for we have heard him affirm, that Jesus the Nazarean, even he, will destroy this place, and change the accustomed ordinances which Moses delivered to us. ¹⁵And fixing their eyes upon him, all who sat in the sanhedrim, beheld his face as the face of an angel.

CHAP. VII.

THEN said the high-priest, Are these things so?

²He replied, Men, brethren, and fathers, hear me:

The God of glory appeared to our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran, ³and said to him, Go forth out of thy country, and from among thy relations, and come hither to a land which I will shew thee³². ⁴Then he went out from the country of the Chaldeans, and, dwelt in Charran: and from thence, after his father was dead, God removed him as a sojourner into this very country, in which we now dwell. ⁵Yet he gave him no inheritance in it, not so much as the print of his foot: yet he promised to give it for a possession to him and to his seed after him, when he had no son. ⁶Then spake God to him thus, That his seed should sojourn in a foreign land: and that they should enslave it, and grievously afflict it, four hundred years. ⁷And the nation by which they shall be enslaved will I judge, said God: and after these things they shall come out, and shall worship me in this place³³. ⁸And he gave him the covenant of circumcision: and so he begat Isaac, and circumcised him on the eighth day; and Isaac Jacob, and Jacob the twelve patriarchs. ⁹And the patriarchs, envious, sold Joseph into Egypt: yet God was with him, ¹⁰and delivered him out of all his afflictions, and gave him favour and wisdom before Pharaoh king of Egypt; and he appointed him governor over Egypt and all his house. ¹¹Then came a famine upon all the land of Egypt and Canaan, and great distress: and our fathers found no provisions. ¹²But when Jacob heard that there were provisions in Egypt, he sent our fathers, the first time. ¹³And the second time Joseph was made known unto his brethren; and Joseph's family was made known unto Pharaoh. ¹⁴Then sent Joseph, and invited his father Jacob to come to him, and all his kindred, consisting of seventy-five persons. ¹⁵So Jacob went down into Egypt, and died, himself, and our fathers, ¹⁶and they removed him to Sychem, and laid him in the sepulchre which Abraham had bought, at a price paid in silver, of the sons of Emmor, the father of Shechem. ¹⁷But as the time of the promise which God had with an oath confirmed unto Abraham drew nigh, the people increased and multiplied in Egypt, ¹⁸until another king arose, who knew not Joseph. ¹⁹This man, forming crafty designs against our nation, grievously treated our fathers, so as to cause them to expose their children, in order to exterminate the race. ²⁰At which time Moses was born, and was endued with singular beauty from God, who was brought up three months in the house of his father: ²¹and when he was exposed, Pharaoh's daughter took him home, and brought him up for herself, as a son. ²²And Moses was educated in all the wisdom of Egypt, and was mighty in words and actions. ²³But when he had completed his fortieth year, it came into his heart to visit his brethren the children of Israel. ²⁴And seeing one of them treated injuriously, he defended him, and executed vengeance for him who had suffered the outrage, smiting the Egyptian. ²⁵For he thought that his brethren would understand that God by his hand would give them deliverance: but they understood not. ²⁶And the following day he shewed himself to them as they were fighting, and urged them to peace, saying, My friends, ye are brethren; wherefore do ye ill treat one another? ²⁷Then he who did his neighbour wrong thrust him from him, saying, Who appointed thee a ruler and a judge over us? ²⁸Wilt thou kill me, as thou killedst the Egyptian yesterday? ²⁹Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a sojourner in the land of Midian, where he begat two sons.

³⁰And when forty years were completed, there appeared to him in the desert of mount Sinai the angel of the Lord, in a flame of fire in a bush.

³¹But when Moses saw it, he marvelled at the sight: and as he was drawing nearer to observe it, a voice from the Lord came to him, ³²"I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob³⁴." Then Moses trembling, dared not to look farther.

³³Then the Lord said unto him, "Loose the sandal from thy feet: for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground. ³⁴Attentive I have beheld the evil treatment of my people in Egypt, and I have heard their groaning, and I am come down to deliver them. And now come hither, I will send thee into Egypt³⁵." ³⁵This very Moses whom they had rejected, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge? the same did God send to be a ruler and redeemer by the hand of the angel who appeared to him in the bush. ³⁶He brought them forth, after performing miracles and signs in the land of Egypt, and in the Red sea, and in the wilderness forty years. ³⁷This is the Moses who said unto the children of Israel, "A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up for you from among your brethren, as myself; him shall ye hear³⁶." ³⁸This is he, who was with the church in the wilderness with the angel who spake to him in the mount Sinai, and with our fathers: who received the oracles of life to give unto us: ³⁹to whom our fathers would not be obedient, but thrust him from them, and turned back in their hearts unto Egypt, ⁴⁰saying to Aaron, Make us gods who shall go before us: for this Moses, who brought us out of the land of Egypt, we know not what hath happened to him. ⁴¹And they made a calf in those days, and brought a sacrifice for the idol, and rejoiced in the works of their own hands.

⁴²Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven; as it is written in the book of the prophets, Have ye offered me slain beasts and sacrifices forty years in the wilderness, O house of Israel? ⁴³Yet have ye taken up the tabernacle of Moloc, and the star of your god Remphan, those figures which ye made to pay adoration to them: and I will transport you beyond Babylon³⁷.

⁴⁴The tabernacle of the testimony was with our fathers in the wilderness, as he that spake to Moses commanded, that he should make it according to the model which he had seen. ⁴⁵Which also our fathers having received, brought in with Joshua into the place possessed by the Gentiles, whom God drove out from before the presence of our fathers, unto the days of David; ⁴⁶who found favour before God, and sought to procure an habitation for the God of Jacob. ⁴⁷But Solomon built an house for him. ⁴⁸Though the Most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as the prophet saith, ⁴⁹"Heaven is my throne, and earth the footstool for my feet: what kind of house will ye build me? saith the Lord: or what place is there for my repose? ⁵⁰hath not my hand made all these things³⁸?"

⁵¹Ye stiff-necked and uncircumcised in heart and in ears, ye do always oppose yourselves against the Holy Ghost: as your fathers, so are ye. ⁵²Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they killed those who before published the tidings of the coming of that Righteous Person; of whom ye have now been the betrayers and murderers: ⁵³who have received the law through arrangements of angels, yet have not observed it.

⁵⁴Now when they heard these things, they were cut through their hearts as with a saw, and gnashed upon him with their teeth.

⁵⁵But he being full of the Holy Ghost, and looking up stedfastly to heaven, saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing at the right hand of God; ⁵⁶and he said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing at the right hand of God.

⁵⁷Then they screamed out with a great cry, and stopped their ears, and rushed all together upon him, ⁵⁸and dragging him out of the city, stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their garments at the feet of a young man, named Saul. ⁵⁹And they stoned Stephen, in the act of prayer, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit! ⁶⁰Then falling on his knees, he cried with a loud voice, Lord, impute not to them this sin! And thus speaking, fell asleep.

CHAP. VIII.

B UT Saul was delighted with his execution.

Now on that very day commenced a great persecution against the church which was at Jerusalem; and all, besides the apostles, were dispersed through the regions of Judea and Samaria.

²Then some pious men assembling, carried Stephen to his grave, and made great lamentation over him.

³But Saul ravaged the church, entering into the houses, and dragging men and women, cast them into prison.

⁴Those therefore who were dispersed, travelled through the country, preaching the word. ⁵But Philip, going down to a city of Samaria, preached Christ unto them. ⁶And the multitudes with united minds were very attentive to the things spoken by Philip, when they heard him, and saw the miracles which he did. ⁷For the unclean spirits, roaring with great cries, came forth out of many who were possessed: and many who were paralytic and lame were healed. ⁸And there was great joy in that city.

⁹But a certain man, named Simon, lived previously in that city, who practised magic, and astonished the nation of Samaria, giving out himself as an extraordinary great personage: ¹⁰to whom all gave heed from the small to the great, saying, This man is the great power of God. ¹¹And to him they attended, because he had of a considerable time astonished them by his magical tricks. ¹²But when they believed Philip, who preached the glad tidings of the things which related to the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptised both men and women. ¹³Then Simon also himself believed: and being baptised, he attached himself to Philip, and beholding the signs and great miracles which were performed, he was astonished.

¹⁴But when the apostles who were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John: ¹⁵who, when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghost: ¹⁶for as yet he had not fallen on any one of them: only they had been baptised into the name of the Lord Jesus. ¹⁷Then they laid their hands upon them, and they received the Holy Ghost.

¹⁸Now when Simon saw, that by the imposition of the apostles' hands, the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money, ¹⁹saying, Confer on me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay my hands, they may receive the Holy Ghost. ²⁰But Peter said unto him, May thy silver with thyself go into perdition, because thou hast imagined that the gift of God can be purchased with money. ²¹There is for thee neither part nor lot in this word: for thy heart is not right before God. ²²Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray to God, if haply this thought of thy heart may be forgiven thee. ²³For I see that thou art in the gall of bitterness, and the bond of iniquity. ²⁴Then Simon answering said, Pray ye for me unto the Lord, that none of the things which ye have spoken may come upon me.

²⁵Then they, after bearing their testimony, and speaking the word of the Lord, returned towards Jerusalem, and preached the gospel in many villages of the Samaritans.

²⁶Now the angel of the Lord spake to Philip, saying, Arise, and go towards the south, on the road which leads down from Jerusalem to Gaza: it is a wilderness. ²⁷And he arose and went: and lo! an Ethiopian man, an eunuch, a person in power under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who was over all her treasury; he had gone to worship unto Jerusalem, ²⁸and was returning, and sitting in his chariot, was reading the prophet Isaiah. ²⁹Then said the Spirit to Philip, Go up, and approach close to that chariot. ³⁰Then Philip running up to him, heard him reading the prophet Isaiah; and he said, Well! but dost thou understand what thou art reading? ³¹He replied, How indeed can I, except some person guide me in the way? And he besought Philip to come up and sit with him. ³²The portion of scripture which he had been reading was this: "He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and as a lamb before him who sheareth it is dumb, so he opened not his mouth: ³³in his humiliation his judgment was taken away: but his generation who can describe? for his life was taken away from the earth³⁹." ³⁴Then the eunuch addressing himself to Philip, said, I pray thee, of whom doth the prophet thus speak? of himself, or of some other person? ³⁵Then Philip opening his mouth, and beginning from that scripture, preached to him Jesus. ³⁶But as they went on the road, they came to some water: and the eunuch said, Here is water, what forbids my being baptised? ³⁷And Philip said, If thou believest with the whole heart, it is allowable. Then he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. ³⁸And he bid the carriage stop: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptised him. ³⁹But when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught up Philip, and the eunuch saw him no more: then he went on his way rejoicing. ⁴⁰But Philip found himself at Azotus: and passing through he preached the gospel in all the cities, until he came to Cæsarea.

BUT Saul, still breathing out threatenings and murder against the disciples of the Lord, applying to the high-priest, ²besought of him letters for the synagogues at Damascus, that if he should find any persons of this way, whether men or women, he might bring them in chains to Jerusalem. ³So advancing on his journey, he was drawing nigh to Damascus: and suddenly there shone around him a light from heaven: ⁴and falling on the ground, he heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? ⁵Then said he, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou art persecuting: It is difficult for thee to kick against the goads. ⁶And trembling and amazed he said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.

⁷And the men who travelled with him stood astonished, hearing indeed a voice, but seeing no man. ⁸Then Paul arose from the earth; and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man: but leading him by the hand, they brought him into Damascus. ⁹And he was three days seeing nothing, and did neither eat nor drink.

¹⁰Now there was a certain disciple at Damascus named Ananias; and the Lord said unto him in a vision, Ananias! And he said, Here I am, Lord. ¹¹Then the Lord said to him, Arise, go into the street called Strait, and inquire at the house of Judas for one named Saul a man of Tarsus: for, behold, he is praying, ¹²and hath seen in a vision a man named Ananias coming to him, and laying his hand upon him, that he may recover his sight. ¹³But Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard from many of this man, how many evils he hath inflicted on thy saints at Jerusalem: ¹⁴and here he hath authority from the chief priests to bind all that call upon thy name. ¹⁵But the Lord said unto him, Go: for this man is an elect vessel for me, to bear my name before nations, and kings, and the children of Israel: ¹⁶for I will shew him how many things he must suffer for my name's sake.

¹⁷Then went Ananias, and entered into the house; and laying his hands upon him, said, Brother Saul, the Lord Jesus, who was seen by thee in the way that thou camest, hath sent me, that thou mightest recover thy sight, and be filled with the Holy Ghost. ¹⁸And directly there fell from his eyes as it were scales: and he recovered sight instantly, and arose, and was baptised. ¹⁹And when he had taken nourishment, he regained his strength. And Saul continued with the disciples who were at Damascus several days. ²⁰And immediately he preached Christ in the synagogues, that he is the Son of God. ²¹And all who heard him were amazed, and said, Is not this the man who made havoc at Jerusalem, among those who called on this name? and hither he came for this purpose, that he might carry them in chains unto the chief priests? ²²But Saul was endued with still greater power, and confounded the Jews who dwelt at Damascus, conclusively evincing that this person is the Messiah.

²³But when many days were fulfilled, the Jews consulted together how to kill him: ²⁴but their design was discovered to Saul. And they kept guard at the gates of the city day and night, that they might kill him. ²⁵But the disciples taking him by night, got him off through the wall, letting him down in a basket.

²⁶But when Saul was come to Jerusalem, he attempted to join the disciples: and they were all afraid of him, not crediting that he was a disciple. ²⁷Then Barnabas taking him by the hand, brought him to the apostles, and related to them how he had seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how boldly he had preached at Damascus in the name of Jesus. ²⁸And he was with them coming in, and going out at Jerusalem: ²⁹and speaking boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus. And he talked and disputed with the Grecian proselytes: but they made an attempt to murder him. ³⁰Then the brethren, when they knew it brought him down to Cæsarea, and sent him off to Tarsus.

³¹Then had the churches peace through all Judea and Galilee and Samaria, being edified; and walking in the fear of God, and in the consolation of the Holy Ghost, were multiplied.

³²Now it came to pass, as Peter was passing through all parts, that he went down also to the saints which dwelt at Lydda. ³³And found there a certain man named Æneas, during six years stretched on a bed, who was paralytic. ³⁴And Peter said to him, Æneas, Jesus the Messiah maketh thee whole: arise, and make thine own bed. And he arose immediately. ³⁵And all who dwelt at Lydda and Saron saw him, and they turned to the

Lord.

³⁶But there was at Joppa a woman, a disciple, named Tabitha, (which by interpretation is called Dorcas:) this woman was full of good works and of alms which she did. ³⁷But it came to pass that in those days she sickened and died: having then washed her, they laid her out in an upper room. ³⁸And as Lydda was near to Joppa, the disciples hearing that Peter was there, sent two men to him, entreating him without delay to come over to them. ³⁹Then Peter arose and went with them. And they carried him, on his arrival, into the upper room: and all the widows stood round him weeping, and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas had made, whilst she was with them. ⁴⁰But Peter putting them all out, fell upon his knees, and prayed; and turning to the body, said, Tabitha, arise! And she opened her eyes: and when she saw Peter, she sat up. ⁴¹Then he gave her his hand, and raised her up; and calling in the saints and the widows, presented her to them alive. ⁴²And it was known through all Joppa; and many believed on the Lord. ⁴³Then it came to pass, that he abode many days at Joppa with one Simon a tanner.

CHAP. X.

NOW there was a man at Cæsarea named Cornelius, a centurion of the cohort called the Italic, ²a man of piety, and who feared God with all his house, giving much alms to the people, and praying to God continually. ³He saw in a vision evidently about the ninth hour of the day an angel of God coming to him, and saying to him, Cornelius. ⁴Then looking stedfastly on him, and being terrified, he said, What means this, Lord? And he said unto him, Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God. ⁵And now send men to Joppa, and inquire for Simon, who is surnamed Peter: ⁶he lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is near the sea: this man will tell thee what thou must do. ⁷But when the angel departed who spake to Cornelius, he called two of his domestics, and a pious soldier, persons who constantly were in attendance upon him; ⁸and relating all things to them, sent them to Joppa.

⁹Then the next morning, as they were on their journey, and drew near to the city, Peter went up to the flat roof to pray about the sixth hour: ¹⁰and he grew very hungry, and desired something to eat: but whilst they were getting it ready, a sacred ecstasy fell upon him. ¹¹And he saw heaven opened, and there descended to him a certain vessel, as a great sheet with chains at the four corners, and resting upon the earth: ¹²in which were all the quadrupeds of the earth, and wild beasts, and reptiles, and birds of the air. ¹³And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter; slay and eat. ¹⁴But Peter said, By no means, Lord for I have never at any time eaten of any thing common or unclean. ¹⁵And the voice again a second time came to him, What God hath cleansed, call not thou unclean. ¹⁶This was thrice repeated: and the vessel was again taken up into heaven.

¹⁷But while Peter was perplexed in himself what was meant by the vision which he had seen, then, behold! the men which had been sent by Cornelius having inquired out the house of Simon, stood before the door, ¹⁸and calling, asked if Simon, surnamed Peter, lodged there. ¹⁹But while Peter was musing upon the vision, the Spirit said to him, Lo! three men are inquiring after thee. ²⁰Arise then, and go down, and go with them, entertaining no doubt, for I have sent them. ²¹Then Peter went down to the men who were sent by Cornelius to him; and said, Lo! I am the person that ye ask for: what is the business on which ye are come hither? ²²Then they said, Cornelius a centurion, a just man, and one that feareth God, and of good report with all the nation of the Jews, has been divinely admonished by a holy angel to send for thee to his house, to hear words from thee.

²³Then inviting them in, he lodged them there. And the next morning Peter went with them, and some of the brethren from Joppa accompanied him. ²⁴And the next day they entered into Cæsarea. Now Cornelius was expecting them, having called together his relations and nearest friends. ²⁵And as Peter was entering, Cornelius met him, and falling at his feet, paid him homage. ²⁶But Peter raised him up, saying, Arise; I also myself am a man. ²⁷And conversing with him, he entered, and found many assembled together.

²⁸And he said unto them, Ye know how contrary it is to established

usage, for a man who is a Jew to associate with or visit one of another nation; but God hath shewed me to call no man common or unclean. ²⁹Wherefore also without a word, I came when invited: I beg to know therefore for what purpose ye have sent for me?

³⁰Then Cornelius said, Four days ago I was fasting till this hour; and at the ninth hour I was praying in my house, and, lo! a man stood before me in shining apparel, ³¹and said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thy alms are remembered before God. ³²Send therefore to Joppa, and invite Simon, whose surname is Peter, to come to thee; he lodgeth in the house of Simon the tanner, near the sea: who, when he is come will talk with thee. ³³Immediately therefore I sent to thee; and thou hast done well in coming. Now therefore are all we here present before God, to hear all things that are given in charge to thee from God.

³⁴Then Peter opening his mouth, said, In truth I perceive that God is not a respecter of persons: ³⁵but in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is acceptable to him. ³⁶The word which he sent to the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ, (he is Lord of all,) ye know: ³⁷even that which was the common talk through all Judea, beginning from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached; ³⁸respecting Jesus, who was of Nazareth, how God had anointed him with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were tyrannically oppressed of the devil; for God was with him. ³⁹And we are witnesses of all things which he did both in the region of the Jews, and in Jerusalem; whom they killed suspending him on a tree: ⁴⁰him God raised up the third day, and ordained that he should be visibly manifested; ⁴¹not to all the people, but to witnesses chosen before of God, even to us, who did eat and drink with him after he was arisen from the dead. ⁴²And hath commanded us to proclaim to the people, and to bear our testimony that this is the person who is ordained of God the Judge of the living and the dead. ⁴³To him bear all the prophets witness, that through his name every one who believeth in him, shall receive remission of sins.

⁴⁴While Peter was yet speaking these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all who heard the discourse. ⁴⁵And they of the circumcision who were believers, as many as came with Peter, were amazed, because even on the Gentiles the gift of the holy Ghost was poured out. ⁴⁶For they heard them speaking in different languages, and magnifying God. Then Peter addressed them, ⁴⁷Can any one forbid the water for baptising these persons, who have received the Holy Ghost as well as we? ⁴⁸So he commanded them to be baptised in the name of the Lord. Then they entreated him to tarry there some days.

CHAP. XI.

NOW the apostles and brethren who were in Judea heard that the Gentiles also had received the word of God. ²And when Peter went up to Jerusalem, they of the circumcision disputed with him, ³saying, Thou hast gone in to men holding uncircumcision, and hast eaten with them.

⁴Then Peter taking up the matter from the beginning, explained it to them regularly, saying, ⁵I was in the city of Joppa praying and I saw in a trance a vision, a certain vessel descending as a vast sheet let down from heaven by its four corners; and it came close to me: ⁶on which looking attentively, I perceived, and saw the quadrupeds of the earth, and the wild beasts, and the reptiles, and the birds of the air. ⁷Then I heard a voice saying to me, Rise, Peter; slay and eat. ⁸But I said, By no means, Lord: for never yet hath any thing common or unclean entered into my mouth. ⁹But the voice replied the second time from heaven, What God hath cleansed, call not thou common. ¹⁰Now this was repeated thrice: and the whole withdrawn again into heaven. ¹¹And, lo! immediately three men stood before the house where I was, sent from Cæsarea unto me. ¹²And the Spirit bade me go with them, making no hesitation. But with me went also these six brethren, and we entered into the man's house: ¹³and he informed us how he had seen an angel in his house, standing and saying to him, Send men to Joppa, and invite Simon, who is surnamed Peter; ¹⁴who will speak words to thee, by which thou mayest be saved, and thy house. ¹⁵So when I had begun to speak, the Holy Ghost fell on them, just as on us at the beginning. ¹⁶Then I recollected the word of the Lord, how he had said, John indeed baptised with water; but ye

shall be baptised with the Holy Ghost. ¹⁷If God then gave an equal gift to them even as to us, on believing on the Lord Jesus Christ; I, indeed, who was I, that I should be able to restrain God?

¹⁸So when they heard these things they were satisfied, and glorified God, saying, Well! then hath God even to the Gentiles given repentance unto life.

¹⁹Now those also who were dispersed by the persecution which arose on account of Stephen passed on as far as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, speaking the word to no man except the Jews only. ²⁰And some of them were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, who, when they arrived at Antioch, spake to the Grecian proselytes, preaching the Lord Jesus. ²¹And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a vast multitude believing, turned to the Lord. ²²And the report concerning them was heard in the ears of the church which was at Jerusalem: and they dispatched Barnabas, to go as far as Antioch. ²³Who, when he arrived there, and beheld the grace of God, rejoiced, and exhorted them all, with full purpose of heart to adhere to the Lord. ²⁴For he was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost and of faith: and a great multitude was added to the Lord.

²⁵Then went forth Barnabas to Tarsus, in search of Saul: ²⁶and having found him, he brought him to Antioch. And it came to pass, that during a whole year they were jointly employed in that church, and taught a vast multitude, and they called for the first time in Antioch the disciples Christians. ²⁷Now there came down in those days prophets from Jerusalem to Antioch. ²⁸And one of them named Agabus, rising up, signified by the spirit that a great famine was coming upon the whole habitable globe: which also came in the reign of Claudius Cæsar. ²⁹Then the disciples, as everyman had ability, determined every individual of them to send a sum to be distributed among the brethren who dwelt in Judea: ³⁰which also they did, sending it off to the presbyters by the hand of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP. XII.

NOW at that time Herod the king stretched forth his hand to treat cruelly certain persons belonging to the church. ²And he slew James the brother of John with a sword. ³And seeing how agreeable this was to the Jews, he proceeded to seize Peter also. (Then were the days of unleavened bread.) ⁴Whom having apprehended, he put him in prison, delivering him to four quaternions of soldiers to keep guard over him; intending after the Passover to bring him forth to the people *for execution*. ⁵So then Peter was kept in prison: but fervent prayer was offered up by the church to God for him. ⁶Now when Herod was going to bring him forth, the same night was Peter fast asleep between the two soldiers, fastened to them with two chains: and the guards before the door kept the prison. ⁷And, lo! an angel of the Lord stood there, and light glared through the apartment: then with a stroke on Peter's side, he roused him up, and said, Arise quickly. And his chains fell from his hands. ⁸And the angel said to him, Gird thyself up, and bind on thy sandals. And he did so. And he said unto him, Wrap thyself in thy mantle, and follow me. ⁹And going out, he followed him; and knew not that it was a reality which was done by the angel; but he supposed he saw a vision. ¹⁰So passing through the first ward and the second, they came to the iron door which leads into the city, which opened to them spontaneously: and being come out, they walked forward through one street; and immediately the angel departed from him. ¹¹And Peter coming to himself, said, Now I know assuredly, that the Lord hath sent his angel, and hath delivered me from the hand of Herod, and all the eager expectation of the people of the Jews. ¹²And after considering with himself, he went to the house of Mary the mother of John, who is surnamed Mark; where many were thronged together, and praying. ¹³Peter then knocking at the door of the gateway, there came a damsel to ask who was there, named Rhoda. ¹⁴And well knowing Peter's voice, she opened not the door for joy; but running in, told that Peter was standing before the door. ¹⁵But they said, Thou art raving. But she confidently persisted that it was so. Then they said, It is his angel. ¹⁶But Peter continued knocking: and they opened the door and saw him, and were astonished. ¹⁷Then beckoning with the hand that they should be silent, he informed them in what manner the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Tell James and the brethren these things. And

departing thence he went into another place.

¹⁸Now when the day broke, there was no small stir among the soldiers, what could possibly become of Peter. ¹⁹And Herod sought him out earnestly, but not being able to find him, after having examined the guards strictly, he commanded them to be executed. And going down from Jerusalem to Cæsarea, took up his abode there.

²⁰Now Herod was fiercely bent on war against the Tyrians and Sidonians: but they presented themselves unanimously before him, and ingratiating themselves with Blastus who was over the king's bedchamber, they begged for peace; because their country received all their supply of provisions from the king's territories. ²¹Then on a day appointed, Herod, arrayed in royal apparel, and seated on his throne, made an harangue unto them. ²²And the populace shouted, It is the voice of a god, and not a man. ²³But instantly the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not the glory to God: and being devoured with worms, he expired.

²⁴But the word of the Lord increased, and was widely diffused. ²⁵Then Barnabas and Saul departed from Jerusalem, having completed the distribution *of the sum entrusted with them*; and they took with them John, whose surname was Mark.

CHAP. XIII.

NOW there were at Antioch, according to the established church, prophets and teachers; such as Barnabas, and Simeon called Niger the black, and Lucius a Cyrenian, and Manaen, Herod the tetrarch's foster-brother, and Saul. ²And as they were employed in the ministry, and kept a fast, the Holy Ghost said, Set apart for me now both Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them. ³Then having kept a fast and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them out. ⁴They then being sent forth indeed by the Holy Ghost, went down to Seleucia; and from thence sailed to Cyprus. ⁵And being at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews: and they had John also as their attendant. ⁶Now as they travelled through the island as far as Paphos, they found a certain person who professed magic, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name was Bar-jesus: ⁷who was with the proconsul Sergius Paulus, an intelligent man; he inviting to his house Barnabas and Saul, desired earnestly to hear the word of God. ⁸But Elymas the magician (for such is his name when interpreted) opposed them, seeking to pervert the proconsul from the faith. ⁹Then Saul (now Paul), filled with the Holy Ghost, and fixing his eyes upon him, ¹⁰said, O thou full of all guile and all mischief, thou child of the devil, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease perverting the strait ways of the Lord? ¹¹And now, behold, the hand of the Lord is upon thee, and thou shalt be blind, seeing the sun no more for a season. And instantly there fell on him a thick mist and darkness; and groping about he sought some to lead him by the hand. ¹²Then when the proconsul saw what was done, he believed, being struck with the doctrine of the Lord.

¹³Hereupon sailing from Paphos, they who were about Paul came to Perga in Pamphylia: but John departing from them returned to Jerusalem. ¹⁴And they departed from Perga, and came to Antioch in Pisidia, and entering into the synagogue on the sabbath-day, they sat down. ¹⁵Then after the reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogues sent to them, saying, Men and brethren, if ye are disposed to give a word of exhortation to the people, speak.

¹⁶Then Paul arose, and waving his hand, said, Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, hear me. ¹⁷The God of this people Israel selected our fathers, and exalted the people during their abode in the land of Egypt, and with a mighty arm brought he them out of it. ¹⁸And about the space of forty years he bore with their behaviour in the wilderness. ¹⁹And destroying seven nations in the land of Canaan, he distributed their territory to them by lot. ²⁰And after these things, during a space of about four hundred and fifty years, he gave them judges until Samuel the prophet. ²¹And from that time they desired a king: and God gave them Saul the son of Kis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, during forty years. ²²And removing him, he raised up unto them David to be king; respecting whom also he spake testifying, "I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after my own heart, who shall perform all my intentions⁴⁰." ²³From this man's seed according to the promise hath God raised up to Israel a Saviour, Jesus: ²⁴John having preached before his first coming the

baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel. ²⁵But as John was finishing his course, he said, Whom do ye suppose me to be? I am not *the Messiah*. But, behold! he is coming after me, the sandals of whose feet I am not worthy to loose. ²⁶Men and brethren, children of the race of Abraham, and all among you who fear God, to you is the word of this salvation sent. ²⁷For they who dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, being ignorant of him, and the words of the prophets that are read every sabbath-day, by condemning him have fulfilled them. ²⁸And though they found no cause of death in him, they besought Pilate that he might be killed. ²⁹But when they had finished all things that were written of him, they took him down from the tree, and laid him in a sepulchre. ³⁰But God raised him from the dead: ³¹and he was seen many days by those who went up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are his witnesses to the people. ³²And we preach to you the promise made to our fathers; ³³for this hath God fulfilled to their children, even to us, in raising up Jesus: as it is also written in the second Psalm, "Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee⁴¹." ³⁴But that he raised him from the dead, no more in future to return to corruption, he hath thus spoken, "I will give you the holy things of David, which are sure⁴²." ³⁵Wherefore also he saith in another place, "Thou wilt not permit thy Holy One to see corruption⁴³."
³⁶For David indeed, after having served his own generation by the will of God, fell asleep, and was placed with his fathers, and saw corruption. ³⁷But he, whom God raised up, saw no corruption. ³⁸Be it therefore known unto you, men and brethren, that through this man remission of sin is proclaimed to you: ³⁹and by this man shall every one who believeth be justified from all things, from which it was not possible that he should be justified by the law of Moses. ⁴⁰Take heed then, that this come not upon you, which is spoken by the prophets; ⁴¹"Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I do a work in your days, a work which ye shall in no wise believe, though one declare it unto you⁴⁴."

⁴²But when the Jews were going out of the synagogue, the Gentiles entreated that these words might be spoken to them the following sabbath. ⁴³And when the synagogue was dismissed, many of the Jews and of the devout proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas: who, exhorting them, persuaded them to abide stedfast in the grace of God.

⁴⁴And on the next sabbath almost all the city thronged together to hear the word of God. ⁴⁵But the Jews seeing the multitude, were filled with envy, and opposed the things spoken by Paul, contradicting and reviling. ⁴⁶Then Paul and Barnabas speaking with undaunted boldness, said, It was necessary that the word of God should be first spoken unto you: but since ye have thrust it from you, and judged yourselves not worthy of eternal life, lo! we turn to the Gentiles. ⁴⁷For so hath the Lord enjoined us, "I have set thee for a light of the Gentiles, that thou mightest be for salvation unto the extremity of the earth⁴⁵." ⁴⁸Now when the Gentiles heard this, they rejoiced, and glorified the word of the Lord: and they believed, even as many as were ordained to life eternal. ⁴⁹So the word of the Lord was diffused through the whole region.

⁵⁰Then the Jews stirred up the devout women, and those who were respectable, and the principal persons of the city, and raised up a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and cast them out of their borders. ⁵¹But they, shaking off the dust of their feet against them, came to Iconium. ⁵²And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the Holy Ghost.

CHAP. XIV.

NOW it came to pass at Iconium, that they went together into the synagogue of the Jews, and spake in such a manner, as that a vast multitude both of the Jews and Greek proselytes believed. ²But the unbelieving Jews stirred up, and maliciously prejudiced the spirits of the Gentiles against the brethren. ³A long space therefore continued they there speaking boldly in the Lord, who bore witness to the word of his grace, and granted signs and miracles to be wrought by their hands. ⁴So the multitude was divided: some indeed were with the Jews, but others with the apostles. ⁵And when there was a strong effort made both by the Gentiles and Jews with their rulers to ill-treat and stone them, ⁶conscious of their danger, they fled unto the cities of Lycaonia, Lystra, and Derbe, and the circum-jacent country: ⁷and there they preached the gospel.

⁸And there was a certain man at Lystra, who having lost the use of his

feet was sitting, being lame from his mother's womb, and who had never been able to walk: ⁹this person heard Paul speaking; who fixing his eyes on him, and discovering that he had faith to be healed, ¹⁰said with a loud voice, Stand up firm on thy feet! And he leaped and walked. ¹¹But when the multitudes beheld what Paul had done, they lifted up their voice, in the dialect of Lycaonia, saying, The gods in the form of mortals are come down to us. ¹²And they called Barnabas, Jupiter; and Paul, Mercury, because he principally led the discourse.

¹³Then the priest of Jupiter, who was the presiding deity of their city, brought bulls and garlands unto the gates of the city, and intended to offer a sacrifice with the people. ¹⁴But when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul, heard it, they rent their garments, and rushed into the crowd, crying out, ¹⁵and saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We too are mortals subject to the same infirmities with you; preaching to you the gospel, that ye should turn from these vain things unto the living God, who made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things which are therein: ¹⁶who in the past generations hath suffered all nations to walk in their own ways. ¹⁷Although indeed he left not himself untestified of, doing us good, giving us from heaven showers, and fruitful seasons, replenishing our hearts with food and gladness. ¹⁸And thus speaking, scarce restrained they the multitudes from offering the sacrifice to them.

¹⁹Then came the Jews from Antioch and Iconium, and gaining over the multitudes, they stoned Paul, and dragged him out of the city, supposing him to be dead. ²⁰But as the disciples stood around him, he arose, and entered into the city: and on the morrow he departed with Barnabas for Derbe. ²¹And after preaching the gospel in that city, and bringing many to become disciples, they returned to Lystra, and Iconium, and Antioch; ²²strengthening the souls of the brethren, exhorting them to abide firm in the faith, and that through many afflictions we must pass into the kingdom of heaven. ²³Then appointing them presbyters in every city, by prayer with fastings they commended them to the Lord, on whom they had believed.

²⁴Then passing through Pisidia, they came unto Pamphylia. ²⁵And having spoken the word in Perga, they went down to Attalia: ²⁶and thence sailed for Antioch, from whence they had been commended to the grace of God for the service which they had performed. ²⁷So when they arrived they called the church together, and related what great things God had done by them, and that he had opened to the heathen the door of faith.

²⁸And there they abode no inconsiderable time with the disciples.

CHAP. XV.

AND certain persons coming down from Judea taught the brethren, That if ye are not circumcised according to the ordinances of Moses, ye cannot be saved. ²There being therefore no small contention and dispute maintained by Paul and Barnabas against them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain others of their body, should go up to the apostles and presbyters at Jerusalem, for the decision of this question. ³They therefore being sent on their way by the church, passed through Phœnicia and Samaria, giving a particular narrative of the conversion of the Gentiles: and they gave great joy to all the brethren. ⁴Then when they arrived at Jerusalem, they were cordially received by the church, and the apostles and presbyters, and they related how great things God had done by them. ⁵But up rose some of the pharisaical sect, who professed the faith, insisting, That it was necessary to circumcise them, and to enjoin them to observe the law of Moses. ⁶Then the apostles and presbyters were assembled to consider of this matter. ⁷When after much dispute, Peter arose, and said unto them,

Men and brethren, ye know that a considerable time ago God chose among us, by my mouth, that the Gentiles should hear the gospel-word, and believe. ⁸And God, who is the discernor of the heart, bore them witness, giving them the Holy Ghost, even as to us; ⁹and made no difference betwixt either us or them, purifying their hearts by faith. ¹⁰Why then now tempt ye God, by imposing a yoke on the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear? ¹¹But we believe that we shall be saved by the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, in the same way as they. ¹²Then the whole multitude kept silence, and listened to Barnabas and Paul, relating how great signs and miracles God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

¹³Now when they ceased speaking, James replied, saying, Men and brethren, hear me: ¹⁴Simon hath fully related, how at first God graciously looked upon *the Gentiles*, to take from them a people for his name. ¹⁵And in accord with this are the words of the prophets; as it is written, ¹⁶“After this will I return, and build again the tabernacle of David, that is fallen; and re-edify what hath been dug up from the foundation, and will set it upright again: ¹⁷that the residue of men may diligently seek the Lord, and all the Gentiles, among whom my name is invoked, even among them, saith the Lord, who doth all these things⁴⁶.” ¹⁸Known unto God from the beginning are all his works. ¹⁹Therefore I am decided, that we give no unnecessary disquietude to those who from the heathen have turned to God: ²⁰but that we write to them, that they abstain from pollutions of idol *sacrifices*, and from whoredom, and from what is strangled, and from blood. ²¹For Moses for ages past in every city hath those who preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath-day.

²²Then it was determined by the apostles and presbyters with the whole church, to send select men from themselves unto Antioch with Paul and Barnabas; Judas surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, leading men among the brethren; ²³writing a letter by their hand, in these words:

The apostles and presbyters and the brethren, to the brethren from among the Gentiles which are at Antioch, and in Syria, and Cilicia, greeting: ²⁴Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain persons who went out from us have disturbed you with discourses, unsettling your minds, insisting, that you should be circumcised, and observe the law: to whom we gave no such charge: ²⁵it hath seemed fit to us, assembled unanimously, to send unto you select men with our beloved Barnabas and Paul, ²⁶men who have hazarded their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. ²⁷We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, and they by word of mouth will tell you the same things. ²⁸For it hath seemed good to the Holy Ghost and to us, to lay upon you no other burden except these things which are of absolute necessity; ²⁹that ye abstain from eating whatever is sacrificed to idols, and from blood, and from what is strangled, and from whoredom: from which things carefully preserving yourselves, ye shall do well. Farewell.

³⁰They then being thus dispatched, came to Antioch: and assembling the multitude, they delivered the letter: ³¹and when they had read it, they rejoiced in the consolation *of it*.

³²Then Judas and Silas, being also themselves prophets, exhorted the brethren, in many a discourse, and established them. ³³And having stayed their time, they were dismissed in peace from the brethren to the apostles. ³⁴However Silas thought proper to abide there. ³⁵Paul also and Barnabas abode at Antioch, teaching and preaching, with many others also, the word of the Lord.

³⁶Then after certain days said Paul to Barnabas, Let us now return and visit our brethren in every city among whom we have preached the word of the Lord, that we may see how they hold on. ³⁷Now Barnabas had resolved to take with him John, whose surname is Mark. ³⁸But Paul did not think him a fit person to take with them, who had withdrawn from them from Pamphylia, and no longer went with them to the service. ³⁹So there grew up a sudden quarrel, insomuch that they separated from each other: and Barnabas, taking Mark with him, sailed away to Cyprus: ⁴⁰but Paul selecting Silas, departed, being commended by the brethren to the favour of God. ⁴¹And he passed through Syria and Cilicia, confirming the churches.

CHAP. XVI.

THEN he came to Derbe and Lystra: and, behold! a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain Jewish woman, who believed; but his father was a Greek: ²who was highly spoken of by the brethren at Lystra and Iconium. ³Him Paul resolved to take out with him; and took and circumcised him because of the Jews who were in those places: for they all knew his father, that he was a Greek. ⁴So as they passed through the cities, they delivered to them for their observance the ordinances decreed by the apostles and presbyters that were at Jerusalem.

⁵Then were the churches established truly in the faith, and increased in number daily. ⁶So passing through Phrygia and the region of Galatia,

being forbidden by the Holy Ghost to speak the word in Asia, ⁷coming as far as Mysia, they made an effort to go unto Bythinia: but the Spirit permitted them not. ⁸Whereupon passing by Mysia they went down to Troas. ⁹And a vision by night appeared to Paul; a certain man, a Macedonian, stood by him, entreating him, and saying, Pass over into Macedonia, and help us. ¹⁰But when he saw the vision, immediately we sought to go forth into Macedonia, concluding that the Lord had called us to preach the gospel to them. ¹¹Therefore sailing from Troas, we came in a direct course to Samothrace, and the next day to Neapolis; ¹²and from thence to Philippi, which is the first city in that part of Macedonia, and a colony: and we abode in that city some days.

¹³And on the sabbath-day we went forth out of the city to the river side, where an oratory was by custom established; and sitting down, we spoke to the women who there assembled. ¹⁴And a certain woman, Lydia by name, a seller of purple, from the city of Thyatira, a worshipper of God, hearkened: whose heart the Lord thoroughly opened, to attend to the words spoken by Paul. ¹⁵So when she was baptised, and her house, she entreated, saying, Since ye have judged that I am faithful to the Lord, come and abide at my house. And she constrained us.

¹⁶Now it happened as we were going to the oratory, a certain damsel having a pythonic spirit met us, who produced for her masters much gain as a fortuneteller: ¹⁷she following Paul and us, cried out, saying, These men are the servants of the most high God, who preach to you the way of salvation. ¹⁸And this she did for several days. Then Paul was wearied out, and turning, said to the spirit, I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out that very hour. ¹⁹But when her masters saw that the hope of their gain was gone, they laid hold on Paul and Silas, and dragged them into the forum before the chief rulers, ²⁰and presenting them to the magistrates, they said, These are the men that exceedingly disturb the peace of our city, being Jews, ²¹and enjoin customs which it is not lawful for us to receive, or to practise, being Romans. ²²And the populace stood up together against them: and the magistrates, after having had their garments torn from their backs, commanded them to be beaten with rods. ²³And laying on them many stripes, cast them into prison, commanding the jailor to keep them in safe custody: ²⁴who, receiving such an injunction, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks. ²⁵But about midnight Paul and Silas, after joining in prayer, sang hymns to God: and the prisoners heard them. ²⁶And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the very foundations of the prison were shaken: and instantly all the doors flew open, and every man's chains were loosed. ²⁷Then the jailor being roused from sleep, and seeing the doors of the prison open, drew his sword, going to destroy himself, supposing the prisoners had escaped. ²⁸But Paul called out with a loud voice, saying, Do thyself no injury: for we are all here. ²⁹Thereupon calling for a light, he rushed in, and fell down trembling before Paul and Silas; ³⁰and having first brought them out, said, Sirs! what must I do to be saved? ³¹And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, thou, and thy house. ³²And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all who were in his house. ³³And taking them that same hour of the night, he washed their stripes; and was baptised, himself and all who belonged to him immediately. ³⁴And when he had brought them into his house, he spread the table, and greatly rejoiced with all his household, believing in God.

³⁵But when it was day, the magistrates sent the lictors, saying, Set those men at large. ³⁶Then the jailor told these words to Paul, That the magistrates had sent to set them at liberty: now therefore, *said he*, get ye out, and pursue your journey in peace. ³⁷But Paul said to them, They have beaten us publicly, uncondemned, men that are Roman citizens, and have cast us into prison; and would they now clandestinely send us away? no, verily; but let them come themselves and fetch us out. ³⁸Then the lictors reported all these words to the magistrates: and they were terrified, when they heard they were Roman citizens. ³⁹So they came and spoke kindly to them, and fetching them out, besought them to depart from the city. ⁴⁰Then leaving the prison, they went unto Lydia: and when they had seen the brethren, they comforted them, and went their way.

SO journeying through Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where there was a synagogue of Jews: ²And Paul, according to his usual custom, went in to them, and for three sabbaths he reasoned with them from the scriptures, ³opening them clearly, and laying it evidently down that the Messiah must suffer, and rise again from the dead; and that this man is the Messiah, even Jesus, whom I preach unto you. ⁴And some of them believed, and associated themselves with Paul and Silas; and of the religious Greeks a vast multitude, and of the wives of the first people not a few. ⁵But the unbelieving Jews, roused to a fit of zeal, and taking some of the lowest vulgar men of vile characters, and raising a mob, set the city in an uproar, and besetting the house of Jason, sought them to bring them unto the people. ⁶But not finding them there, they dragged Jason and certain brethren to the city magistrates, roaring out, These are the men who are movers of sedition through the world, and are come in hither; ⁷whom Jason has entertained in his house: and the practice of all these fellows is in direct opposition to all Cæsar's ordinances, for they affirm that another is king, one Jesus. ⁸And they greatly agitated the people and the city magistrates when they heard these things. ⁹So after taking sufficient security from Jason and the rest, they dismissed them.

¹⁰Then the disciples immediately by night sent off both Paul and Silas to Berea; who were no sooner arrived, than they went into the synagogue of the Jews. ¹¹Now these were more liberally minded men than those of Thessalonica, for they received the word with all readiness of mind, daily, examining the Scriptures if these things were really so. ¹²Then many of them truly believed: and of the Grecian proselyte women of respectability, and of the men not a few.

¹³But when the Jews of Thessalonica knew that at Berea also the word of God was preached by Paul, they came thither, and stirred up the populace. ¹⁴Then immediately on this the brethren sent off Paul, to go as if by sea: but Silas and Timothy abode there still. ¹⁵And those who conducted Paul brought him as far as Athens, and receiving an injunction for Silas and Timothy that they should come to him as speedily as possible, they departed.

¹⁶Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit within him was greatly grieved, beholding the city so devoted to idolatry. ¹⁷Therefore he reasoned in the synagogue with the Jews, and those who worshipped there, and in the forum every day with those he happened to meet.

¹⁸Then certain of the Epicurean and Stoic philosophers attacked him: and some said, What will this chattering fellow say? but others, He seemeth to be a preacher of foreign deities, because he preached to them Jesus and the resurrection. ¹⁹So they took him and led him to the hill of Mars, saying, May we know what this novel doctrine taught by thee is? ²⁰For thou bringest some strange stories to our ears; we wish therefore to know what these things mean. ²¹Now all the Athenians and the strangers who come to sojourn there, take pleasure in spending their time in nothing else but in talking, or hearing of some novelty.

²²Then Paul standing in the midst of the Areopagus said, Ye men of Athens, I observe that in all things ye are too much devoted to the worship of dæmons. ²³For as I walked about, and attentively viewed the objects of your worship, I found even an altar on which was this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore you in ignorance adore, him I preach unto you. ²⁴The God who created the world, and all things in it, he that is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples of man's construction; ²⁵nor is he served by human hands, as if he needed any creature, himself imparting to all beings life, and breath, and all things. ²⁶And hath made from one man's blood all the nations of mankind, to dwell upon the whole face of the earth, fixing the predetermined periods of their existence, and the boundaries of their several abodes; ²⁷that they should seek the Lord, if indeed they might haply grope him out, and find him, though truly he is not far from any individual of us: ²⁸for from him we derive life, and power of motion, and existence; as also some of your own poets have said, "For we are even his offspring." ²⁹Being then the offspring of God, we ought not to imagine that the Divinity is like to gold, or silver, or stone sculptured by human art or contrivance. ³⁰These times indeed of ignorance God then overlooked; but he now commands all men in every place to repent: ³¹because he hath fixed the day in which he will judge the whole world in righteousness by the man whom he hath appointed; affording evidence of this to all, by raising him from the dead.

³²But when they heard of the resurrection from the dead, Some scoffed: and others said, We will hear thee again on this subject. ³³And so Paul departed from the midst of them. ³⁴But certain persons cleaving to him, believed: among whom was even Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

CHAP. XVIII.

AND after these transactions, Paul departing from Athens, came to Corinth; ²and finding a certain Jew named Aquila, a native of Pontus, lately arrived from Italy, with Priscilla his wife, (because Claudius had issued an order that all Jews should depart from Rome,) he turned in to them. ³And as he was of the same occupation, he abode with them, and worked, (for by trade they were tent-makers:) ⁴and he discoursed in the synagogue every sabbath-day, and persuaded both the Jews and the Greek proselytes. ⁵And when Silas and Timothy were come from Macedonia, Paul felt a strong impulse on his spirit, and forcibly testified to the Jews, that Jesus was the Messiah. ⁶But as they continued opposing and blaspheming, he shook his garments, and said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads; I am pure from it: from this moment will I go to the Gentiles. ⁷And departing thence, he came to the house of a person, called Justus, one who worshipped God, whose house was contiguous to the synagogue. ⁸But Crispus, the ruler of the synagogue, believed in the Lord with all his house: and many of the Corinthians hearing, believed, and were baptised. ⁹Then spake the Lord in a vision by night to Paul, Fear not, but speak; and hold not thy peace: ¹⁰for I am with thee, and no man shall set himself against thee to do thee harm; because I have much people in this city. ¹¹And he sat down there a year and six months, teaching among them the word of God.

¹²But when Gallio was the proconsul of Achaia, the Jews, with one accord, rose up against Paul, and brought him to the judgment-seat, ¹³saying, This is the fellow that earnestly persuades men to worship God contrary to the law. ¹⁴Then Paul being about to open his mouth, Gallio said to the Jews, ¹⁵If indeed this was now a matter of injustice, or wicked knavery, with reason I should hear you patiently; but if it be merely a controversy about the word, and names, and a law peculiar to yourselves, settle it yourselves: for I will be no judge of these matters. ¹⁶And he drove them from the judgment-seat. ¹⁷Then all the Greeks laid hold on Sosthenes the ruler of the synagogue, and beat him before the tribunal. And Gallio paid no regard to any of these things.

¹⁸Then Paul abode there yet many days, and taking leave of the disciples, he set sail for Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila; having cut off his hair at Cenchrea: for he had a vow. ¹⁹And he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he himself went into the synagogue, and discoursed with the Jews. ²⁰But when they were importunate with him to prolong his stay among them, he consented not; ²¹but took his leave of them, saying, I must by any means keep the approaching feast at Jerusalem: but I mean to return to you again, if God so please. So he sailed from Ephesus. ²²And landing at Cesarea, he went up, and having saluted the church *at Jerusalem*, he went down to Antioch. ²³And after making some stay, he departed, passing in regular order through the Galatian district, and Phrygia, confirming all the disciples.

²⁴Now a certain Jew named Apollos, an Alexandrian by birth, a man of eloquence, who was powerful in the Scriptures, had come to Ephesus. ²⁵He was instructed in the way of the Lord: and being fervent in spirit, he spake and taught very diligently the things concerning the Lord, though knowing only the baptism of John. ²⁶So this man began to speak with great boldness in the synagogue: but when Aquila and Priscilla heard him, they took him home with them, and more accurately expounded to him the way of the Lord. ²⁷And when he wished to pass over to Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him; who arriving, contributed much to *confirm* those who believed through grace. ²⁸For he strenuously argued with the Jews in public, demonstrating by the Scriptures that Jesus is the Messiah.

CHAP. XIX.

NOW it came to pass that during the time Apollos was at Corinth, Paul, after passing through the upper provinces, came to Ephesus; and finding certain disciples, ²said unto them, Have ye received the Holy

Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him, We have not even heard if the Holy Ghost is *given*. ³And he asked them, Into what then were ye baptised? And they replied, Into John's baptism. ⁴Then said Paul, John indeed baptised with the baptism of repentance, saying to the people, That they should believe on him who was coming after him, that is, in Christ Jesus. ⁵Now when they heard it, they were baptised into the name of the Lord Jesus. ⁶And Paul laying on them his hands, the Holy Ghost came upon them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied. ⁷And the men were in all about twelve. ⁸And entering into the synagogue, he spake boldly during three months, reasoning and persuading the things that concern the kingdom of God. ⁹And when some were hardened, and infidel, speaking evil of the way before the people, he withdrew from them, and separated the disciples, discoursing daily in the school of one Tyrannus. ¹⁰And this he did for two years; so that all who dwelt in Asia heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews and Greeks. ¹¹And God wrought by the hands of Paul extraordinary miracles; ¹²so that even from his skin there were brought handkerchiefs and aprons unto the diseased, and their disorders were chased from them, and the evil spirits came out of them.

¹³Then certain of the Jews, who went about as exorcists, attempted to make mention of the name of the Lord Jesus over those who had evil spirits, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth. ¹⁴And they were seven sons of Sceva a Jew, a chief priest, who did this. ¹⁵Then the evil spirit replied, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? ¹⁶And the man sprang upon them, in whom was the evil spirit, and getting the mastery over them, prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded. ¹⁷And this was known to all, both Jews and Greeks, who dwelt at Ephesus: and fear fell on them all, and they magnified the name of the Lord. ¹⁸And many of those who believed came, confessing and declaring their practices. ¹⁹And many of those who practised magical arts brought the books, and burned them before all men; and they calculated the prices of them, and found them worth fifty thousand pieces of silver. ²⁰So mightily did the word of God increase and prevail.

²¹Now when these things were accomplished, Paul purposed by the Spirit, passing through Macedonia and Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying, That after I have been there, I must see Rome also. ²²Then he dispatched into Macedonia two of those who attended upon him, Timothy and Erastus; while he himself continued a while longer in Asia. ²³And there happened at that time no small disturbance about this way. ²⁴For a person named Demetrius, a silversmith, who made little temples in silver to represent that of Diana, brought to the artificers no small gain; ²⁵whom collecting together, with the workmen also of such trinkets, he said, Sirs, ye know that by this employment we make our advantageous livelihood: ²⁶and ye see and hear how not only at Ephesus, but almost through all Asia, this fellow Paul, by his persuasions, hath perverted a vast multitude, affirming that they are not gods which are made with hands: ²⁷so that not only is this our trade in danger of falling into contempt, but also that this temple of the great goddess Diana should be counted as nothing, and that henceforth also her magnificence should be utterly destroyed, whom all Asia and the whole world worshippeth. ²⁸On hearing this then, and being filled with rage, they cried out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians. ²⁹And the whole city was filled with confusion; and they rushed unanimously into the theatre, dragging with them Gaius and Aristarchus, Macedonians, Paul's travelling companions. ³⁰But though Paul wished to go in to the people, the disciples would not permit him. ³¹And some of the Asiarchs also, who were his friends, sent unto him, admonishing him not to venture himself into the theatre. ³²So they were crying out some one thing and some another: for the assembly was a scene of confusion, and the greater part knew not on what account they were collected together. ³³Then out of the crowd they brought forward Alexander, the Jews pushing him on: and Alexander, waving his hand, would fain have addressed his apology to the people. ³⁴But when they knew he was a Jew, one shout burst from all, crying for about the space of two hours, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

³⁵Then the recorder having quieted the multitude, said, Men of Ephesus, who indeed is the man that doth not know that the city of the Ephesians is wholly devoted to the great goddess Diana, and to the image which fell down from Jupiter? ³⁶These things being then

incontrovertible, it becomes you to be quiet, and to do nothing with precipitation. ³⁷For ye have brought hither these men, neither robbers of the temple, nor blasphemers of your goddess. ³⁸If then indeed Demetrius and the artificers that are with him have a charge against any man, the courts are held, and there are proconsuls: let them implead one another. ³⁹And if ye have any dispute about other matters, it shall be terminated in a lawful assembly, ⁴⁰For we are even in danger of being called to account for this day's insurrection, there being no cause on account of which we can justify this tumultuary concourse: ⁴¹and so saying, he dissolved the assembly.

CHAP. XX.

THEN after the tumult was quieted, Paul called to him the disciples, and taking his leave, departed to go into Macedonia. ²And passing through those parts, and having exhorted them with much discourse, he went into Greece. ³And after three months stay, as the Jews were lying in wait for him, when he was just embarking for Syria, he determined to return through Macedonia. ⁴And there accompanied him as far as Asia, Sopater a Berean; and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus and Secundus; and Gaius of Derbe, and Timothy; and Tychicus and Trophimus, Asiatics. ⁵These going before tarried for us at Troas. ⁶And we sailed from Philippi after the days of unleavened bread, and came to them to Troas after five days; where we stayed seven days. ⁷And on the first day of the week, when the disciples were assembled to break bread, Paul preached unto them (ready to depart on the morrow), and extended his discourse until midnight. ⁸Now there were many lamps in the upper room, where they were assembled. ⁹And a certain youth named Eutycthus, who sat in the window, fell into a profound sleep: as Paul discoursed much longer than usual, quite overpowered with sleep, he fell down from a third story, and was taken up dead. ¹⁰But Paul came down, and fell upon him, and taking him in his arms, said, Trouble not yourselves, for his life is yet in him. ¹¹And when he had gone up, and broken bread, and eaten, and conversed a long time, even to the break of day, he then departed. ¹²And they brought the lad alive, and were comforted exceedingly.

¹³Then we going before to the ship, sailed for Assos, intending there to take in Paul: for so he had ordered, meaning himself to walk thither. ¹⁴And when he met us at Assos, we took him up, and came to Mytelene. ¹⁵And sailing from thence, on the following day we advanced over against Chios; and the next day we touched at Samos, and staying at Trogyllium, the day following we came to Miletus. ¹⁶For Paul had determined to sail by Ephesus, that he might not spend the time in Asia: for he hastened on, if it was possible for him, to be at Jerusalem on the day of Pentecost. ¹⁷So he sent to Ephesus from Miletus, and called the presbyters of the church to attend him. ¹⁸And when they were come unto him, he said unto them,

Ye know, from the very first day in which I entered into Asia, how I have been among you at every season, ¹⁹-serving the Lord with all humility, and with many tears and trials, which have befallen me through the lying in wait of the Jews: ²⁰and that I have suppressed nothing which could conduce to your profiting; not desisting from preaching to you, and teaching you in public, and from house to house, ²¹repeatedly urging both on Jews and Greeks repentance towards God, and faith towards our Lord Jesus Christ. ²²And now behold I am going, bound by the Spirit, unto Jerusalem, not knowing what things shall there befall me: ²³only this, that the Holy Ghost witnesseth in every city, saying, that bonds and tribulation await thee. ²⁴Yet I make no account of any *suffering*, nor regard my life as of any value to myself, farther than as I may finish my course with joy, and the ministry which I have received of the Lord, to testify fully the Gospel of the grace of God. ²⁵And now behold, I know that ye shall see my face no more, even ye all, among whom I have gone in and out preaching the kingdom of God. ²⁶Wherefore I appeal to you this day as witnesses that I am pure from the blood of all men. ²⁷For I have concealed nothing, so as not repeatedly to declare to you the whole counsel of God. ²⁸Take heed therefore to yourselves, and to all the flock, over which the Holy Ghost hath made you bishops, to feed as shepherds the church of God, which he purchased with his own blood. ²⁹For this I know, that after my departure there will come among you grievous wolves, not sparing the flock: ³⁰Yea, from among yourselves shall men

arise, speaking perverting doctrines, to draw away disciples after them. ³¹Therefore watch, remembering that for three years, by night and by day, I have never ceased with tears to admonish every individual. ³²And now, brethren, I commit you to God and to the word of his grace, which is able to finish the superstructure, and to give you an inheritance among all those who are sanctified. ³³The silver, or gold, or apparel of no man have I coveted: ³⁴but ye yourselves know that these hands have by labour furnished necessaries for my own wants, and for those who were with me. ³⁵In all things I have set you the example, that so labouring hard ye ought to help the infirm, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, because he himself said, "It is more blessed to give than to receive."

³⁶And when he had spoken these things, he fell on his knees, and prayed with them all. ³⁷And all of them shed floods of tears, and fell upon Paul's neck, and kissed him again and again, ³⁸most peculiarly afflicted at that word which he had spoken, that they should see his face no more: and they accompanied him unto the ship.

CHAP. XXI.

AND tearing ourselves away from them, when we had set sail, we came in a direct course to Coos, and the day after to Rhodes, and from thence to Patara. ²And finding a ship passing over to Phenice, we went on board and set sail: ³and coming in sight of Cyprus, and leaving it on the left, we sailed unto Syria, and landed at Tyre; for there the ship was to discharge her cargo. ⁴And finding disciples, we tarried there seven days: and they said to Paul, by the Spirit, that he should not go up unto Jerusalem. ⁵But when we had stayed out those days, we departed, and went on our journey, all of them attending us on our way, with wives and children, till we were out of the city: and kneeling down on the sea shore, we joined in prayer; ⁶and embracing one another, we went on ship-board, and they returned to their own homes, ⁷So completing our voyage, we arrived from Tyre at Ptolemais, and saluting the brethren, tarried with them one day. ⁸And on the morrow we who were Paul's companions departed with him, and went to Cæsarea; and entering into the house of Philip the evangelist (who was one of the seven deacons), we abode with him. ⁹Now this man had four maiden daughters endued with the gift of prophecy. ¹⁰And as we tarried there several days, there came down a certain prophet from Judea named Agabus. ¹¹And coming to us, he took Paul's girdle, and binding both his own hands and feet together, said, Thus saith the Holy Ghost, The man, whose girdle this is, shall the Jews bind in like manner at Jerusalem, and shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles. ¹²Then when we heard these things, both we and all who were in the place, besought him not to go up to Jerusalem. ¹³But Paul replied, Why do ye thus—weeping and breaking my heart? for I am ready not only to be bound, but to die at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus. ¹⁴And when he could not be persuaded, we desisted, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

¹⁵Then after those days, packing up our baggage, we went up to Jerusalem: ¹⁶and there went also with us some disciples from Cæsarea, bringing one Mnason a Cyprian, an ancient disciple, at whose house we were to lodge. ¹⁷And when we arrived at Jerusalem, the brethren received us with delight. ¹⁸And on the morrow Paul went in with us unto James: and all the presbyters were present. ¹⁹And after embracing them, he related every particular of the things which God had done among the Gentiles by his ministry. ²⁰And they, when they heard it, glorified the Lord, and said unto him, Thou seest, brother, how many myriads there are of Jews who have believed; and they are all zealots for the law: ²¹And they have been informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Jews, who are among the Gentiles, apostacy from Moses, saying, That they should not circumcise the children, nor walk after the usual practices. ²²What then is to be done? The multitude must certainly be assembled; for they will hear that thou art come. ²³Do this therefore which we say to thee: we have four men, who have a vow upon themselves; ²⁴them take with thee, be purified with them, and be at the same expence as they, that they may shave their heads: and all men will know that there is no truth in the things reported of thee, but that thou thyself walkest orderly and observest the law. ²⁵Concerning the Gentiles who have believed, we have already written, deciding that they should observe no such thing, except

that they should guard themselves from idol sacrifices, and blood, and what is strangled, and from whoredom.

²⁶Then Paul took the men, and the following day being purified with them, he entered into the temple, declaring when the days of their purification would be completed, in order whereunto an oblation was to be offered for every one of them. ²⁷But as the seven days were now drawing to their period, some Jews from Asia seeing him in the temple, excited all the populace to tumult, and laid hands upon him, ²⁸crying out, Men of Israel, help! This is the man, who, by his preaching, sets all men everywhere against the people, and the law, and this place: yea and more still, hath brought Greeks into the temple, and defiled this holy place: ²⁹(for they had before seen Trophimus the Ephesian in the city with him, whom they imagined that Paul had introduced into the temple.) ³⁰And the whole city was in motion, and there was a concourse of people assembled: and laying hands on Paul, they dragged him out of the temple; and immediately the doors were shut. ³¹And as they were attempting to murder him, the report reached the military tribune of the band, that all Jerusalem was in confusion. ³²Who instantly taking soldiers and centurions ran down unto them: and when they saw the tribune and the soldiers, they left off beating Paul.

³³Then the tribune approaching him, laid hold on him, and ordered him to be bound with two chains; and asked who he was, and what he had done. ³⁴Then some among the multitude bellowed out one thing, and some another: so unable to know the certainty of the case because of the tumult, he ordered him to be brought into the fortress. ³⁵But when he was on the stairs, it happened that he was borne up by the soldiers, because of the press of the crowd. ³⁶For a multitude of the people followed, crying, Away with him! ³⁷And when he was just ready to be carried into the fortress, Paul said to the military tribune, May I be permitted to speak a word to thee? And he said, Dost thou know Greek? ³⁸Art not thou certainly that Egyptian who some time since raised a sedition, and led out into the desert four thousand cutthroats? ³⁹But Paul replied, I am indeed a Jew, a man of Tarsus, of Cilicia, a citizen of no contemptible city: and, I entreat thee, permit me to speak to the people. ⁴⁰So having his permission, Paul standing on the stairs, waved his hand to the people. And profound silence being obtained, he spake to them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

CHAP. XXII.

MEN, brethren, and fathers, hear ye my apology which I now offer unto you. ²Then when they heard that he spoke unto them in the Hebrew tongue, they kept the more silence: and he said, ³I am indeed a Jewish man, born in Tarsus of Cilicia, but educated in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, instructed accurately in the law of our fathers, being zealous for God, as ye all are this day: ⁴so much so that I persecuted this way unto death, binding and delivering up to prisons both men and women. ⁵As also the high-priest will bear me witness, and all the body of elders: from whom also having received letters unto the brethren, I went unto Damascus, to bring those who were there in chains unto Jerusalem, that they might be punished. ⁶But as I went and drew nigh to Damascus, at noon-day, suddenly there shone a great light from heaven around me. ⁷And I fell to the ground, and heard a voice saying to me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? ⁸And I answered, Who art thou, Lord? And he said to me, I am Jesus the Nazarean, whom thou persecutest. ⁹Now they who were with me saw the light indeed, and were terrified; but the voice of him that spake to me heard they not. ¹⁰Then I said, What shall I do, Lord? And the Lord said to me, Arise, go into Damascus; and there information shall be given thee of all things which are ordained for thee to do.

¹¹Then as I could no longer see through the dazzling brightness of that light, led by the hand of those who were with me, I came to Damascus. ¹²And one Ananias, a religious man according to the law, and in high repute with all the Jews dwelling there, ¹³came to me, and standing by me, said, Brother Saul, recover sight. And the same hour I looked up at him. ¹⁴And he said, The God of our fathers hath predestinated thee to know his will, and to see the Just One, and to hear a voice from his mouth. ¹⁵For thou shalt be a witness for him to all men, of the things which thou hast seen and heard. ¹⁶And now why delay? arise, to be baptised, and wash away thy sins, calling upon the name of

the Lord.

¹⁷Now it came to pass, that, when I had returned to Jerusalem, and was praying in the temple, that I was in a trance; ¹⁸and beheld him saying to me, Make haste, and depart quickly from Jerusalem: for they will not receive thy testimony of me. ¹⁹And I said, Lord, they know that I was imprisoning and scourging from synagogue to synagogue those who believe on thee: ²⁰and when the blood of Stephen thy martyr was shed, I myself even stood by, and took delight in his execution, and guarded the garments of those who slew him. ²¹And he said to me, Go: for I will send thee forth to the Gentiles afar off.

²²And they gave him audience to this sentence, and lifted up their voice, saying, Away with such a fellow from the earth: for it is not fit that he should live. ²³So when they began raising a vast clamour, and stripping off their garments, and casting dust into the air, ²⁴the military tribune commanded him to be brought into the fortress, ordering that he should be put to the question by scourging; that he might know for what cause they clamoured so loudly against him. ²⁵So as they were tying him up for the thongs, Paul said to the centurion standing by him, Is it lawful for you to scourge a man who is a Roman citizen, and uncondemned? ²⁶And when the centurion heard this, he came and told the military tribune, saying, Consider what you are going to do: for this man is a Roman citizen. ²⁷Then the tribune came, and said to him, Tell me, art thou a Roman citizen? And he said, Yes. ²⁸And the tribune replied, With a large sum of money I purchased this citizenship. And Paul said, But I enjoy it as my birthright. ²⁹Immediately then they who were about to put him to the question, withdrew from him: and indeed the tribune dreaded the consequences, when he knew that he was a Roman citizen, that he had even gone so far as to bind him. ³⁰So on the morrow, desirous to know of a certainty what it was of which he was accused by the Jews, he loosed him from the bonds, and commanded the high-priest and all the sanhedrim to appear, and bringing Paul down, set him before them.

CHAP. XXIII.

THEN Paul, looking earnestly at the sanhedrim, said, Men and brethren, I have lived in all good conscience unto God even to this day.

²Then the high-priest Ananias commanded those who stood by him to smite him on the mouth.

³Then said Paul unto him, God is ready to smite thee, thou whited wall: for art thou sitting to judge me according to the law, and violating that law, commandest me to be smitten?

⁴Then they who stood by, said, Revilest thou God's high-priest? ⁵And Paul said, I had not observed, brethren, that he was high-priest: for it is written, "Thou shalt not speak evil of the ruler of thy people ⁴⁷."

⁶Now when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharisees, he cried in the sanhedrim, Men and brethren, I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee: for the hope and resurrection of the dead am I brought to this bar.

⁷So when he had said this, a great dissension arose between the Pharisees and the Sadducees: and the multitude was divided. ⁸For the Sadducees say indeed, that there is no resurrection, nor angel, nor spirit: but the Pharisees confess both. ⁹And a great clamour arose: and the scribes rising up who were of the party of the Pharisees, contended stoutly, saying, We find no fault in this man: but if a spirit have spoken to him, or an angel, let us not fight against God. ¹⁰Then a great tumult arising, the tribune, apprehensive that Paul might be pulled in pieces by them, commanded the guard to go down, and take him by force from the midst of them, and bring him into the fortress.

¹¹And the night following the Lord stood by him, and said, Be of good courage, Paul: for as thou hast borne testimony of the things concerning me at Jerusalem, so must thou bear a testimony at Rome also.

¹²Then as soon as it was day, some of the Jews forming a conspiracy, bound themselves under the direst imprecation, declaring that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul. ¹³Now there were more than forty who had on oath formed this conspiracy. ¹⁴So they came to the high-priests and elders, and said, We have bound ourselves by the direst imprecation, to taste nothing till we have killed Paul. ¹⁵Now therefore do ye with the sanhedrim give notice to the military tribune, that to-morrow he bring him down to you, as if intending to make more

accurate inquiries into the things concerning him: but we, ere he come nigh, are ready to kill him.

¹⁶Now Paul's sister's son having heard of their lying in wait, came, and entering into the fortress told Paul. ¹⁷Then Paul calling to him one of the centurions, said, Carry this young man to the tribune: for he hath something to communicate to him. ¹⁸Then he took him, and brought him to the tribune, and said, The prisoner Paul calling me to him, entreated me to bring this young man to thee, having something to say to thee. ¹⁹Hereupon the tribune taking him by the hand, and leading him aside, inquired, What is it that thou hast to communicate to me? ²⁰And he said, The Jews have agreed together to entreat thee that to-morrow thou wouldest bring down Paul into the sanhedrim, as about to make some more accurate inquiry concerning him. ²¹But do not thou consent to them: for more than forty men of them are lying in wait for him, who have bound themselves under an anathema, neither to eat nor drink till they have killed him: and now they are in readiness, waiting only to procure the promise from thee.

²²Hereupon the tribune dismissed the youth, with an injunction, not to mention it to any body that thou hast discovered these things to me.

²³And calling to him two certain persons of the centurions, he said, Get ready two hundred soldiers to go to Cæsarea, and seventy horsemen, and two hundred spearmen, at the third hour of the night; ²⁴and provide beasts, that setting Paul thereon, you may convey him safely to Felix the governor.

²⁵And he wrote a letter containing this form of words:

²⁶Claudius Lysias to his excellence the governor Felix, greeting.

²⁷This person had been seized by the Jews, and was ready to be slain by them: but coming on them with the guard, I rescued him out of their hands, having understood that he was a Roman citizen. ²⁸And desirous of knowing the crime of which they accused him, I brought him down into their sanhedrim ²⁹and found him accused of some disputed points of their law; but to have no charge laid against him worthy of death or of bonds. ³⁰But it being discovered to me that a design was forming against the man's *life* by the Jews, immediately I sent him to thee, commanding his accusers also to produce what they have against him before thee. Farewel.

³¹Hereupon then the soldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul, and brought him by night unto Antipatris. ³²And on the morrow, leaving the horsemen to go on with him, they returned to the fortress. ³³So when they came to Cæsarea, and had delivered the letter to the governor, they presented Paul also to him. ³⁴Then when the governor had read it, and asked of what province he was, and understood he was of Cilicia; ³⁵I will give thee a thorough hearing, said he, when thy accusers are also come hither. And he commanded them to be kept under guard in Herod's prætorium.

CHAP. XXIV.

SO after five days Ananias the high-priest went down with the elders, and a certain rhetorician, Tertullus, who made their appearance before the governor against Paul. ²And he being summoned, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying,

Since by thee we enjoy so much peace, and such noble acts are happily performed for this nation by thy provident administration, ³always and in all places we acknowledge it, most excellent Felix, with all gratitude. ⁴Now that I may not be unnecessarily tedious to thee, I entreat thee to hear us briefly with thy wonted candour. ⁵For we found this fellow a pest *to society*, and exciting sedition among all the Jews throughout the whole world, and a ringleader of the sect of the Nazareans: ⁶who even attempted to profane the temple: we seized him therefore, and intended to judge him according to our own law. ⁷But Lysias the tribune came, and with great violence took him out of our hands, ⁸commanding his accusers to appear before thee: whereby thou mayest thyself be able after examination to know the certainty of those things whereof we accuse him.

⁹Then the Jews also joined in affirming, that these things were so.

¹⁰But Paul (the governor having made him a sign to speak) replied,

Knowing that for so many years thou hast been the judge of this nation, I with the more confidence offer my defence respecting the matters which concern me: ¹¹as thou mayest be ascertained, that it is

not more than twelve days ago since I went up to worship in Jerusalem. ¹²And neither in the temple found they me disputing with any man, nor raising any sedition among the people, neither in the synagogues, nor in the city: ¹³neither can they produce any proof of the facts of which they accuse me. ¹⁴But this I confess to thee, that after the way which they call a sect, so worship I the God of our ancestors, believing all things that are written in the law, and in the prophets: ¹⁵and having hope in God, the same which they also profess to look for, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and of the unjust. ¹⁶For this cause indeed I exert my utmost care to keep my conscience ever unoffending towards God and towards man. ¹⁷Now after many years absence I was returned bringing alms to my countrymen, and oblations *to the temple*. ¹⁸In the discharge of which offices certain Jews of Asia found me purified in the temple, neither with a multitude, nor with any tumult. ¹⁹Who ought to have appeared before thee, and prefer their accusation, if they had any thing against me. ²⁰Or let the persons themselves here present say, if they found any thing criminal in me, when I stood before the sanhedrim, ²¹except for this one sentence, which I uttered aloud when I was standing among them, For the resurrection of the dead am I this day judged by you.

²²When Felix then heard these things he put them off, (for he knew very exactly all that related to that way,) saying, When Lysias the tribune is come down, I will inquire thoroughly into the matters between you. ²³And he commanded the centurion that Paul should be safe kept, yet have no close confinement, and not to hinder any of his friends from supplying his wants, or visiting him.

²⁴Now after some days, Felix returning with Drusilla his wife, who was a Jewess, sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ. ²⁵And as he discoursed of righteousness, and temperance, and the judgment which is ready to be revealed, Felix being greatly terrified, replied, Go, for the present, I will some time hence take another opportunity of calling for thee. ²⁶Indeed he had also entertained hope that money would be given him by Paul, in order to release him: wherefore he sent for him the oftener, and conversed with him. ²⁷But when two years were ended, Felix had Portius Festus appointed for his successor: and willing to curry favour with the Jews, Felix left Paul in chains.

CHAP. XXV.

WHEN Festus then was come into the province, after three days he went up to Jerusalem from Cæsarea. ²And the high-priest and the principal persons among the Jews informed him against Paul, and entreated him, ³begging it as a favour from him, that he would send him back to Jerusalem, lying in wait for him to kill him on the road. ⁴Then Festus answered, that Paul should be kept in custody at Cæsarea, and that he himself was going thither shortly. ⁵Let therefore, said he, those among you who are able, go down with me, and accuse him, if there be anything criminal in this man.

⁶And after staying with them more than ten days, he went down to Cæsarea; and on the morrow seated on the bench, commanded Paul to be brought. ⁷And on his appearing, the Jews who came down from Jerusalem surrounded him, and laid many and heavy accusations against Paul, which they were not able to prove. ⁸But he pleaded in his defence, That neither against the law of the Jews, nor against the temple, nor against Cæsar, have I committed the least offence.

⁹Then Festus, desirous of ingratiating himself with the Jews, replying to Paul, said, Wilt thou go up unto Jerusalem, and there be judged of these things before me?

¹⁰Then said Paul, I am standing before the tribunal of Cæsar, where I have a right to be judged: against the Jews I have committed no offence, as thou also clearly perceivest. ¹¹For indeed if I have committed any crime, or done aught worthy of death, I object not to be put to death: but if there is nothing in those things whereof they accuse me, no man dare gratify them by abandoning me to them. ¹²I appeal unto Cæsar.

Then Festus, after conferring with the council, answered, Hast thou appealed to Cæsar? to Cæsar shalt thou go.

¹³Now when some days were passed, Agrippa and Bernice came to Cæsarea to salute Festus. ¹⁴And as their stay there was extended to a considerable time, Festus communicated to the king Paul's affairs,

saying, There is a certain man left by Felix, a prisoner: ¹⁵against whom when I was at Jerusalem, the high-priest and the elders of the Jews appeared, desiring judgment against him. ¹⁶To whom I replied, That it was not customary for Romans to give up any man gratuitously to destruction, before that the person accused should have his accusers produced face to face, and be allowed opportunity to defend himself against the charge. ¹⁷When therefore they were come here together, making no demur, the very next day I sat on the tribunal, and commanded the man to be brought. ¹⁸Against whom his accusers standing forth, brought no charge of such things as I expected: ¹⁹but only pleaded against him certain disputes about their own mode of religious worship, and about one Jesus, who was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive. ²⁰But being in doubt respecting a question of this sort, I demanded if he would go to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these things. ²¹But Paul appealing that he should be reserved for the cognizance of Augustus, I ordered him to be kept in custody until I should send him to Cæsar.

²²Then Agrippa said to Festus, I wish also myself to hear the man. He said, To-morrow thou shalt hear him.

²³On the morrow therefore, when Agrippa was come, and Bernice, with a very splendid retinue, and were entered into the place of audience, with the military tribunes, and the men of superior eminence in the city, then at the order of Festus Paul was produced.

²⁴And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all you, sirs, who are present with us, behold the man, concerning whom the whole multitude of the Jews have set upon me, both at Jerusalem and in this place, clamouring that he ought not to live a moment longer. ²⁵But finding on inquiry that he had done nothing worthy of death, and he himself indeed having appealed to Augustus, I have determined to send him. ²⁶Respecting whom I have nothing determinate to write to my sovereign. Wherefore I have brought him forth before you, and especially before thee, king Agrippa, that on a fresh examination taken, I might have something to write. ²⁷For it appears to me highly unreasonable to send a prisoner, and not also signify the charges against him.

CHAP. XXVI.

THEN Agrippa said unto Paul, Thou art permitted to speak for thyself. Then Paul stretching out his hand, began his defence: ²I count myself happy, king Agrippa, that I am about to address my defence to thee this day concerning all the things of which I am accused by the Jews: ³especially as thou art skilled both in all the customs, and questions which respect the Jews: wherefore I beg the favour of thee to hear me patiently.

⁴The manner of my life even from my youth, which from its beginning was spent amidst my own nation at Jerusalem, know indeed all the Jews; ⁵who previously knew me a long while ago, (if they chose to bear testimony,) that according to the most precise sect of our religion I lived a Pharisee. ⁶And this moment for the hope of the promise made of God to our fathers am I standing here to be judged: ⁷which promise our twelve tribes, with fervour night and day worshipping God, hope to attain. For which hope, king Agrippa, I am criminated by the Jews.

⁸What! is it judged a thing incredible by you, that God should raise the dead?

⁹I indeed then thought in myself, that I ought to do many things in opposition to the name of Jesus the Nazarean. ¹⁰Which also I did at Jerusalem: and many of the saints did I shut up in prisons, having received authority from the chief priests; and when they were killed, I gave my vote against them. ¹¹And in every synagogue oftentimes punishing them, I compelled them to blaspheme; and being exceedingly maddened with rage against them, I persecuted them even to the cities that are without. ¹²In which pursuits, even as I was going to Damascus with authority and a commission from the chief priests, ¹³at midday, O king, I saw on the road a light from heaven, beyond the splendour of the sun, shining around myself and those who were travelling with me.

¹⁴And as we were all fallen prostrate on the earth, I heard a voice speaking to me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? it is difficult for thee to kick against the goads.

¹⁵Then I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he replied, I am Jesus whom thou art persecuting. ¹⁶Notwithstanding, arise, and stand on thy feet: for to

this end have I appeared to thee, to ordain thee both a minister and a witness of the things which thou hast seen, and of those which I will shew thee; ¹⁷delivering thee both from the people, and from the Gentiles, to whom now I send thee, ¹⁸to open their eyes, to convert them from darkness to light, and from the dominion of Satan unto God, that they may receive remission of sins, and an inheritance with those who are sanctified by faith which is in me. ¹⁹Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient to the heavenly vision: ²⁰but preached first to those at Damascus, and Jerusalem, and to all the region of Judea, and to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, practicing works worthy of repentance.

²¹Because of these things, the Jews seizing me in the temple, attempted to kill me on the spot. ²²Having however obtained help from God, unto this day, I stand witnessing both to small and great, saying nothing but what both the prophets and Moses said should come to pass: ²³that the Messiah should suffer, *and* that he being the first who should rise from the dead, should display light to the people, and to the Gentiles.

²⁴As thus he was proceeding in his defence, Festus with a loud voice said, Paul, thou art raving; much reading hath driven thee to madness.

²⁵But he said, I am not mad, most noble Festus; but utter words of truth and sobriety. ²⁶For the king is well acquainted with these things, before whom also I speak with the greatest freedom. For I am persuaded that none of these events have escaped his notice; for this thing was not done in a corner. ²⁷King Agrippa! believest thou the prophets? I know that thou believest.

²⁸Then Agrippa said to Paul, Almost thou persuadest me to be a Christian. ²⁹And Paul replied, would to God, that not only thou, but also that all who are hearing me this day, were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these chains.

³⁰So when he had thus spoken, the king arose, and the governor, and Bernice, and they who sat with him, ³¹and retiring, conversed together, saying, This man hath done nothing worthy of death, or of chains.

³²And Agrippa said to Festus, This man might have been discharged, if he had not appealed to Cæsar.

CHAP. XXVII.

NOW as it was determined that we should sail for Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other prisoners to a centurion named Julius, of the Augustan cohort. ²And embarking in a ship of Adrymittium, ready to sail for the coast of Asia, we proceeded on our voyage, Aristarchus a Macedonian of Thessalonica, being with us. ³And the next day we arrived at Sidon: and Julius treated Paul with the greatest humanity, and permitted him to go to his friends, to enjoy the benefit of their care. ⁴And taking our departure from thence, we sailed under Cyprus, because the winds were contrary. ⁵And traversing the sea opposite to Cilicia and Pamphylia, we arrived at Myra, a city of Lycia. ⁶And the centurion finding there a ship of Alexandria bound for Italy, he put us on board of it.

⁷Then for many days making very slow way, and scarce reaching over against Knidos, the wind not favouring us, we coasted Crete, opposite Cape Salmone: ⁸and weathering it with difficulty, we came to a certain place called, The fair havens; near to which is the city Lasea. ⁹And much time being consumed, and sailing now becoming dangerous, because the fast was already past, Paul admonished them, ¹⁰saying unto them, Sirs, I perceive that this voyage will be attended with much damage and loss, not only of the cargo and of the ship, but *danger* of our lives also. ¹¹But the centurion paid more attention to the master and to the pilot than to the things which were spoken by Paul. ¹²And the harbour not being well situated for a winter station, the greater part advised to sail from thence, if they possibly could reach as far as Phenice to pass the winter, a harbour open to the south-west and north-west. ¹³So when the south wind blew softly, supposing they had obtained their purpose, they weighed anchor, and kept near the coast of Crete. ¹⁴But not long after a hurricane wind, called Euroclydon, drove us towards the island, ¹⁵and the ship becoming ungovernable, and unable to bear up in the eye of the wind, we gave up the attempt, and let her drive. ¹⁶And running under a little island called Claudia, it was with difficulty we were able to come at

the boat: ¹⁷ which when they had hoisted out, they used all helps, carrying ropes round the ship's bottom; and fearing lest they should run on the quick-sands, they lowered the mast, and so were driven. ¹⁸ And being exceedingly tossed with the storm, we the next day threw out the cargo. ¹⁹ And the third day with our own hands we threw overboard the tackling of the vessel. ²⁰ So when neither sun nor stars had appeared for many days, and no small tempest beating on us, all hope of our being preserved was entirely taken from us.

²¹ Now after being a long while without food, then stood up Paul in the midst of them, and said, Ye ought, my friends, to have been persuaded by me, and not have sailed from Crete, and got this loss and damage. ²² Yet even now I exhort you to be of good courage: for there shall be no loss of life among you, but only of the ship. ²³ For there stood by me this night an angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve, ²⁴ saying, Fear not, Paul; thou must stand before Cæsar: and behold! God hath graciously given thee all who are sailing with thee. ²⁵ Wherefore, sirs, cheer up: for I believe God that it will be so, exactly as he hath spoken to me. ²⁶ But we must be cast on a certain island.

²⁷ Now as the fourteenth night was passing, whilst we were driving about in the Adriatic sea, about midnight the sailors imagined that some land was near to them: ²⁸ and sounding, had twenty fathoms; then passing on a little farther, and sounding again, they had fifteen fathoms. ²⁹ And fearing lest they might run on some rocky coast, they cast out four anchors astern, and wished eagerly for the day to break.

³⁰ Now as the sailors were seeking to escape out of the ship, and had hoisted out the boat into the sea, under pretence as if they were going to carry out anchors a-head, ³¹ Paul said to the centurion and to the soldiers, Except these men abide in the ship, ye cannot be preserved. ³² Then the soldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off.

³³ And while they waited until the day should break, Paul exhorted them all to take some nourishment, saying, To day, expecting the fourteenth day, ye are continuing without food, taking nothing.

³⁴ Wherefore I exhort you to take some food, for this is for your preservation: for a hair shall not fall from the head of any one of you.

³⁵ And so saying, and taking a loaf, he gave thanks to God before them all, and breaking it, began to eat. ³⁶ Then were they all cheered up, and they too took refreshment.

³⁷ Now all the souls which were in the ship amounted to two hundred seventy-six: ³⁸ and having made a hearty meal, they lightened the vessel, throwing the wheat into the sea. ³⁹ And when the day broke, they knew not the land: but they observed a certain creek with a beach, into which they resolved, if they could, to run the vessel aground. ⁴⁰ And weighing the anchors, they committed her to the sea, and loosing at the same time the chains of the rudders, and hoisting the foresail to the breeze, they made for the beach. ⁴¹ But falling on a shoal where two currents met, they ran the ship aground; and the forecastle stuck fast, and remained immoveable, but the stern was stove in by the violence of the waves.

⁴² Then the soldiers' design was to have murdered the prisoners, lest any of them should swim ashore and escape. ⁴³ But the centurion, desirous to preserve Paul, withheld them from their purpose, and commanded those who were able to swim to jump overboard first, and reach the land:

⁴⁴ and that the rest should make the attempt, some on planks, and some on the floating materials of the ship: and in this manner so it was that they all safely reached the shore.

CHAP. XXVIII.

A ND being safe landed, we then understood that the island was called Melita. ² And the rude people treated us with singular humanity; for, lighting a fire, they received us all, because of the violent rain, and because of the cold. ³ But as Paul was gathering up a faggot of sticks, and laying them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and fastened on his hand.

⁴ Now when the rude people saw the venomous animal hanging from his hand, they said one to another, Surely this man is a murderer, whom though preserved from the sea, righteous vengeance suffereth not to live. ⁵ But he then shaking off the venomous animal into the fire, suffered no manner of inconvenience. ⁶ Now they expected that a violent inflammation would ensue, or that he would have fallen suddenly dead:

but when, after waiting a considerable time, they saw no inconvenience arise to him, they changed their opinion, and said that he was a divinity.

⁷Now in the vicinity of that place was the estate of the principal person on the island, named Publius, who received us into his house, and lodged us with great humanity three days. ⁸And it so happened that the father of Publius was then confined to his bed with an attack of fever and dysentery: unto whom Paul went in, and after praying, laid his hands upon him, and healed him. ⁹This then being the case, all the rest also who had diseases in the island came to him, and were healed. ¹⁰Then they honoured us with many tokens of respect; and when we were about to sail, laid in for us every necessary store. ¹¹And after three months stay we sailed in a ship which had wintered in the island, from Alexandria, whose sign was Castor and Pollux: ¹²and proceeding on our voyage to Syracuse, we tarried there three days: ¹³from whence we came round, and arrived opposite to Rhegium; and after one day the south wind arising, we came in two more to Puteoli: ¹⁴where finding brethren, we were solicited by them to tarry seven days; and so we went for Rome. ¹⁵And the brethren from thence, when they heard of our motions, came out to meet us as far as Appii Forum and the Three Taverns: whom when Paul saw, he gave thanks to God, and felt fresh courage.

¹⁶And when we were come to Rome, the centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard; but he permitted Paul to have an apartment by himself, with a soldier only who guarded him.

¹⁷Now it came to pass that after three days Paul called together the principal persons of the Jews. And when they were assembled, he said unto them, Men and brethren, though I have done nothing contrary to the people and the customs of our ancestors, yet have I been delivered up a prisoner into the hands of the Romans. ¹⁸Who, after a full examination, would have discharged me, because there was not the least cause found in me for death. ¹⁹But when the Jews opposed it, I was constrained to appeal unto Cæsar; not that I have any accusation to bring against my countrymen. ²⁰For this cause therefore have I invited you hither, to see and to converse with you; for on account of the hope of Israel am I bound with this chain.

²¹Then they said to him, We have neither received letters concerning thee from Judea, nor hath any one of the brethren who is arrived reported or spoken any thing evil of thee. ²²But we think it highly proper to hear from thee what thy sentiments are; for indeed as to this sect, it is well known to us that everywhere it meets with opposition.

²³Then having fixed a day with him, still more of them came to him at his lodging, to whom bearing his testimony, he set forth the kingdom of God, and persuaded them of the things relating to Jesus, both out of the law of Moses and the prophets, from morning until evening: ²⁴and some were convinced by the things which were spoken, but others continued in their unbelief. ²⁵So being divided in sentiment among themselves, they broke up, Paul adding one word, That well had the Holy Ghost spoken by Isaiah the prophet unto our fathers, ²⁶saying, Go to this people, and say, "In hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, yet in nowise perceive. ²⁷For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and with their ears they are thick of hearing, and their eyes have they shut; lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their hearts, and become converts, and I should heal them⁴⁸." ²⁸Be it known therefore unto you, that to the Gentiles is the salvation of God sent, and they will hear. ²⁹And when he had thus spoken, the Jews went away, and had much disputing among themselves.

³⁰But Paul abode two whole years in his own hired apartment, and received all who came to him, ³¹preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching the things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ with all freedom of discourse, and without the least interruption.

THE

EPISTLE of PAUL the APOSTLE,

TO THE

R O M A N S.

CHAP. I.

PAUL, a servant of Jesus Christ, a called apostle, set apart for the Gospel of God, ²(which he had promised before by his prophets in the holy scriptures,) ³concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord; made from the seed of David after the flesh, ⁴definitively marked out as the Son of God by miracle, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection of the dead: ⁵through whom we have received grace and apostolic mission among all nations for his name, to bring them to the obedience of faith: ⁶among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ.

⁷To all that are at Rome, beloved of God, called saints, grace unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

⁸First then I give thanks to my God, through Jesus Christ, for you all, because your faith is proclaimed through the whole world. ⁹For God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the Gospel of his Son, how incessantly I make mention of you, ¹⁰always in my prayers entreating that haply now at last I may have a prosperous journey by the will of God, to come to you. ¹¹For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spiritual gift, in order that you may be established; ¹²and that so I may be comforted together with you, by the mutual faith both of you and of me.

¹³But I would not that ye should be unacquainted, brethren, that oftentimes I have been purposing to come to you (and have been prevented until now), that I might have some fruit among you also, even as among the other Gentile nations. ¹⁴Both to the Greeks and barbarians, both to the wise and the ignorant am I a debtor. ¹⁵So, as far as is in my power, I am desirous to preach the Gospel to you that are at Rome also. ¹⁶For I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God for salvation to every one who believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. ¹⁷For the righteousness of God by faith is therein revealed for belief; as it is written, "Now the just by faith shall live⁴⁹." ¹⁸For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all impiety and unrighteousness of men, holding back the truth in unrighteousness. ¹⁹Because that which is capable of being known relative to God, is evident among them; for God hath manifested it to them. ²⁰For from the creation of the world his invisible perfections, discoverable in the works that are made, are clearly seen, even his eternal power and deity; so that they are inexcusable: ²¹because though they knew *there was* a God, they glorified him not as God, nor gave him thanks, but became triflers in their disputations, and their stupid heart was darkened. ²²Affecting to be sophists, they turned idiots, ²³and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into the likeness of an image of a corruptible man, and of birds, and of quadrupeds, and of reptiles. ²⁴Wherefore God abandoned them, through the lusts of their own hearts, unto impurity, to dishonour their own bodies by themselves: ²⁵who perverted the truth of God by falsehood, and worshipped and paid divine honours to the thing created instead of the Creator, who is blessed for evermore. Amen.

²⁶For this cause God gave them up to dishonourable passions. For even their women did change the natural use into that which was contrary to nature; ²⁷and likewise the men also, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lewdness one towards another; men with men committing indecency, and receiving in themselves the recompence of their delusion, which was meet. ²⁸And since they thought not fit to hold the Deity in acknowledgment, God abandoned them to a reprobate mind, to practise deeds unbecoming; ²⁹replete with all injustice, whoredom, wickedness, covetousness, villany; full of envy, murder, contention, deceit, evil habits; whisperers, ³⁰backbiters, God-haters, contumelious, insolent, boasters, inventors of wicked practices, disobedient to parents, ³¹unintelligent, unfaithful to engagements, unnatural, implacable, unmerciful: ³²who, though they know the righteous judgment of God, that they who live in such practices are worthy of death, not only do the same, but also find pleasure in the company of those who live in these practices.

CHAP. II.

THEREFORE thou art inexcusable, O man, even every one that judgeth: for in the very thing wherein thou judgest another, thou

condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest art living in the practices of the same things. ²But we know that the judgment of God is according to truth, against those who practise such things. ³For thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest those who do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God? ⁴Or despisest thou the riches of his kindness and patience and long-suffering, ignorant that this goodness of God is leading thee to repentance? ⁵But after thy obdurate and impenitent heart treasurest up for thyself wrath at the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God, ⁶who will recompense to every man according to his works; ⁷to those who, in the patient practice of good works, seek glory and honour and immortality—eternal life. ⁸But to those who are of a contentious spirit, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation, and wrath; ⁹tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man that doeth wickedness, of the Jew first, and also of the Greek. ¹⁰But glory and honour and peace be to every man who doeth that which is good, to the Jew first and also to the Greek: ¹¹for there is no acceptance of persons with God. ¹²For as many as have sinned without the law, shall perish also without the law: and as many as have sinned under the law shall be judged by the law; ¹³for the hearers of the law are not righteous before God, but the doers of the law shall be counted righteous; ¹⁴(for when the Gentiles, who have not the law naturally, do the things of the law, these, though not having the law, are a law unto themselves: ¹⁵which exhibit the practice of the law written on their hearts, their conscience also bearing its testimony, and their mutual reasonings at intervals bringing accusations or forming excuses;) ¹⁶in the day when God shall judge the hidden things of men, according to my gospel by Jesus Christ.

¹⁷Lo! thou art named a Jew, and retest on the law, and boastest in God, ¹⁸and knowest the will of God, and bringest to the test the things that are different, being instructed out of the law; ¹⁹and hast confidence that thou thyself art a leader of the blind, a light of those who are in darkness, ²⁰an instructor of the uninformed, a teacher of babes, holding the form of knowledge and of truth in the law. ²¹Thou therefore who teachest another, dost thou not teach thyself? thou that proclaimest aloud that a man should not steal, dost thou steal? ²²thou that sayest, Do not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that holdest idols in abomination, dost thou commit sacrilege? ²³thou who gloriest in the law, dishonourest thou God by the transgression of the law? ²⁴for the name of God is blasphemed through you among the heathen, as it is written⁵⁰. ²⁵For circumcision indeed is advantageous, if thou practise the law: but if thou art a transgressor of the law, thy circumcision becomes uncircumcision, ²⁶If then the uncircumcision observe the righteous judgments of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be accounted for circumcision? ²⁷And the uncircumcision by nature which fulfilleth the law shall condemn thee, who through the letter and circumcision art a transgressor of the law. ²⁸For not he who is outwardly such, is the Jew; neither is that which is outward in the flesh, circumcision. ²⁹But he is a Jew who is such inwardly; and circumcision is of the heart, in spirit, not in letter; whose praise is not from men, but from God.

CHAP. III.

WHAT then is the superiority of the Jew? or what is the advantage of circumcision? ²Much in every view: the principal one indeed is, that the oracles of God were entrusted to them. ³For what if some were unbelievers? shall their unbelief render the faithfulness of God ineffectual? ⁴God forbid: but let God be true, though every man were a liar; as it is written, "That thou mayest be acknowledged just in thy sayings, and overcome when thou art judged⁵¹."

⁵But if our unrighteousness commend the righteousness of God, what shall we say? Is not God unrighteous in inflicting wrath? (I speak humanly).

⁶God forbid: for how then shall God judge the world? ⁷For if the truth of God by my lying hath more abundantly contributed to his glory; why am I notwithstanding judged as a sinner? ⁸And why not admit, (as we are falsely reported of; and as some affirm we say,) That we should do evil things, that good may come? whose condemnation is just. ⁹What then? have we pre-eminence? Not at all: for we have before proved that both the Jews and Greeks are all under sin; ¹⁰as it is written, "There is not a

just person, no not one: ¹¹there is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. ¹²All are turned aside together, they are become worthless; there is none that doeth good, there is not even one. ¹³Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have spoken craftily; the poison of asps is under their lips: ¹⁴whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness: ¹⁵their feet are swift to shed blood: ¹⁶destruction and misery are in their ways. ¹⁷And they have not known the way of peace: ¹⁸there is not the fear of God before their eyes⁵²."

¹⁹Now we know that whatsoever things the law saith, it speaks to those who are under the law: that every mouth might be sealed up, and all the world become criminal before God. ²⁰Wherefore by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified before God: for by the law is the knowledge of sin. ²¹But now distinct from the law the righteousness of God is manifest, receiving testimony from the law and the prophets; ²²the righteousness of God indeed by faith in Jesus Christ unto all and upon all that believe: for there is no difference: ²³for all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; ²⁴justified freely by his grace through the redemption which is in Christ Jesus: ²⁵whom God hath proposed as the propitiatory sacrifice through faith in his blood, in demonstration of his justice for the remission of past sins, through the patience of God; ²⁶for a demonstration of his justice at this present time: that he might be just, though justifying him who is of the faith of Jesus.

²⁷Where then is boasting? It is excluded. By what law? of works? No: but by the law of faith. ²⁸We conclude therefore that by faith a man is justified, without works of law. ²⁹Is he the God of the Jews only, and is he not also of the Gentiles? Yes, verily, of the Gentiles also: ³⁰since it is one God who will justify the circumcision by faith, and the uncircumcision through faith.

³¹Do we then abolish the law through faith? God forbid: but on the contrary, we give the law stability.

CHAP. IV.

WHAT then shall we say that Abraham our father hath obtained by the flesh? ²For if Abraham was justified by works, he hath cause for glorying; though not before God. ³For what doth the scripture say? Abraham truly believed God, and it was imputed to him for righteousness⁵³. ⁴Now to him that worketh, the reward is not brought to account as a favour, but as a debt. ⁵But to him who doth not work, but believeth in him who justifieth the ungodly, his faith is reckoned in account for righteousness. ⁶As David also describeth the blessedness of that man, to whom God imputeth righteousness without works, ⁷"Blessed are they whose unrighteousnesses are forgiven, and whose sins are covered up. ⁸Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will in nowise impute sin⁵⁴." ⁹This blessedness then, *is it* for the circumcision, or for the uncircumcision also? for we say that faith was imputed to Abraham for righteousness. ¹⁰How then was it imputed to him? when circumcised, or while uncircumcised? Not when circumcised, but whilst uncircumcised. ¹¹And he received the sign of circumcision, as a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had when uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all those who believe, though uncircumcised; that to them also the righteousness might be imputed: ¹²and the father of circumcision, not to those who are of the circumcision merely, but who also tread in the steps of the faith of our father Abraham, which he exercised while uncircumcised. ¹³For not by the law *came* the promise to Abraham and his seed, that he should be heir of the world, but by the righteousness of faith. ¹⁴For if they who are of the law are heirs, faith becomes vain, and the promise is useless: ¹⁵for the law causeth wrath: for where there is no law, neither is there transgression.

¹⁶Therefore it is by faith, that it might be of grace; in order that the promise might be secured to all the seed; not only to that which is of the law, but to that which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all, ¹⁷(as it is written "that I have constituted thee father of many nations⁵⁵,") before God, in whom he trusted, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth things that are not as if existing. ¹⁸Who contrary to hope, in hope believed, that he should be the father of many nations, according to what was said, "So shall thy seed be⁵⁶." ¹⁹And not being weak in faith, he regarded not his own body now deadened, being about an hundred years

old, nor the deadness of Sarah's womb: ²⁰for he disputed not against the promise of God with unbelief; but was mighty in faith, giving glory to God; ²¹and enjoyed the fullest assurance, that what he had promised, he was able also to perform. ²²And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness. ²³Now it was not written for his sake only, that it was imputed to him; ²⁴but also for our sakes, to whom it will be imputed, if we believe in him who raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; ²⁵who was delivered up for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.

CHAP. V.

B EING justified therefore by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: ²by whom also we have had an introduction through faith into this grace in which we have stood fast, and are rejoicing in hope of the glory of God.

³And not only so, but we glory also in tribulations: knowing that tribulation produceth patience; ⁴and patience, proof; and proof, hope; ⁵and hope doth not make us ashamed; because the love of God is poured out into our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given to us. ⁶For even then when we were without strength, Christ died in due time for the ungodly. ⁷For scarcely for a righteous person will any one die: though for a good man perhaps some one might even dare to die. ⁸But God commendeth his own love towards us, that, though we were yet sinners, Christ died in our stead. ⁹Therefore much more, being justified already by his blood, shall we be saved by him from wrath. ¹⁰For if, being enemies, we have been reconciled to God by the death of his son, much more, having been reconciled, shall we be saved by his life.

¹¹And not so only, but we exult in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom already we have received reconciliation. ¹²Therefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and by sin death; even so death passed into all men through him, in whom all have sinned. ¹³For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed if there be no law. ¹⁴But death reigned from Adam unto Moses, even over those who have not sinned after the similitude of the transgression of Adam, who is a type of him that was to come.

¹⁵But not as the transgression, so also *is* the gift. For if by the transgression of one the many became dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is in that one man, Christ Jesus, hath abounded unto many. ¹⁶And the gift *is* not as for one who sinned: for the judgment indeed *came* by one to condemnation, but the free gift *leads* to justification from many offences. ¹⁷For if by the offence of one, death reigned by that one; much more they who receive the abundance of grace, and of the gift of righteousness, shall reign in life by one, Christ Jesus. ¹⁸Well then, as by the offence of one, *judgment issued* against all men unto condemnation; so also by the righteousness of one, *the gift came* to all men for justification unto life. ¹⁹For as by the disobedience of one man the many were constituted sinners; so also by the obedience of one shall the many be constituted righteous. ²⁰But the law was introduced, that the offence might be more abundant. But where sin had abounded, there hath grace abounded more exceedingly: ²¹that as sin had reigned by death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto life eternal by Jesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. VI.

W HAT then shall we say? Shall we abide in sin, that grace may abound? ²God forbid. We who are dead to sin, how shall we still live therein? ³Do ye not know, that as many as have been baptised into Christ Jesus have been baptised into his death? ⁴We have been buried therefore with him by baptism into death: that as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, so also we should walk in newness of life. ⁵For if we have been planted with him in the likeness of his death, so shall we be also of his resurrection: ⁶knowing this, that our old man hath been crucified with him, that the body of sin might be abolished, that we should no longer be slaves to sin. ⁷For he that is dead is discharged from sin. ⁸But if we have been dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him: ⁹knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death over him hath no more dominion. ¹⁰For in that he died, for

sin he died once: but in that he liveth, he liveth to God. ¹¹So also do ye account yourselves dead indeed to sin, but living unto God in Christ Jesus our Lord. ¹²Let not therefore sin reign in your mortal body, that you should obey it in the passions thereof. ¹³Neither present your members as weapons of unrighteousness for sin: but present yourselves to God, as alive from the dead, and your members as weapons of righteousness for God. ¹⁴For sin shall not hold dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace. ¹⁵What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

¹⁶Do ye not know, that to whomsoever ye present yourselves servants to obey, ye are his servants to whom ye obey; if of sin unto death, or of obedience, unto righteousness? ¹⁷But thanks be to God, that though ye were the servants of sin, ye have obeyed from the heart the model of doctrine into which ye were delivered. ¹⁸Emancipated then from sin, ye became servants to righteousness. ¹⁹I speak humanly, because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have presented your members servants to impurity and iniquity for iniquity; so now present your members servants to righteousness for holiness. ²⁰For when ye were the slaves of sin, ye were free from righteousness. ²¹What fruit therefore had ye then in those things at which ye are now confounded? for the end of those things is death. ²²But now being set at liberty from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and at the end life eternal. ²³For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is life eternal in Jesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. VII.

ARE you unacquainted, brethren, (for I am speaking to those who know the law,) that the law exercises dominion over a person for as long time as he liveth? ²For the woman who is subject to a husband, is bound by the law to that husband during his life; but if the husband be dead, she is discharged from that husband. ³She shall therefore certainly be counted an adulteress, if, her husband being alive, she be for another man: but if her husband is dead, she is free from the law; so that she shall be no adulteress, though married to another husband. ⁴Wherefore, my brethren, ye also have become dead to the law through the body of Christ; that ye might be for another, who was raised from the dead, that we might bring forth fruit for God. ⁵For when we were in the flesh, the sinful passions excited by the law, wrought powerfully in our members, to bring forth fruit unto death. ⁶But now we have been discharged from the law, that being dead by which we were held fast; that we should serve in renovation of spirit, and not in the antiquity of the letter. ⁷What then shall we say? Is the law sin? God forbid. Yea, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not even known concupiscence, unless the law had said, Thou shalt not covet. ⁸But sin, seizing the opportunity by the law, wrought in me all concupiscence. For without the law sin is dead. ⁹For though I lived without the law formerly; yet when the commandment came, sin revived, but I died. ¹⁰And the commandment, which *was* for life, the same was found by me for death. ¹¹For sin, seizing the occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and thereby slew me. ¹²So then the law indeed is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.

¹³Did then that which is good become fatal to me? God forbid. But sin, that it might appear sin by that which was good *in itself*, was the cause of death to me; that sin through the commandment might become transcendentally sinful. ¹⁴For we know that the law is spiritual; but I am fleshly, sold under sin. ¹⁵For that which I am doing I approve not: for not the thing which I wish, that do I practise; but the very thing I hate, that I do. ¹⁶But if what I would not, that I do, I concur with the law that it is excellent. ¹⁷Now then no more I do this, but sin dwelling in me. ¹⁸For I know that there dwelleth not in me (that is, in my flesh) any good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. ¹⁹For I do not the good which I wish: but the evil which I would not, that I do. ²⁰If then I do that which I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. ²¹I find then a law, that, when I wish to do good, evil is presented to me. ²²For I am delighted with the law of God, as respecting the inward man: ²³but I see another law in my members, militating against the law in my mind, and making me captive to the law of sin which is in my members. ²⁴O wretched man, I! who shall pluck me

from the body of this death? ²⁵I give thanks to God through Jesus Christ our Lord. Well then, I myself with my mind am servant to the law of God; but in my flesh to the law of sin.

CHAP. VIII.

THERE is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. ²For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath liberated me from the law of sin and of death. ³For that which was impossible by the law, inasmuch as it was impotent through the flesh, God having sent his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in that flesh: ⁴that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled by us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. ⁵For they who are after the flesh, mind the things of the flesh; but they who are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. ⁶For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. ⁷Because the propensity of the flesh is inimical against God: for it is not in subjection to the law of God, neither indeed can it be. ⁸They then who are in the flesh, cannot please God. ⁹But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God dwelleth in you. But if any man hath not the Spirit of Christ, he is not his. ¹⁰But if Christ be in you, the body indeed is dead on account of sin; but the Spirit is alive through righteousness. ¹¹But if the Spirit of him who hath raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he who raised Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his indwelling Spirit in you. ¹²Truly then we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. ¹³For if ye live after the flesh, ye are ready to die: but if by the Spirit ye mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. ¹⁴For as many as are guided by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. ¹⁵For ye have not received a spirit of bondage again unto fear; but ye have received a Spirit of adoption, by which we cry, Abba, Father. ¹⁶The same spirit beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God. ¹⁷But if children, then heirs; heirs indeed of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be we suffer with him, that we may also together with him be glorified. ¹⁸For I reckon that the sufferings of the present moment are not worthy to be placed against the future glory that shall be revealed to us. ¹⁹For the eager expectation of the creation is waiting for the revelation of the children of God. ²⁰For the creation was made subject to vanity, not voluntarily, but by him who made it subject, ²¹in hope that the same creation shall be emancipated from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. ²²For we know that the whole creation groaneth together and travaileth in birth to this moment. ²³And not only so, but ourselves also, who have the first-fruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan in ourselves, expecting the adoption, the redemption of our body. ²⁴For by hope we have been saved: now hope seen is not hope; for that which any man seeth how doth he yet hope for? ²⁵But if we hope for what we see not, we with patience expect it. ²⁶In like manner also the Spirit affords assistance to our infirmities: for even this, what we should pray for as we ought, we know not: but the same Spirit more abundantly maketh intercession for us with groanings unutterable. ²⁷Now he that trieth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, for he maketh intercession for the saints according to God's will. ²⁸But we know that to those who love God all things work together for good, even to those who are called according to his purpose. ²⁹For whom he foreknew, he predestinated also to a conformity with the image of his Son, that he might be the first-begotten among many brethren. ³⁰But whom he predestinated, those also he called: and whom he called, those also he justified: but whom he justified, those also he glorified.

³¹What then shall we say to these things? If God be for us, who *shall be* against us? ³²He who even spared not his own Son, but freely delivered him up for us all, how shall he not also, together with him, freely give us all things? ³³Who shall put in an accusation against the elect of God? God? He is their justifier. ³⁴Who is he that condemneth? Christ? He died, yea, rather, also is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us. ³⁵Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall distress of circumstances, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or the sword? ³⁶As it is written, "That for thy sake we have been put to death the whole day long; we have been reckoned indeed as sheep for slaughter⁵⁷." ³⁷But in

all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us.
³⁸For I am assured that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor those to come, ³⁹nor exaltation, nor deepest depression, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

CHAP. IX.

I SPEAK the truth in Christ, I lie not, (my conscience also bearing witness to me in the Holy Ghost,) ²that great is my sorrow and unceasing the anguish in my heart. ³For could I myself wish that an anathema should be from Christ upon my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh? ⁴who are Israelites; whose is the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the gift of the law, and the sacred service, and the promises; ⁵of whom are the fathers, and from whom as respecting the flesh Christ sprung, who is over all, the blessed God for evermore. Amen.

⁶Now it is not supposable that the word of God hath failed. For these are not all Israel, who are of Israel: ⁷nor, because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but, in Isaac shall thy seed be called. ⁸That is, not the children of the flesh, these are the children of God: but the children of the promise are accounted for the seed. ⁹For the word of promise is this, At that time will I come, and Sarah shall have a son. ¹⁰And not only so; but when Rebecca also had conception by one, even Isaac our father; ¹¹(though the children were not yet born, nor had done any thing good or evil, that according to the election of God the purpose might abide, not from works, but from him who called;) ¹²it was said unto her, "That the elder shall be servant to the younger⁵⁸." ¹³As it is written, "Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated⁵⁹." ¹⁴What shall we say therefore? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid. ¹⁵For he saith to Moses⁶⁰, "I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion." ¹⁶Well then, it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God who sheweth mercy.

¹⁷For the scripture saith⁶¹ to Pharaoh, "That for this very end have I raised thee up, that I might display in thee my power, and that my name may be proclaimed in all the earth." ¹⁸Well then, he hath mercy on whom he will, but whom he will he hardeneth. ¹⁹Wilt thou then say to me, Why yet doth he blame us? Who hath resisted his will? ²⁰Nay but, O man, who art thou that disputest against God? Shall the thing fashioned say to him that fashioned it, Why hast thou made me thus? ²¹Hath not the potter power over the clay, from the same mass to make one vessel for an honourable use, and another for a dishonourable? ²²But what if God, willing to display his wrath, and to make known what is possible with him, hath borne with much long-suffering the vessels of wrath fitted for perdition: ²³and that he might make known the riches of his glory upon the vessels of mercy which he had before prepared for glory: ²⁴even us, whom he hath called, not only out of the Jews, but out of the Gentiles? ²⁵As also he saith in Hosea⁶², "I will call her which was not my people, my people; and her which was not beloved, beloved. ²⁶And it shall be in the place where it was said unto them, ye are not my people; there shall they be called the sons of the living God." ²⁷But Isaiah⁶³ crieth concerning Israel, "Though the number of the sons of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved: ²⁸for he will finish the account, and cut it short in righteousness: because a concise account will the Lord make on the earth." ²⁹Even as Isaiah had said before⁶⁴, "Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left unto us a seed, we should have become as Sodom, and been made like unto Gomorrha."

³⁰What then shall we say? That the Gentiles, who pursued not after righteousness, have attained unto righteousness, even the righteousness which is by faith. ³¹But Israel, pursuing after the law of righteousness, hath not come up to the law of righteousness. ³²And why? Because they sought it not by faith, but as by the works of the law. For they stumbled against that stone of stumbling; ³³as it is written, "Behold, I lay in Zion a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence: and every one that believeth in him shall not be confounded⁶⁵."

CHAP. X.

B RETHREN, the kind wish of my heart indeed, and the prayer which I offer to God for Israel, is for their salvation. ²For I am a witness for them, that they have a zeal for God, but not according to knowledge. ³For being ignorant of the righteousness which is of God, and seeking to establish a righteousness of their own, they have not submitted to the righteousness of God. ⁴For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth. ⁵For Moses describeth the righteousness which is by the law, "That the man who doeth these things shall live by them⁶⁶." ⁶But the righteousness that is by faith speaketh thus⁶⁷, "Say not in thy heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down:) ⁷or, Who shall descend into the abyss?" (that is, to bring Christ up again from the dead.) ⁸But what saith it? "The word is nigh thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart:" that is, the word of faith which we preach; ⁹That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thy heart that God raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. ¹⁰For with the heart faith is exercised unto righteousness; and with the mouth is confession made unto salvation. ¹¹For the scripture saith⁶⁸, "Every one who believeth in him shall not be confounded."

¹²For there is no difference between either Jew or Greek: for the same Lord of all is rich to all that call upon him. ¹³"For every one shall be saved, whosoever calleth on the name of the Lord⁶⁹." ¹⁴How then shall they call upon him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe on him of whom they have not heard? but how shall they hear without a preacher? ¹⁵and how shall they preach unless they are sent? as it is written⁷⁰, "How beautiful are the feet of those who preach the gospel of peace, of those who preach the glad tidings of good things!" ¹⁶But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Isaiah saith, "Lord, who hath believed our report⁷¹?" ¹⁷Faith then cometh by report, but the report by the word of God. ¹⁸But I say, Have they not heard? Yea verily, "the sound of their voice is gone forth into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world⁷²."

¹⁹But I say, Did not Israel know? Moses first saith, "I will excite your jealousy by what is no nation, and by an ignorant people will I provoke you to wrath⁷³." ²⁰But Isaiah is very bold, and saith⁷⁴, "I have been found by those who sought me not; I have become manifest to those who inquired not after me." ²¹But unto Israel he saith, "All the day long have I stretched out my hands unto a people disobedient and contradicting."

CHAP. XI.

I SAY then, Hath God rejected his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. ²God hath not rejected his people whom he foreknew. Know ye not what the scripture saith of Elias⁷⁵? how he maketh intercession with God against Israel, saying, ³"Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine altars; and I only am left, and they seek my life." ⁴But what saith the oracle of God to him? "I have left to myself seven thousand men who have not bowed the knee to Baal." ⁵So then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace. ⁶But if by grace, it is no more by works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if by works, it is no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.

⁷What then is the result? Israel hath not obtained that which it seeketh; but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded, ⁸as it is written⁷⁶, "God hath given them the spirit of slumber, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear; unto this present day." ⁹And David saith⁷⁷, "Let their table be for a snare, and for a trap, and for a stumbling-block, and for a recompence unto them: ¹⁰let their eyes be blinded, that they may not see, and bow down their back continually."

¹¹I say then, Have they stumbled so as to fall? God forbid: but by their stumbling salvation is come to the Gentiles, to provoke them to jealousy. ¹²For if their stumbling is the riches of the world, and their diminution the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fulness? ¹³For I address myself to you Gentiles; inasmuch as I am indeed the apostle of the Gentiles, I exalt my ministry: ¹⁴if by any means I might provoke to jealousy my flesh, and save some of them. ¹⁵For if the rejection of them is the reconciliation of the world, what shall their recovery be, but life

from the dead? ¹⁶Now if the first fruits be holy, so is the mass: and if the root be holy, so are the branches. ¹⁷But if some of the branches have been broken off, and thou though a wild olive hast been grafted in among them, and become a partaker of the root and fatness of the olive tree; ¹⁸boast not against the branches. But if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.

¹⁹Wilt thou say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in? ²⁰Admitted; by unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not high minded, but fear: ²¹for if God spared not the native branches, tremble lest he spare not thee.

²²Behold therefore the kindness and severity of God: to those indeed who fell, severity; but unto thee, kindness, if thou continuest in that kindness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off. ²³But they also, if they continue not in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graft them in again. ²⁴For if thou hast been cut out of the naturally wild olive, and contrary to nature hast been grafted into the good olive: how much more shall these, which are native branches, be grafted into their own olive tree? ²⁵For I would not that you should be ignorant, brethren, of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is come on Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in. ²⁶And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, "The Deliverer shall go forth out of Sion, and shalt turn away ungodliness from Jacob; ²⁷and this is my covenant with them, When I shall take away their sins⁷⁸." ²⁸As concerning the gospel indeed, they are now enemies for your sakes: as concerning the election, they are beloved for the fathers' sake. ²⁹For unchangeable are the gifts and the calling of God. ³⁰For as ye also in times past did not believe in God, but now have obtained mercy through their unbelief: ³¹so also these now have not believed in your mercy, that they also might obtain mercy. ³²For God hath shut up all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all. ³³O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and how incomprehensible his ways! ³⁴For who hath known the mind of the Lord, or who hath been admitted his counsellor? ³⁵Or who hath first given unto him, and it shall be repaid him again? ³⁶Because by him, and through him, and for him, are all things, to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

CHAP. XII.

I BESEECH you, therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. ²And be not conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renovation of your mind, that you may prove by experience what is the will of God, that is good, acceptable, and perfect. ³For, I say, by the grace which is given unto me, to every one that is among you, not to think of himself above what he ought to think; but to think soberly, as God has divided to every one the measure of faith. ⁴For as we have in one body many members, but the members, though many, have not the same function, ⁵so we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one reciprocally members of each other. ⁶Having then different gifts according to the grace which is given unto us, if it be prophecy, speak according to the analogy of faith; ⁷or if the deacon's office, be active in the service; or he that teacheth, in teaching; ⁸or he that exhorteth, in exhortation; he that distributes, let him do it with simplicity; he that presideth, with diligence; he that is employed in acts of mercy, with cheerfulness. ⁹Let love be undissembled. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good. ¹⁰In brotherly affection be tenderly attached to each other; in honour preferring one another: ¹¹not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord: ¹²rejoicing in hope; patient in affliction; persevering in prayer: ¹³communicating to the wants of the saints; prompt to hospitality. ¹⁴Bless them who persecute you; bless, and curse not. ¹⁵Rejoice with those that rejoice, and weep with those that weep. ¹⁶Be of the same mind among each other. Affect not high things, but be condescending to the lowly. Be not wise in your own conceits. ¹⁷Render to no man evil for evil. Be provident of things laudable in the sight of all men. ¹⁸If possible, as far as you can, be at peace with all men. ¹⁹Avenge not yourselves, beloved, but give place unto wrath: for it is written, "Vengeance belongeth to me; I will

recompence, saith the Lord⁷⁹." ²⁰If therefore thine enemy hunger, give him food; if he thirst, give him drink: for so doing, thou shalt heap up coals of fire on his head. ²¹Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

CHAP. XIII.

LET every soul be subject to the superior powers: for there is no power but from God; the existing powers are appointed by God. ²Wherefore he that sets himself against authority, resists the ordinance of God: and they who resist shall receive to themselves condemnation. ³For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? Do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise from it: ⁴for he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou doest that which is evil, tremble! for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, an avenger to inflict wrath on him that practises what is evil. ⁵Wherefore there is a necessity for being in subjection, not only for fear of wrath, but also for conscience sake. ⁶For on this account pay ye taxes also: for they are God's ministers, continually employed on this very service. ⁷Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due, custom to whom custom, fear to whom fear, honour to whom honour. ⁸Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law. ⁹For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet; and if there be any other commandment, it is comprised in this word, even in this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. ¹⁰Love doeth no ill to a neighbour; the fulfilment therefore of the law is love. ¹¹And thus do, knowing the time; for the hour is come that we should awake from sleep, for now our salvation is nearer than when we believed. ¹²The night is far advanced, the day approaches: let us therefore put off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light. ¹³Let us walk becomingly as in the face of day, not in revels and drunkenness, not in impurities and wantonness, not in strife and envy. ¹⁴But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to gratify its passions.

CHAP. XIV.

HIM that is weak in faith take by the hand, and enter not into niceties of disputes. ²One man indeed thinketh he may eat all meats; another, who is weak, eateth vegetables. ³Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not, and let not him that eateth not judge him that eateth; for God hath accepted him. ⁴Who art thou that judgest another man's servant? To his own master he standeth or falleth; but he shall be established: for God is able to establish him. ⁵One man judgeth one day different from another day: another judgeth every day alike. Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind. ⁶He that observeth a day, to the Lord he observeth it; and he that observeth not a day, to the Lord he doth not observe it. He that eateth, to the Lord he eateth, for he giveth thanks to God; and he that eateth not, to the Lord he eateth not, and giveth thanks to God. ⁷For no one of us liveth to himself, and no one dieth to himself. ⁸For whether we live, to the Lord we live, and whether we die, to the Lord we die; whether therefore we live, or whether we die, we are the Lord's. ⁹For to this end Christ both died, and rose again, and revived, that he might be the Lord both of the dead and of the living. ¹⁰But thou, why judgest thou thy brother? And thou, why dost thou disparage thy brother? for we must all appear before the judgment-seat of Christ. ¹¹For it is written, "As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall make confession to God⁸⁰." ¹²Assuredly then every one of us shall give an account of himself to God. ¹³Let us therefore no more judge one another; but judge this rather, that no one put a stumbling-block or offence before his brother. ¹⁴I know, and am convinced by the Lord Jesus, that there is nothing unclean of itself; but to him who thinketh any thing to be unclean, to him it is unclean. ¹⁵But if by meat thy brother is grieved, thou walkest no more according to love. Do not by thy meat destroy him for whom Christ died. ¹⁶Let not therefore food, which is good for you, give occasion of reproach. ¹⁷For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. ¹⁸For he who in these things is the servant of

Christ, is acceptable to God, and approved of men. ¹⁹Well then, let us earnestly pursue the things that conduce to peace, and the things which are for mutual edification. ²⁰For the sake of meat destroy not the work of God. All things indeed are clean; but it is an evil thing for a man to eat, giving offence. ²¹It is laudable not to eat flesh, or to drink wine, nor to do any thing whereby thy brother is stumbled, or scandalized, or weakened. ²²Hast thou faith, exercise it before God within thyself. Blessed is the man who condemneth not himself in that which he alloweth. ²³But he that maketh a difference between meats, if he eat is condemned, because he doth it not by faith: for every thing which is not of faith, is sin.

CHAP. XV.

WE then that are strong, ought to bear the infirmities of those who are feeble, and not to gratify ourselves. ²Let every one of us gratify his neighbour in that which is good for his edification. ³For even Christ gratified not himself; but as it is written, "The reproaches of them that reproached thee are fallen upon me⁸¹." ⁴For whatsoever things were written aforetime, were written for our instruction; that by patience and the consolation of the Scriptures we might have hope. ⁵Now the God of patience and consolation give you to be like-minded among each other, according to Christ Jesus: ⁶that in one mind, with one mouth, ye may glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. ⁷Therefore help one another, as Christ also hath helped us, for the glory of God.

⁸Now I say that Jesus Christ was the minister of circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers: ⁹and that the Gentiles might glorify God for his mercy; as it is written⁸², "For this cause will I confess unto thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto thy name." ¹⁰And again he saith⁸³, "Rejoice, ye Gentiles, with his people." ¹¹And again⁸⁴, "Praise the Lord, all ye nations, and laud him, all ye people." ¹²And again Isaiah saith, "There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that ariseth to reign over the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust⁸⁵." ¹³Now the God of hope fill you with all joy, and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope by the power of the Holy Ghost.

¹⁴And I myself also am persuaded of you, my brethren, that ye yourselves are full of goodness, filled with all knowledge, and able to admonish one another. ¹⁵But I have written to you, my brethren, in part, with greater freedom, as refreshing your memory through the grace which is given to me of God; ¹⁶that I should be the minister of Jesus Christ unto the Gentiles, ministering the Gospel of God; that the oblation of the Gentiles might be acceptable, sanctified by the Holy Ghost.

¹⁷I have therefore cause to glory in Christ Jesus with regard to the things of God. ¹⁸For I will not dare to say any thing of those things which Christ hath not wrought by my ministry, to engage the obedience of the Gentiles, by word and deed, ¹⁹by the power of signs and miracles, by the might of the Spirit of God; so that from Jerusalem, and in a circle quite round unto Illyricum, I have fully spread the gospel of Christ. ²⁰But I have in such manner endeavoured to preach the gospel, not where Christ's name had been heard, lest I should build upon another man's foundation: ²¹but as it is written⁸⁶, "To whom the tidings concerning him have not reached, they shall see, and they who have not heard, shall understand." ²²Wherefore also I have found many things to hinder me from coming to you; ²³but now having no longer cause to detain me in these regions, and having an earnest desire to come unto you for many years past, ²⁴whenever I proceed on my journey into Spain, I will come unto you: for I hope on my journey to see you, and by you to be forwarded thither, after I shall have first, in a measure, fully enjoyed your society. ²⁵But I am now going to Jerusalem, to carry alms to the saints. ²⁶For Macedonia and Achaia have been pleased to make a certain contribution for the poor of the saints that are at Jerusalem. ²⁷They have been so pleased indeed, and their debtors they are. For if the Gentiles have been admitted to a participation in their spiritual things, they ought also to minister to them in carnal things. ²⁸When therefore I have completed this work, and sealed unto them this fruit, I will pass by you into Spain. ²⁹But I know that, when I come to you, I shall come with the fulness of the blessing of the gospel of Christ. ³⁰Now I exhort you, brethren, by our Lord Jesus Christ, and by the love of the Spirit, that you wrestle earnestly with me in prayers for me unto God; ³¹that I may be

delivered from those who do not believe in Judea; and that my service which regards Jerusalem may be kindly accepted by the saints; ³²that I may come unto you with joy by the will of God, and may be refreshed together with you.

³³Now the God of peace be with you all! Amen.

CHAP. XVI.

I NOW commend unto you Phœbe our sister, who is a deaconess of the church which is at Cenchrea: ²that ye receive her in the Lord, as becometh saints, and that you assist her in every matter wherein she may have need of you: for she hath also been a succourer of many, and of me myself.

³Salute Priscilla and Aquila my fellow-labourers in Christ Jesus: ⁴(who for my life have laid down their own neck: to whom not only I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles:) ⁵and the church which is in their house.

Salute Epinetus my beloved, who is the first-fruits of Achaia unto Christ. ⁶Salute Mary, who laboured in many things to serve us. ⁷Salute Andronicus and Junia, my kinsmen, and fellow-prisoners, who are eminent among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me. ⁸Salute Amplias my beloved in the Lord. ⁹Salute Urban, our fellow-labourer in Christ, and Stachys my beloved. ¹⁰Salute Apelles the approved in Christ. Salute those who are of the family of Aristobulus. ¹¹Salute Herodion my kinsman. Salute those which belong to the family of Narcissus, who are in the Lord. ¹²Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who have laboured hard in the Lord. Salute Persis the beloved, who laboured much in the Lord. ¹³Salute Rufus elect in the Lord, and his mother and mine. ¹⁴Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Dernas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them. ¹⁵Salute Philologus, and Julia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints with them. ¹⁶Salute one another with the holy kiss. The churches of Christ salute you. ¹⁷Now I beseech you, brethren, keep a sharp eye over those who cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine ye have learned, and turn away from them. ¹⁸For such are not servants to our Lord Jesus Christ, but to their own belly; and by smooth speeches and flattering commendations deceive the hearts of the guileless. ¹⁹For your obedience is gone forth in report to all men. I rejoice therefore on your account: but I wish you to be wise indeed unto good, but harmless respecting evil. ²⁰Now the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

²¹There salute you Timothy, my fellow-labourer, and Lucius, and Jason, and Sosipater, my kinsmen. ²²I Tertius, who have written this epistle, salute you in the Lord. ²³Gaius mine host, and of the whole church, saluteth you. Erastus the chamberlain of the city saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

²⁴The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. *Amen.*

²⁵Now to him that is able to stablish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, agreeable to the revelation of the mystery; which was concealed from all former ages, ²⁶but is now made manifest, and by the prophetic scriptures, according to the commandment of the eternal God, notified to all the Gentiles to bring them to the obedience of faith: ²⁷to the only wise God, through Jesus Christ, be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

Written to the Romans, and sent by Phœbe, a deaconess of the church in Cenchrea.

THE FIRST EPISTLE

OF

PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO THE

C O R I N T H I A N S.

CHAP. I.

PAUL, a called apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Sosthenes a brother, ²to the church of God which is at Corinth, sanctified in Christ Jesus, to the called saints, with all those who invoke the name of our Lord Jesus Christ in every place, both their's and our's: ³grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ. ⁴I give thanks to my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which hath been given you in Christ Jesus; ⁵that in every thing ye have been enriched by him, in all utterance, and all knowledge; ⁶thus the testimony of Jesus hath been confirmed among you: ⁷so that ye have not been deficient in any gift; waiting for the revelation of our Lord Jesus Christ: ⁸who shall confirm you to the end blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. ⁹Faithful is God, by whom ye have been called into communion with his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

¹⁰Now I conjure you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no schisms among you; but that ye be perfectly united together in the same mind and the same sentiment. ¹¹For I have been informed concerning you, my brethren, by those of the family of Chloe, that there are contentions among you. ¹²Now this I observe, that one and another of you saith, I am indeed of Paul; but I of Apollos; but I of Cephas; but I am of Christ. ¹³Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptised into the name of Paul?

¹⁴I thank God that I baptised none of you, except Crispus and Gaius; ¹⁵that no man might say, I baptised into my own name. ¹⁶And I also baptised the household of Stephanus: besides these, I know not if I baptised any other person. ¹⁷For Christ sent me not to baptise, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of discourse, lest the cross of Christ should be slighted. ¹⁸For the discourse, *the subject of which is* the cross, is indeed to those who perish, folly; but to us who are saved it is the power of God. ¹⁹For it is written, "I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and the understanding of the intelligent will I make useless⁸⁷." ²⁰Where is the sophist? where is the scribe? where is the inquisitive searcher after this world's wisdom? hath not God turned into folly the wisdom of this world? ²¹for since in the wisdom of God the world by its wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. ²²For the Jews demand a miracle, and the Greeks seek wisdom: ²³but we preach Christ crucified, to the Jews indeed an offence, and to the Greeks folly; ²⁴but to those who are called, whether Jews or Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God. ²⁵For this foolishness of God is wiser than men; and this weakness of God is stronger than men. ²⁶For ye see your calling, brethren, that not many fleshly wise, not many men in power, not many men of high birth, are called: ²⁷but the foolish things of this world hath God elected, that he might confound the wise; and the feeble things of the world hath God elected, that he might confound the mighty; ²⁸and the ignoble things of the world, and the despicable, hath God elected, and the things that are not, to bring to nought the things which are, ²⁹that no flesh should glory in his presence. ³⁰But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who hath been made to us of God wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption: ³¹that, as it is written, "He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord⁸⁸."

CHAP. II.

AND I, when I came to you, brethren, came not with superior excellence of discourse or wisdom, preaching unto you the gospel of God. ²For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ and him crucified. ³And in weakness, and in fear, and in much timidity, was I among you. ⁴And my conversation and my preaching was not with persuasive words of human wisdom, but with demonstration of the Spirit, and of power: ⁵that your faith might not stand on the wisdom of men, but on the power of God. ⁶But we speak wisdom among the perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the rulers of this world, who are destroying themselves: ⁷but we speak the wisdom of God, which had been hid in mystery, which God predestined before the worlds were,

for our glory: ⁸which none of the rulers of this world have known: for if they had known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. ⁹But, as it is written⁸⁹, "The things which eye hath not seen, and ear hath not heard, and that have not entered into the heart of man, these hath God prepared for those who love him." ¹⁰But to us hath God revealed them by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth out all things, even the depths of God. ¹¹For who among men knoweth the things of man, save the spirit of man which is in him? so also the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

¹²Now we have not received the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is from God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. ¹³Which things also we speak, not in discourses framed by human wisdom, but taught by the Spirit of God; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.

¹⁴But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are folly to him: and he cannot know them, because they are spiritually discerned. ¹⁵But the spiritual man discerneth indeed all things, though himself is discernible by no man. ¹⁶For who hath known the mind of the Lord? who will instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ.

CHAP. III.

AND I, brethren, have been unable to speak to you as unto spiritual men, but as to carnal, even as to babes in Christ. ²And I have given you milk to drink, and not meat: for hitherto ye have not been capable of it, yea, even to the present moment ye are not capable of it. ³For ye are still carnal: for since there are among you envy, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as *other* men? ⁴For when one saith, I am indeed of Paul; and another, I am of Apollos; are ye not carnal? ⁵Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but the ministers through whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to each *of us*? ⁶I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase. ⁷So then neither is he that planteth any thing, nor he that watereth; but God who giveth the increase. ⁸Now he that planteth and he that watereth are one: but every one shall receive his own reward according to his own labour. ⁹For we are God's fellowlabourers: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building.

¹⁰According to the grace of God given unto me, as a skilful architect, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every one take heed how he buildeth upon it. ¹¹For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus the Messiah. ¹²But if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, timbers, hay, stubble; ¹³every man's work shall be made manifest: for that day shall declare it, for it shall be laid open by fire; and the fire shall prove every man's work of what sort it is. ¹⁴If any man's work which he hath built abide *the trial*, he shall receive a reward. ¹⁵If any man's work be burnt up, he shall suffer loss: but himself shall be saved; yet so as through the fire.

¹⁶Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? ¹⁷If any man prophane the temple of God, him will God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are.

¹⁸Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you thinketh himself a wise man in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.

¹⁹For the wisdom of this world is folly in the sight of God. For it is written, "He entangleth the wise in their own craftiness⁹⁰." ²⁰And again⁹¹, "The Lord knoweth the reasonings of the wise, that they are futile." ²¹Wherefore let no man glory in men. For all things are your's; ²²whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all things are your's; ²³and ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's.

CHAP. IV.

LET a man so account of us, as the under servants of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God. ²Moreover it is expected of stewards, that a man be found faithful. ³But it is my least consideration that I should be judged by you, or by human opinion: yea I decide not respecting myself. ⁴For though I am not conscious to myself of any unfaithfulness, yet am I not thereby justified; but he that judgeth me is the Lord. ⁵Wherefore judge nothing before the time until the Lord come,

who also will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will manifest the counsels of men's hearts; and then shall praise be given to each from God.

⁶But these things, brethren, I have figuratively applied to myself, and Apollos for your sake; that in us ye might learn not to be attached, beyond what is written, lest one being for one *minister*, ye be puffed up *with prejudice* against another. ⁷For who distinguisheth thee? and what hast thou which thou hast not received? But if thou also hast received it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it?

⁸Now ye are full, now ye have grown rich, ye have reigned without us: and I wish indeed that you may reign, that we also might reign together with you. ⁹For I think that God hath exposed us his apostles the last as devoted unto death. For we have been made a spectacle to the world, and to angels, and to men. ¹⁰We are counted fools for Christ's sake, but ye are wise in Christ; we are weak, but ye are mighty; ye are honourable persons, but we despised. ¹¹For even to this present hour we undergo hunger and thirst and nakedness, and are buffeted about, and have no settled abode; ¹²and work hard, labouring with our own hands: being reviled, we bless; being persecuted, we suffer it; ¹³being injuriously spoken of, we entreat; we are made as the ordures of the world, as the sweepings of all things unto this day.

¹⁴I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved children I admonish you. ¹⁵For though ye may have ten thousand teachers in Christ, yet not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus through the Gospel I have begotten you. ¹⁶Now I conjure you, be followers of me. ¹⁷For this cause have I sent unto you Timothy, who is my son beloved and faithful in Christ, who will remind you of my ways which are in Christ Jesus, as I teach every where in every church.

¹⁸Now some are puffed up, as though I would not really come to you. ¹⁹But I will come shortly unto you, if the Lord please, and will know, not the prating of them that are puffed up, but the power. ²⁰For the kingdom of God is not in talk, but in power. ²¹What is your wish? That I should come unto you with a rod, or in love, and in the spirit of meekness?

CHAP. V.

IT is generally reported that there is whoredom among you, and such whoredom as is not even named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife. ²And ye are puffed up, though ought ye not rather to be grieved? that he who hath done this deed might be plucked from the midst of you. ³For I indeed, as absent in body, but present in spirit, have already, as present, passed judgment on him who hath so done this thing; ⁴in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, ye being assembled together and my spirit with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, ⁵to deliver such a one over to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

⁶Your glorying is not good: know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole mass? ⁷Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new mass, as ye are unleavened.

For our passover hath been sacrificed for us, even Christ. ⁸Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, nor with the leaven of malice and wickedness, but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

⁹I have written unto you in an epistle that you should not associate with fornicators. ¹⁰Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or the covetous, or extortioners, or idolaters: for then must ye indeed go out of the world. ¹¹But now I have written unto you not to associate with him, if any man, professing to be a brother, be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner, with such a one not even to eat. ¹²For what call have I to judge those who are without? Do not ye judge those who are within *the church*? ¹³But those who are without God judgeth. Put then away that wicked man from among yourselves.

CHAP. VI.

DARE any of you, having a matter of controversy with another, sue for judgment before the unjust, and not before the saints? ²Know ye not that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to be judges in the smallest matters? ³Know ye not that we shall judge angels, much more things pertaining to this life?

⁴If then ye have disputes about the things of this life, do you seat those on the bench who are least esteemed in the church? ⁵I speak to you to shame you. Is it so, that there is not among you a wise man? Not so much as one who is able to judge between one brother and another? ⁶But brother goes to law with brother, and this before the unbelievers. ⁷Now verily therefore there is altogether a fault among you, because ye have law-suits one with another. Why do ye not rather submit to the wrong? Why do ye not rather suffer yourselves to be defrauded? ⁸But ye do wrong and defraud, and that the brethren.

⁹Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived; neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor sodomites, ¹⁰nor thieves, nor the covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. ¹¹Yet such were some of you: but ye have been washed, but ye have been sanctified, but ye have been justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the spirit of our God.

¹²All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient; all things are lawful for me, but I will not put myself under the power of any. ¹³Meats are for the belly, and the belly for meats; but God will destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for whoredom, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body. ¹⁴And God hath both raised up the Lord, and will raise us up by his own power.

¹⁵Know ye not that your bodies are the members of Christ? Taking then the members of Christ, shall I make them members of an harlot? God forbid.

¹⁶Do you not know that he that is joined to an harlot is one body with her? For they two, saith he, shall be "one flesh"⁹²." ¹⁷But he that is joined to the Lord is one spirit.

¹⁸Flee whoredom. Every other sin which a man may commit is without the body; but he who committeth whoredom sinneth against his own body. ¹⁹Do ye not know that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost, which is in you, which ye have from God, and ye are not your own? ²⁰For ye have been bought with a price: glorify then God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.

CHAP. VII.

NOW with regard to those things concerning which ye have written unto me, it were good for a man not to touch a woman. ²But because of the whoredoms, let every man have his own wife, and every wife her own husband.

³Let the husband render to the wife due benevolence, and in like manner also the wife to the husband. ⁴The wife hath not power over her own body, but the husband: in like manner also the husband has not power over his own body, but the wife. ⁵Defraud not one another, except it may be by consent occasionally, that ye may have more leisure for fasting and prayer; and come together again, lest Satan tempt you through your incontinence. ⁶But in this I speak my opinion only, not authoritatively. ⁷For I would that all men were even as myself: but every man hath his peculiar gift from God, one of this sort, and another of that. ⁸I say then to the unmarried and the widows, that it is becoming them if they abide as I am. ⁹But if they have not the gift of continence, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn. ¹⁰But to the married not I command, but the Lord, That the wife be not separated from the husband: ¹¹and even if she should be separated, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.

¹²But to the others I speak, not the Lord, If any brother hath a wife unbelieving, yet she chuseth to dwell with him, let him not put her away. ¹³And the wife which hath a husband not a believer, and he chuses to dwell with her, let her not put him away. ¹⁴For the husband that believeth not is sanctified by the wife, and the wife who believeth not is sanctified by the husband: else indeed your children were unclean, but now are they holy. ¹⁵But if the unbelieving person depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in these cases, but God hath called us unto peace.

¹⁶For how knowest thou, O wife, but thou shalt save thy husband? and how knowest thou, O husband, but thou shalt save thy wife? ¹⁷Nevertheless as God has bestowed the gift on every man as the Lord

hath called every man, so let him walk, and so I give command in all the churches.

¹⁸Is any man called being circumcised? let him not affect uncircumcision. Is any man called in uncircumcision? let him not be circumcised. ¹⁹Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the observance of the commandments of God.

²⁰Let every one abide in the calling in which he is called. ²¹Art thou called being a slave? let it give thee no concern; but if thou canst also obtain thy freedom, rather make use of it. ²²For he that is called in the Lord, being a slave, is the Lord's freed man: in like manner also, he that is called, being a free man, is the servant of Christ. ²³Have you been redeemed with a price? become not the slaves of men. ²⁴Let every one, brethren, in the vocation wherein he is called, therein abide with God.

²⁵Now concerning virgins, I have no commandment of the Lord; but I offer my opinion, as having obtained mercy from the Lord to be faithful.

²⁶I think then that this is becoming, considering our present straits, that it is proper for a man to be thus. ²⁷Art thou bound to a wife? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seek not a wife. ²⁸But if thou shouldst marry, thou hast not sinned; and if a virgin marry, she hath not sinned; though such will have tribulation in the flesh; but I spare you.

²⁹Now this I say, brethren, that the time is short. The conclusion is, that even they who have wives, should be as though they had not; ³⁰and they who weep as though they wept not; and they who rejoice as though they rejoiced not; and they that purchase as though they possessed not; ³¹and they who use this world, as not abusing it: for the fashion of this world passeth away. ³²But I would have you to be free from anxiety. He who is unmarried is anxious for the things of the Lord, how he shall please the Lord: ³³but he who is married is anxious about the things of the world, how he shall please his wife. ³⁴A wife and a virgin hath different pursuits: the unmarried woman is anxious about the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and spirit; but the married woman is anxious about the things of the world, how she shall please her husband. ³⁵Now I say this for your own advantage, and not that I should lay a snare in your way, but as what is seemly, and that you may wait on the Lord without distraction. ³⁶But if a person supposes it would be unseemly for a virgin of his if she should pass the flower of her age *in celibacy*, and that duty directs it should be so, let him do as he is inclined, he doth not sin: let such marry. ³⁷But he that is stedfast in his heart, not having any necessity, but retaineth power over his own inclination, and hath determined this in his heart that he will preserve his own virgin state, doeth well. ³⁸Wherefore though he who giveth in marriage doeth well, yet he who avoids a matrimonial connection, doeth better.

³⁹The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth: but if her husband be dead, she is free to be married to whomsoever she will, but only in the Lord. ⁴⁰But she is more blessed if she abide as she is, in my opinion: and I think I have the spirit of God.

CHAP. VIII.

NOW concerning the things sacrificed to idols, we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but love edifieth. ²But if any man conceit that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know. ³But if any man love God, the same is known of him.

⁴Now concerning eating things sacrificed unto idols: we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is no other God but one. ⁵For though there are gods so called, whether celestial or terrestrial, (as *of this sort* there are gods many, and lords many;) ⁶but to us there is one God, the Father; of whom are all things, and we for him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him. ⁷Howbeit there is not in all men this knowledge; but some having conscientious respect for the idol to this moment, eat the meat as sacrificed to the idol; and their conscience being weak, is defiled. ⁸But meat commendeth us not to God: for neither if we eat are we the better, or if we eat not are we the worse. ⁹But take heed that this power of yours become not an occasion of stumbling to the weak. ¹⁰For if any man see thee that hast knowledge, sitting in an idol's temple, shall not the conscience of him who is weak be emboldened to eat what is sacrificed to idols? ¹¹And the weak brother will be destroyed by thy knowledge, for whom Christ died. ¹²But when ye

sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ. ¹³Wherefore if meat give occasion of offence to my brother, I will in no wise eat meat for ever, that I give no cause of offence to my brother.

CHAP. IX.

AM I not an apostle? am I not a free man? have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? are not ye my work in the Lord? ²If I am not an apostle unto others, doubtless I am to you: for ye are the seal of my apostolic mission in the Lord. ³My apology to those who interrogate me is this, ⁴Have we not power to eat and drink? ⁵Have we not power to carry about with us a sister wife, as do also the other apostles, even the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas? ⁶or I alone and Barnabas, have we not power to forbear labour? ⁷Who goeth at any time to war at his own expences? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit of it? or who feedeth a flock, and eateth not of the milk of the flock? ⁸Speak I these things *rationaly* as a man, or doth not the law speak the same things? ⁹for in the law of Moses it is written, "Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox which treadeth out the corn⁹³." Doth God take care for oxen? ¹⁰or saith he it altogether for our sakes? For our sakes doubtless it was written; because he who ploweth ought to plow in hope, and he who soweth in hope should be partaker of his hope. ¹¹If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we should reap your corporal things? ¹²if others partake of this power over you, ought not we much more? But we have not used this power, and we suffer all things, that we might not put any obstruction in the way of the gospel of Christ.

¹³Know ye not that they who are employed about the holy things, are fed from the temple? and they who serve at the altar, partake with the altar? ¹⁴So also the Lord hath commanded to those who preach the gospel, that they should live by the gospel. ¹⁵But I have used nothing of these things, nor have I written indeed these things, that it should be so done respecting me; for it would become me to die rather than that any man should make my glorying void. ¹⁶For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessity is laid upon me, yea verily woe is to me if I preach not the gospel. ¹⁷For if I do this willingly, I have a reward; but if unwillingly, I am entrusted with the dispensation *of it*. ¹⁸What then is my reward? That when I preach the gospel, I may put the gospel of Christ to no expence, that I abuse not my power in the gospel.

¹⁹For though I be free from all men, I have made myself the servant of all, that I might gain the more. ²⁰And I became to the Jews as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to those under the law, as under the law, that I might gain those who are under the law; ²¹to those who are without law, as without law (not as being without law to God, but under the law to Christ), that I might gain those who were without law. ²²I became to the weak as weak, that I might gain the weak; I became all things to all men, that by every means I might save some. ²³And this I do for the gospel's sake, that I may be a partaker of it with you.

²⁴Know ye not that they who run on the course, all run indeed, yet but one obtaineth the prize? So run, that ye may obtain. ²⁵And every one who contendeth *in the games* is temperate in all things: they indeed therefore do it that they may receive a corruptible crown, but we an incorruptible. ²⁶I therefore so run not as uncertainly; so do I exercise with my fists, not as striking the air: ²⁷but I beat down my body, and bring it into subjection, that I may not by any means, after having preached to others, myself become reprobate.

CHAP. X.

BUT I would not that you should be ignorant, brethren, that our fathers were all under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; ²and were all baptised unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; ³and did all eat the same spiritual meat; ⁴and did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual rock which followed them; but that rock was Christ. ⁵Nevertheless with the most of them God was not well pleased, for they were destroyed in the wilderness.

⁶Now these things were examples for us, that we might not be coveters of evil things, as they also coveted. ⁷Neither be ye idolaters as some of them; as it is written, "The people sat down to eat and drink, and

rose up to sport themselves⁹⁴.”⁸ Neither let us commit whoredom, as some of them also committed, and in one day fell twenty-three thousand⁹⁵.⁹ Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted⁹⁶, and were destroyed by serpents.¹⁰ Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and perished by the destroyer⁹⁷.¹¹ Now all these things happened unto them as examples, but they are written for our admonition, on whom the ends of the ages are come.¹² Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall.

¹³No temptation hath overtaken you, but what is common to men. And God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted beyond what ye are able to bear; but will with the temptation make also a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear up under it.

¹⁴Wherefore, my beloved, flee from idolatry.¹⁵ I speak as unto wise men: judge ye what I say.¹⁶ The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?¹⁷ For we, though many, are one loaf, one body; for we all partake of that one loaf.

¹⁸Behold Israel after the flesh. Are not they who eat of the sacrifices partakers with the altar?¹⁹ What do I say then? that an idol is any thing, or that which is sacrificed to an idol is any thing?²⁰ But that what the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to dæmons, and not to God: and I would not have you in communion with dæmons.²¹ Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord and the cup of dæmons: ye cannot be partakers of the table of the Lord, and the table of dæmons.²² Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? are we stronger than he?

²³All things are lawful for me, but all things are not profitable; all things are lawful for me, but all things edify not.²⁴ Let no man seek his own gratification, but every one another’s good.

²⁵Every thing which is sold in the shambles eat, asking no question for conscience sake;²⁶ “for the earth is the Lord’s, and the fulness thereof⁹⁸.”²⁷ And if any one of those, who do not believe, invite you, and ye incline to go, eat every thing set before you, asking no question for conscience sake.²⁸ But if any person say unto you, This is an idol’s sacrifice, eat not of it, for his sake who pointed it out, and for conscience sake. For the earth is the Lord’s, and the fulness thereof.²⁹ Conscience indeed I say, not merely thine own, but that of the other person.

³⁰For why is my liberty abridged by another’s conscience? If I truly with thanksgiving am a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks?

³¹Whether therefore ye eat or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all things to the glory of God.³² Give no occasion of stumbling either to the Jews or the Gentiles, or the church of God:³³ even as I please all men, not seeking my own advantage, but that of the many, that they may be saved.

CHAP. XI.

BE ye imitators of me, as I am of Christ.² Now I praise you, brethren, that ye remember me in all things, and hold fast the injunctions as I delivered them unto you.³ But I desire you to take notice that the head of every man is Christ; but the head of the woman is the man, and the head of Christ is God.⁴ Every man praying or prophesying, holding *a veil* over his head, dishonoureth his head;⁵ but every woman praying or prophesying with her head unveiled, dishonoureth her head; for it is one and the same thing, as if she were shaven.⁶ For if the woman be not veiled, let her hair be clipped: but if it would be scandalous for a woman to appear clipped or shaved, let her be veiled.⁷ For a man indeed ought not to veil his head, being the image and the glory of God; but the woman is the glory of the man.⁸ For the man is not from the woman, but the woman from the man.⁹ Also the man was not created for the woman, but the woman for the man.¹⁰ Therefore ought the woman to retain upon her head *this badge of authority*, because of the angels *of the churches*.¹¹ Nevertheless neither is the man without the woman, nor the woman without the man in the Lord.¹² For as the woman was taken out of the man, so also is the man by the woman: but all things are of God.¹³ Judge among yourselves, is it decent for a woman to be praying to God without a covering?¹⁴ Does not even nature itself teach you, that if a man wear long flowing hair it is a dishonour to him?¹⁵ But if a woman let her hair

flow, it is an ornament to her; for the hair was given her for a covering,
¹⁶But if any man mean to be contentious about it, we have no such custom, nor the churches of God.

¹⁷But in the matter I am going to denounce, I do not commend you, that ye meet together not for the better, but for the worse. ¹⁸For in the first place, when ye assemble in the church, I hear that there are divisions among you; and I partly believe it. ¹⁹For there must be heresies among you, that they who are the tried ones, may be made manifest among you.

²⁰When therefore ye assemble in the same place, it is not to eat the Lord's supper. ²¹For one in the eating it taketh before another his own supper: and one is hungry, and another drinks to excess. ²²What! have ye not houses to eat in and to drink? or despise ye the church of God, and make those ashamed who have none? What shall I say unto you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not. ²³For I received of the Lord what also I delivered to you, That the Lord Jesus, in the night in which he was betrayed, took a loaf: ²⁴and when he had blessed it, he brake it, and said, Take, eat; this is my body, which is broken for you: do this in remembrance of me. ²⁵In like manner also he took the cup, after they had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do, as often as ye drink it, in remembrance of me. ²⁶For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew forth the death of the Lord till he come. ²⁷Wherefore, whosoever eateth of this bread, or drinketh the cup of the Lord unworthily, he is guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. ²⁸But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of the bread, and drink of the cup. ²⁹For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh condemnation to himself, not distinguishing the Lord's body. ³⁰For this cause many are diseased and infirm among you, and some asleep *in death*. ³¹For if we thoroughly judged ourselves, we should not be judged of the Lord. ³²But being judged, we are corrected by the Lord, that we might not be condemned with the world. ³³Wherefore, when ye meet together to eat the Lord's supper, wait for one another. ³⁴And if any man be hungry, let him eat at home; that ye meet not together for condemnation. And the other matters I will regulate when I come.

CHAP. XII.

NOW concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant. ²Ye know that ye were Gentiles, drawn away after the idols that are dumb, even as ye have been led. ³Wherefore I advertise you, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God, call Jesus anathema: and no man can say, Lord Jesus, but by the Holy Ghost. ⁴But there are diversities of gifts, though the same Spirit. ⁵And there are diversities of services, but the same Lord. ⁶And there are diversities of mighty operations, but it is the same God who worketh all in all.

⁷Now to every one is given the manifestation of the Spirit for usefulness. ⁸For to one man by the Spirit is given wise discourse; but to another speech *communicative* of knowledge by the same Spirit; ⁹to another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing *diseases* by the same Spirit; ¹⁰to another miraculous powers; to another prophecy; to another discernments of spirits; to another different kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: ¹¹but all these things worketh that one and the same Spirit, distributing peculiar gifts to every one even as he wills. ¹²For as the body is one, and hath many members, but all the members of that one body, though many, are one body: so also is Christ. ¹³For by one Spirit we all have been baptised into one body, whether Jews or Greeks, whether slaves or free men; and we have all been made to drink into one Spirit. ¹⁴For the body is not one member, but many. ¹⁵If the foot should say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it, on this account, not of the body? ¹⁶And if the ear should say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it not therefore of the body? ¹⁷If the whole body were eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling? ¹⁸But now hath God placed the members, every one of them in the body, as he hath chosen. ¹⁹But if the whole were one member, where were the body? ²⁰But now the members indeed are many, but the body one. ²¹Nor can the eye say to the hand, I have no need of thee: or again the head to the

feet, I have no need of you. ²²Yea, much more the members of the body, which appear to be more feeble, are necessary: ²³and those parts which we esteem as the more dishonourable of the body, on them we bestow more abundant honour, and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness. ²⁴For our comely parts have no need: but God hath tempered together the body, giving more abundant honour to that part which lacked: ²⁵that there might be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another. ²⁶And if one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; and if one member be exalted, all the members rejoice with it. ²⁷Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular. ²⁸And these also hath God placed in the church, first apostles, secondly prophets, thirdly teachers, next miracles, then gifts of healings, helpers, directors, different kinds of tongues. ²⁹Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles? ³⁰have all gifts of healings? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret? ³¹But zealously seek the gifts that are the best: and yet I shew unto you a more transcendently excellent way.

CHAP. XIII.

THOUGH I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, but have not love, I am become as sounding brass, and tinkling cymbal. ²And though I have the gift of prophecy, and know all mysteries, and all manner of science; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, but have not love, I am nothing. ³And if I deal out all my goods in alms, and deliver up my body that I should be burned, but have not love, I am nothing advantaged by it. ⁴Love is long-suffering, is kind; love envieth not; love is no vain boaster, is not inflated *with pride*, ⁵doth not act unseemly, seeketh not her own advantage, is not passionate, thinketh no evil; ⁶rejoiceth not in unrighteousness, but rejoiceth in the truth; ⁷beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things. ⁸Love never faileth: but if there be prophetic gifts, they shall be no more; if tongues, they shall cease; if science, it shall vanish away. ⁹For we know partially, and prophesy partially. ¹⁰But when that which is perfect cometh, then that which is in part shall be done away. ¹¹When I was a child, I spake as a child, I thought as a child, I reasoned as a child: but when I grew a man, I put away childish things. ¹²For now we see by reflected light, indistinctly; but then face to face: now I know partially; but then shall I know even as I am known. ¹³But now abideth faith, hope, love, these three; but the greater of these is love.

CHAP. XIV.

FOLLOW earnestly after love, and zealously seek spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesy. ²For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue, speaketh not to men, but to God: for no man understandeth him; although in spirit he speaketh mysterious truths. ³But he that prophesieth, addresseth men for edification, and exhortation, and consolation. ⁴He that speaketh in an unknown tongue, edifieth himself; but he that prophesieth, edifieth the church. ⁵Now I could wish that you all spake with tongues, but rather that ye should prophesy: for greater is he that prophesieth, than he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret also, that the church may receive edification. ⁶Now I, brethren, if I should come unto you, speaking in unknown languages, what should I profit you, unless I should speak to you *intelligibly* by revelation, or by science, or by prophecy, or by doctrine? ⁷In like manner things inanimate, giving sound, whether the pipe, or the harp, unless they express a distinction in their tones, how shall it be known what is piped, or what is harped? ⁸For if the trumpet also give an uncertain sound, who will prepare himself for the battle? ⁹So also ye, unless with the tongue you speak an intelligible discourse, how shall it be known what is spoken? for ye will speak to the air. ¹⁰For though there are so many different kinds of languages in the world, yet is not one of them without its meaning. ¹¹If therefore I know not the force of the expression, I shall be to him that speaketh a barbarian, and he that speaketh will be a barbarian unto me. ¹²So also ye, if ye zealously affect spiritual gifts, seek that ye may abound in them for the edification of the church. ¹³Therefore let him who speaketh in an unknown tongue, pray that he may interpret

also. ¹⁴For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my mind produces no fruit. ¹⁵What then is my object? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also: I will sing psalms with the spirit, and I will sing psalms with the understanding also. ¹⁶Else, though thou bless God in spirit, how shall he who filleth the place of an illiterate man, say Amen after thy thanksgiving, seeing he knoweth not what thou sayest? ¹⁷For thou indeed givest thanks to God well, but another man is not edified by it. ¹⁸I thank my God, that I speak with different tongues more than you all: ¹⁹but in the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that I may instruct others also, than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue.

²⁰Brethren, be not children in your minds: though in naughtiness be ye children, but in your minds be men complete. ²¹In the law it is written, "That with other tongues, and with other lips, will I speak to this people: and even thus will they not attend to me, saith the Lord⁹⁹." ²²Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to those that believe, but to those who do not believe: but the gift of prophecy is not for those who are infidels, but for believers. ²³If then the whole church assemble together in the same place, and all speak different tongues, and there come in illiterate persons, or infidels, will they not say ye are mad? ²⁴But if all prophesy, and any infidel or illiterate person come in, he receives conviction from all, he is judged of all: ²⁵and thus the secrets of his heart are made manifest; and so falling down on his face, he will worship God, declaring that God verily is among you.

²⁶How comes it then, brethren, that when ye assemble together, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation? Let all things be done to edification. ²⁷If any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at most by three, and one after another; and let one interpret. ²⁸But if there be not an interpreter, let him be silent in the church; but let him speak to himself and to God. ²⁹Let the prophets two or three speak, and let the others judge. ³⁰But if any thing should be revealed to one sitting by, let the first be silent. ³¹For ye may all prophesy one by one, that all may learn, and all be comforted. ³²And the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets. ³³For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all the churches of his saints.

³⁴Let your women be silent in the churches: for it is not permitted to them to speak: but to be in subjection, as also the law saith¹⁰⁰. ³⁵But if they will learn any thing, let them ask their own husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the church. ³⁶Went the word of God from you? or came it unto you only? ³⁷If any man thinketh that he is a prophet, or spiritually gifted, let him acknowledge that the things which I write unto you are the commandments of the Lord. ³⁸But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant. ³⁹Wherefore, my brethren, desire earnestly to prophesy, and forbid not to speak with tongues. ⁴⁰Let all things be done with propriety, and orderly.

CHAP. XV.

NOW I make known unto you, brethren, the gospel which I have preached unto you, and which ye have received, in which also ye have stood fast; ²by which also ye are saved; if ye cleave to that word I have preached to you, except haply ye have believed in vain. ³For I delivered to you among the first things that which I also had received, that Christ died for our sins, according to the scriptures; ⁴and that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures: ⁵and that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve: ⁶afterwards he appeared before five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater number remain alive unto this hour, but some also are gone to rest. ⁷Afterwards he was seen of James; then of all the apostles. ⁸And last of all he was seen also by me, who am but as an abortion. ⁹For I am the least of the apostles, who am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God. ¹⁰But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was given to me was not in vain; but I laboured more abundantly than they all; yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me. ¹¹Therefore whether I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed.

¹²But if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some

among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead? ¹³But if there is no resurrection of the dead, neither is Christ risen: ¹⁴and if Christ be not risen, vain indeed is our preaching, and vain also your faith. ¹⁵Yea, and we also are found false witnesses for God; because we have testified on the behalf of God, that he raised up Christ: whom he raised not up, if indeed the dead are not raised. ¹⁶For if the dead are not raised, neither is Christ risen: ¹⁷and if Christ be not risen, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your sins. ¹⁸Then also they who have fallen asleep in Christ have perished. ¹⁹If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are more miserable than all other men.

²⁰But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first-fruit of those who have fallen asleep. ²¹For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. ²²For as in Adam all are dead, so also in Christ shall all be made alive. ²³But every one in his own rank: Christ the first-fruit; afterwards those that are Christ's at his appearing. ²⁴Then cometh the end, when he shall deliver up the kingdom to God, and the Father; when he shall have destroyed every dominion and every authority and power. ²⁵For he must reign, until he hath put all enemies under his feet. ²⁶The last enemy shall be destroyed, death. ²⁷For he hath put all things under his feet. But when he saith, that all things are put under him, it is evident that there is an exception of him, who subjected all things to him. ²⁸But when he shall have put all things under him, then also the Son himself shall be subjected to him who put all things under him, that God may be all in all. ²⁹Else what will they do who are baptised? for the dead, if wholly dead they rise no more. Why are they then baptised for the dead? ³⁰and why do we also expose ourselves to danger every hour? ³¹I solemnly declare by all the joy over you which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily. ³²If after the manner of men I have fought with wild beasts at Ephesus, of what advantage would it be to me, if the dead did not rise again? shall we eat and drink; because tomorrow we die? ³³Be not deceived: evil conversations corrupt good manners. ³⁴Awake as the righteous, and sin not; for some have an ignorance of God: I speak this to your shame.

³⁵But will any man say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? ³⁶Thou fool! what thou sowest is not quickened except it die: ³⁷and that which thou sowest, thou sowest not the body which shall be afterwards, but the bare grain, perhaps of wheat, or of some of the other seeds: ³⁸but God giveth it a body as he pleaseth, and to each of the seeds its peculiar body.

³⁹All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one kind of flesh of men, and another flesh of cattle, and another of fishes, and another of birds. ⁴⁰Also there are celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and that of the terrestrial another.

⁴¹There is one glory of the sun; and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for star differeth from star in glory. ⁴²So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: ⁴³it is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: ⁴⁴it is sown an animal body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is an animal body, and there is a spiritual body. ⁴⁵And so it is written, There was a first man Adam a living soul; a last Adam a quickening spirit. ⁴⁶But that which is spiritual was not first, but that which is animal; and afterward that which is spiritual. ⁴⁷The first man was of the earth, earthly; the second man was the Lord from heaven. ⁴⁸As is the earthly, so are they also that are earthly: and as is the heavenly, such also are they that are heavenly. ⁴⁹And as we have borne the image of the earthly, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.

⁵⁰But this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God: neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. ⁵¹Behold, I shew you a mystery; we shall not indeed all sleep, but we shall all be changed, ⁵²in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. ⁵³For that which is corruptible must put on incorruption, and that which is mortal must put on immortality. ⁵⁴So when that which is corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and that which is mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall come to pass the saying which is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. ⁵⁵O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? ⁵⁶The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. ⁵⁷But thanks be to God, who

giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. ⁵⁸Wherefore, my beloved brethren, be stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, knowing that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

NOW concerning the collection which is for the saints, as I have given an order to the churches of Galatia, so also do ye. ²On the first day of the week let every one of you set apart with himself, treasuring it up, whatsoever he may please to give, that when I come there may be then no gatherings. ³But when I come, whosoever you shall approve by letters, those will I send to carry your charity to Jerusalem. ⁴But if it be of importance that I should go also, they shall go with me. ⁵Now I will come unto you when I have passed through Macedonia (for I am passing through Macedonia); ⁶and perhaps I shall abide with you, yea and winter with you, that you may send me forward whithersoever I go. ⁷For I will not see you now in passing, but I hope to remain some considerable time with you if the Lord permit. ⁸But I shall abide at Ephesus until the Pentecost: ⁹for there is opened to me a great door, and effectual, and there are many adversaries.

¹⁰But if Timothy come, see that he may be among you without fear: for he worketh the Lord's work, as I also do. ¹¹Let no man therefore treat him with disrespect; but forward him on his way in peace, that he may come to me; for I expect him with the brethren.

¹²As concerning brother Apollos, I besought him much that he would come to you with the brethren; but it was not at all his wish to come at this time: but he will come when he can find a good opportunity.

¹³Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, be manful, be strong. ¹⁴Let all your concerns be transacted in love.

¹⁵Now I exhort you, brethren, (ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first fruits of Achaia, and they have devoted themselves to the ministry of the saints:) ¹⁶wherefore submit yourselves to such, and to every one that worketh with us and laboureth.

¹⁷I rejoice in the arrival of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus; because what was lacking from you, they have supplied. ¹⁸For they have refreshed my spirit and yours; respect therefore such men.

¹⁹The churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the church which is in their house. ²⁰All the brethren salute you. Salute one another with a holy kiss.

²¹The salutation of Paul with mine own hand. ²²If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be Anathema, Maranatha.

²³The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. ²⁴My love be with you all in Christ Jesus. Amen.

The first epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timothy.

THE SECOND EPISTLE

OF

PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO THE

C O R I N T H I A N S .

CHAP. I.

PAUL an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothy a brother, to the church of God which is at Corinth, with all the saints which are in all Achaia: ²grace unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

³Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and God of all consolation; ⁴who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we might be able to comfort those who are in all

tribulation, by the consolation with which we ourselves are comforted of God. ⁵Because as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so through Christ aboundeth also our consolation. ⁶But whether we be afflicted, it is for your consolation and salvation, which is effectually wrought by patient endurance of the same sufferings which we also suffer; or if we are comforted, it is for your consolation and salvation. ⁷And our hope of you is sure, knowing that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so also of the consolation.

⁸For we would not have you ignorant, brethren, of the tribulation which came to us in Asia, that above measure we have been burdened beyond our strength, so that we despaired even of life: ⁹for we ourselves, in ourselves have received the sentence of death, that we should have no confidence in ourselves, but in God who raiseth the dead. ¹⁰Who from so imminent a prospect of death hath delivered us, and still delivers: in whom we trust also that he will yet deliver us: ¹¹ye also labouring together for us in prayer, that from many persons thanks may be given on our behalf for the gifts bestowed on us by many.

¹²For our glorying is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with carnal wisdom, but by the grace of God, we have conducted ourselves in the world, and peculiarly towards you. ¹³For we write no other things to you than those which you know and acknowledge; and I trust also ye will acknowledge them even to the end. ¹⁴As also ye have acknowledged us in part, that we are your glory, as also ye are ours in the day of the Lord Jesus.

¹⁵And in this confidence I was intending to come unto you a second time, that ye might receive a second blessing; ¹⁶and through you to pass into Macedonia, and again from Macedonia return unto you, and by you to be forwarded on my journey towards Judea. ¹⁷Such then being my intention, did I indeed change it with levity? or the things which I purpose, do I purpose after the flesh, that with me there should be yea, yea, and nay, nay? ¹⁸But as sure as God is true, our word to you was not yea and nay. ¹⁹For the Son of God, Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us—by me and Silvanus and Timotheus—was not yea and nay, but there was yea in him; ²⁰for all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him Amen, to the glory of God by us.

²¹Now he that confirmeth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God; ²²who also hath put his seal upon us, and given us the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

²³But I appeal to God as a witness unto my soul, that to spare you I have not yet come to Corinth: ²⁴not that we have dominion over your faith, but are fellow-helpers of your joy; for by faith ye stand.

CHAP. II.

BUT I prescribed to myself this rule, not to come again to you with sorrow. ²For if I make you sorry, who is he that maketh me glad, but he that is made sorrowful by me? ³And I have written unto you for this very purpose, that I might not, when I come to you, have sorrow from those in whom I ought to rejoice, having confidence in you all, that my joy is the joy of you all. ⁴For out of much affliction and anguish of heart I wrote unto you with many tears, not that ye should be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly towards you.

⁵Now if any person hath given cause for grief, he hath not grieved me *merely*, but partly all of you; that I may add no farther burden. ⁶Sufficient for such person is that chastisement which hath been inflicted by the majority of you. ⁷Wherefore, on the contrary, ye rather ought to forgive and comfort him, lest such a one be swallowed up with excess of sorrow. ⁸Wherefore I exhort you to confirm your love towards him. ⁹For to this end also have I written, that I may know by this proof of you if ye are obedient in all things. ¹⁰But to whomsoever ye forgive any thing, so do I; and if I forgive any thing, to whom I forgive, for your sakes I do it, in the person of Jesus Christ, ¹¹that no advantage be gained over us by Satan; for we are not ignorant of his devices.

¹²But when I came to Troas to preach the Gospel of Christ, though a door was opened unto me by the Lord, ¹³I had no test in my spirit on my not finding there Titus my brother: so taking my leave of them I went forth unto Macedonia. ¹⁴But thanks be to God, who causeth us always to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the savour of his knowledge by us in every place. ¹⁵For we are a sweet odour of Christ to God in those

who are saved, and in those who perish. ¹⁶To the one we are the odour of death unto death, to the other the odour of life unto life: and who is sufficient for these things? ¹⁷For we are not as the many, adulterating the word of God; but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God, speak we in Christ.

CHAP. III.

DO we begin again to commend ourselves? or need we, as some, commendatory letters to you, or commendatory letters from you? ²Ye are our letter written in our hearts, acknowledged and read of all men: ³because ye are manifestly seen to be the letter of Christ, of which we have been the secretaries, written not with ink, but by the Spirit of the living God, not on tables of stone, but on the fleshly tables of the heart. ⁴And such confidence have we through Christ towards God: ⁵not that we are sufficient of ourselves to account any thing of ourselves, but our sufficiency is of God. ⁶Who hath made us also able ministers of the new testament, not of the letter but of the spirit; for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.

⁷For if the ministry of death in letters graven on stone, was attended with glory, so that the children of Israel could not keep their eyes fixed upon the countenance of Moses, because of the glory of his countenance, though *soon* evanescent; ⁸how much more will not the ministry of the Spirit be attended with glory? ⁹For if the ministry of condemnation is glory, much more doth the ministry of righteousness excel in glory. ¹⁰For that which was glorious hath no glory, comparatively, because of the glory which excelleth. ¹¹For if that which was abolished came in a glorious manner, much more is that which remaineth glorious.

¹²Having therefore such a hope, we use much freedom of speech. ¹³And *act* not as Moses who spread a veil over his face, in order that the children of Israel might not look stedfastly to the end of that which should be abolished. ¹⁴But their understandings were darkened: for unto this day the same veil in their reading the old testament abideth unremoved; which veil is taken away by Christ. ¹⁵For unto this day, when Moses is read, the veil is spread over their hearts. ¹⁶Nevertheless, when Israel shall turn unto the Lord, the veil shall be taken away.

¹⁷Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty. ¹⁸And we all with face unveiled, beholding the glory of the Lord *reflected* as in a mirror, according to the same image, receive a transformation from glory into glory, as by the Lord, the Spirit.

CHAP. IV.

THEREFORE having this ministry, as we have obtained mercy, we faint not; ²but have renounced all shameful secret practices, not conducting ourselves with artifice, nor deceitfully disguising the word of God, but by clear manifestation of the truth, commending ourselves to every man's conscience as in the presence of God. ³And if now our gospel be hid, it is hid from those who are lost: ⁴among whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of the unbelievers, that the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God, should not dart its bright beams upon them. ⁵For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake. ⁶For the God who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, he hath shined into our hearts, to give illumination of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ. ⁷But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the transcendent excellence of the power might be of God, and not of us.

⁸We are afflicted on every side, yet not reduced to extremities; under difficulties, yet not in despair; ⁹persecuted, yet not abandoned; cast down, but not destroyed; ¹⁰always bearing about in the body the death pangs of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus may be manifested in our body. ¹¹For we who are yet alive are continually delivered up to death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus may be made manifest in our mortal flesh. ¹²Wherefore death indeed is working in us, but life in you.

¹³Having then the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore I have spoken¹⁰¹, we also believe, and therefore speak; ¹⁴knowing that he who raised up our Lord Jesus Christ, will raise up us also through Jesus, and present us together with you. ¹⁵For all

things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace, through the thanksgiving of more persons, may more abound to the glory of God.

¹⁶Therefore we never faint; for though our outward man decay, yet the inward man is renewed day by day. ¹⁷For our momentary light affliction worketh for us a transcendently far more exceeding eternal weight of glory; ¹⁸whilst we direct our aim not to the things which are seen, but to the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporary, but the things that are not seen are eternal.

CHAP. V.

FOR we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle should be taken down, we have a building from God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. ²For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed with our mansion which is from heaven; ³that so invested, we may not be found naked. ⁴For we which are in this tabernacle, groan, being burdened; wherein we desire not to be unclothed, but clothed upon, that what is mortal may be swallowed up of life.

⁵But he that hath wrought us for this very thing is God, who also hath given us the earnest of the spirit. ⁶Therefore we have always confidence, and know that whilst we are indwelling in the body, we are absent from the Lord: ⁷(for we walk by faith, not by sight.) ⁸We are confident indeed, and with pleasure expect to go out from the body, and to dwell within with the Lord: ⁹wherefore also our ambition is, that whether dwelling in the body, or out of the body, we may be acceptable to him.

¹⁰For we must all appear before the judgment-seat of Christ, that each may receive the things done in the body according to what he hath done, whether it be good, or whether it be evil. ¹¹Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but we have been made manifest to God, and I hope also have been made manifest in your consciences.

¹²For we commend not ourselves again unto you, but give you occasion of glorying on our behalf, that ye may have an answer for those who glory in countenance, and not in heart. ¹³For if we are transported out of ourselves, it is for God; or if we are sober-minded, it is for your sake. ¹⁴For the love of Christ constraineth us, because we judge thus, that if one died for all, then were all dead: ¹⁵and he died for all, that they who live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him that died for them, and rose again.

¹⁶Wherefore from the present moment know we no man after the flesh: yea though we have also known Christ after the flesh, yet so henceforth know we him no more. ¹⁷Wherefore if any person be in Christ, he is a new creation: the old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. ¹⁸But all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; ¹⁹namely, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing to them their offences: and hath committed to us the word of reconciliation. ²⁰Therefore we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God exhorted you by us; we entreat you for Christ's sake, be ye reconciled to God. ²¹For he hath made him, who knew no sin, to be a sin offering for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in him.

CHAP. VI.

WE then as labourers with him, exhort you also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain: ²for he saith, "In an acceptable time have I heard thee, and in a day of salvation have I succoured thee ¹⁰²." Behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation. ³Giving no offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed: ⁴but in every thing approving ourselves as ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in straits, ⁵in stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings, ⁶in purity, in knowledge, in long-suffering, by kindness, by the Holy Ghost, by love unfeigned, ⁷by the word of truth, by the power of God, with weapons of righteousness in the right hand and in the left, ⁸through honour and dishonour, through evil report and good report: as deceivers, yet true men; ⁹as unknown, though well known; as dying, and lo! we live; as chastened, yet not given over to death; ¹⁰as sorrowful, yet always rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.

¹¹Our mouth is opened unto you, O Corinthians! our heart is enlarged.
¹²Ye are not straitened in us, but ye are straitened in your own bowels.
¹³Let us have a like return; I speak as unto children; be ye also enlarged.
¹⁴Be not unequally yoked with infidels; for what participation hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what fellowship *is there* between light and darkness? ¹⁵and what concord of Christ with Belial? or what share hath he that believeth with an infidel? ¹⁶or what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, "I will inhabit in them, and walk about in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be for me a people"¹⁰³.
¹⁷"Wherefore go forth from the midst of them, and be ye separated, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean; and I will receive you¹⁰⁴, ¹⁸and I will be as a father unto you, and ye shall be to me for sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty¹⁰⁵."

CHAP. VII.

HAVING therefore these promises, beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all defilement of flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God. ²Give us a favourable reception: we have injured no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man. ³I speak not for your condemnation, for I have already said, that ye are in our hearts to die and live together. ⁴Great is my freedom of speech to you, great is my glorying over you: I am filled with consolation, I overflow with joy in all our tribulation.

⁵For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were afflicted on every side; without were fightings; within were fears. ⁶But God that comforteth the lowly comforted us by the coming of Titus: ⁷and not by his coming only, but also by the consolation wherewith he had been comforted among you, declaring to us your fervent desire, your mourning, your zeal for me, so that I rejoiced the more.

⁸For if I grieved you by a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent: for I perceive that this letter made you sorry, though but for a season. ⁹Now I rejoice, not that ye have been made sorrowful, but that ye have sorrowed unto repentance; for ye have been made sorry in a godly manner, that ye might receive damage from us in nothing. ¹⁰For sorrow of a godly sort worketh repentance unto salvation never to be repented of, but worldly sorrow worketh death. ¹¹For behold this very thing, that ye were made sorry after a godly manner, how great diligence did it produce in you! yea, what apologizing! yea, what indignation! yea, what fear! yea, what earnest desire! yea, what zeal! yea, what vengeance! In every step ye have approved yourselves as pure in this affair.

¹²And indeed though I wrote unto you, I did it not *merely* for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause who had suffered the injury, but that our diligent attention for you might be more abundantly manifested to you in the presence of God. ¹³Therefore we were comforted in your consolation; and exceeding abundantly the more rejoiced we in the joy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all. ¹⁴For if I have boasted of you to him in any thing, I am not ashamed; but as we have spoken all things to you in truth, so our boasting of you to Titus hath been found truth. ¹⁵And his bowels more abundantly yearn over you, when he remembers the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling ye received him. ¹⁶I rejoice therefore that in every thing I have confidence in you.

CHAP. VIII.

NOW we inform you, brethren, of the grace of God which hath been bestowed on the churches of Macedonia; ²that in a great trial of affliction the abundance of their joy, and their deep poverty, hath more abounded to the riches of their liberality. ³For unto their power, I bear them witness, and above their power, they were voluntarily ready *to give*: ⁴with much entreaty praying us that we would receive the gift, and *undertake* the communication of the contribution for the saints. ⁵And not *merely* as we hoped, but gave themselves first to the Lord, and to us according to the will of God. ⁶So that we exhorted Titus, that as he had been active before, so also he would perfect in you this grace also. ⁷So as ye abound in every thing, in faith, and elocution, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your love to us, see that ye abound in this grace also.

⁸I speak not by commandment, but because of the forwardness of others, and to prove the genuineness of your love. ⁹For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that for your sake he became poor though he was rich, that ye by his poverty should be made rich. ¹⁰And in this I give my opinion: for this is expedient for you, who have before begun not only to do, but also to be willing a year ago. ¹¹Now then accomplish also the doing it, that as there was a readiness to will, so there may be also to perform out of that which ye have. ¹²For if there is first a ready mind, a man is acceptable according to what he hath, and not according to what he hath not. ¹³For I mean not that there should be ease for others and a burden on you; ¹⁴but that according to equality, your abundance on the present occasion should afford a supply for their deficiency, that their abundance also may supply your deficiency, that there may be equality. ¹⁵According as it is written, "He that *gathered* much had no more than others, and he who *gathered* little, had no less¹⁰⁶."

¹⁶But thanks be to God, who put the same solicitude for you into the heart of Titus. ¹⁷For he received in deed the exhortation, but being more diligent, of his own ready mind he went unto you. ¹⁸We have sent with him also a brother, whose praise in the gospel is *spread* through all the churches; ¹⁹and not only so, but who was chosen by the churches as my fellow-traveller with this charity, ministered by us to the glory of the same Lord, and *to shew* your ready mind. ²⁰Avoiding this, that no man should lay any blame to us in this abundance which is administered by us: ²¹providing what is fair, not only before the Lord, but also before men. ²²And we have sent with him our brother, whom we have often experienced in many things to be a man of diligence, but now much more diligent, through the great confidence which I have in you. ²³If *any inquire* concerning Titus, he is my companion and fellow-labourer to you; or our brethren *be inquired of*, they are the messengers of the churches, the glory of Christ. ²⁴Therefore shew unto them, and in the presence of the churches, a proof of your love, and of our *just* boasting in you.

CHAP. IX.

NOW concerning the contribution for the saints, it is superfluous for me to write unto you. ²For I know your readiness of mind, for which I boast of you to the Macedonians, that Achaia had made preparation a year ago; and your zeal hath stirred up very many. ³But I have sent the brethren, that our glorying in you might not be vain in this matter; that as I have said, ye may be prepared. ⁴Lest haply if the Macedonians come with me, and find you unprepared, we (not to say, you) may be confounded in this confidence of boasting. I ⁵have thought it necessary therefore to exhort the brethren, that they would go before unto you, and prepare before your promised bounty, that it may be ready as a matter of bounty, and not as *extorted* of covetousness.

⁶But this I add, He that soweth sparingly, shall reap also sparingly, and he that soweth bountifully, shall reap also bountifully. ⁷Let every man, as he hath purposed in heart, give, not with reluctance or of necessity; for God loveth a cheerful giver. ⁸And God is able to make all grace abound towards you; that in every case having always all sufficiency, ye may abound unto every good work: ⁹as it is written, "He hath scattered abroad, he hath given to the poor, his righteousness abideth for ever¹⁰⁷." ¹⁰Now he that supplieth seed to the sower, shall also supply bread for food, and multiply your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your righteousness, ¹¹being in every thing enriched unto all liberality, which *causeth* by us thanksgiving to God. ¹²For the ministration of this *charitable* service not only abundantly supplies the deficiencies of the saints, but also overflows with many thanksgivings to God; ¹³(while by the evidence of this ministration they glorify God for your professed subjection to the gospel of Christ, and for your liberality towards them, and towards all men;) ¹⁴and with their prayers for you, greatly longing after you, on account of the transcendent grace of God in you. ¹⁵Thanks be to God for his inexpressible gift.

CHAP. X.

NOW I Paul myself exhort you by the meekness and gentleness of Christ, who, when present, am indeed lowly among you, but being absent, am bold towards you. ²But I pray, that when I am present I may

not be bold with the confidence with which I purpose to act resolutely against some who think of us, as if we walked after the flesh. ³For though we walk in the flesh, we war not after the flesh: ⁴for the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God for the casting down the strong holds *of corruption*; ⁵laying low proud reasonings, and every high thing which exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and making every thought captive to the obedience of Christ: ⁶and holding ourselves ready to avenge every act of disobedience, when your obedience is fully proved. ⁷Regard ye the things that are personal? If any man is confident in himself that he is Christ's, let him reflect again in himself, that as he is Christ's, so are we Christ's. ⁸Yea, and if I should boast somewhat more highly of our authority, which the Lord hath given us for your edification, and not for your destruction, I shall not be ashamed; ⁹that I may not seem as if I would terrify you by letters. ¹⁰For his letters indeed, say they, are weighty and forcible, but his bodily presence is feeble, and his speech contemptible. ¹¹Let such a man be assured of this, that such as we are by word in our letters when absent, such also will we be in deed when we are present. ¹²For we will not presume to put ourselves on the level, or compare ourselves with some who vaunt themselves; but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves with themselves, have no understanding. ¹³But we will not glory in things beyond our measure, but according to the measure of the rule which God hath marked out for us—a measure that hath reached even unto you. ¹⁴For we stretch not our pretensions beyond bounds, as though we reached not unto you; for we have advanced even unto you in the gospel of Christ: ¹⁵not boasting ourselves unmeasurably in other men's labours; but having hope that when your faith is increased, we shall be enlarged by you according to our rule for more abundant usefulness, ¹⁶to preach the gospel in the regions beyond you, and not to arrogate glory in another man's line for things already prepared. ¹⁷But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord. ¹⁸For not he who commendeth himself is approved, but he whom the Lord commendeth.

CHAP. XI.

I WISH ye would bear with me a little in my foolishness, yea indeed bear with me. ²For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy; for I have espoused you to one husband, to present you a chaste virgin to Christ. ³But I fear lest as the serpent beguiled Eve by his craftiness, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity which belongs to Christ. ⁴For if he indeed that cometh preach another Jesus, whom we have not preached, or ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not embraced, ye might well bear with him. ⁵For I reckon myself to be nothing inferior to the very chief of the apostles. ⁶For though I may be rude in speech, yet not in knowledge; but on every occasion we have been made manifest in all things among you.

⁷Am I chargeable with a fault (humbling myself that you might be exalted), that I preached to you the gospel of God freely? ⁸I plundered other churches, receiving a provision from them, in order to minister to you. ⁹And when I was with you, and in want, I was burdensome to no man; for my want the brethren who came from Macedonia supplied; and on every occasion I have kept myself from being burdensome, and will keep myself. ¹⁰I protest, by the truth of Christ in me, that from this boasting no man shall seal up my lips in the regions of Achaia. ¹¹Wherefore? Because I love you not? God knoweth. ¹²But what I do, I will do also, that I may cut off occasion from those who desire occasion, that wherein they boast, they may be found even as we. ¹³For such are fake apostles, deceitful labourers, transforming themselves into apostles of Christ. ¹⁴And no marvel! For Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. ¹⁵It is no wonder therefore if his ministers also be transformed as ministers of righteousness; whose end will be according to their works. ¹⁶I repeat it again, Let no man suppose that I am a fool; but if otherwise, then as a fool receive me, that I too may boast myself a little. ¹⁷What I speak, I speak not after the Lord, but as it were in folly in this confidence of boasting. ¹⁸Seeing many boast themselves after the flesh, I will boast also. ¹⁹For ye bear with fools easily when you are wise yourselves. ²⁰For ye bear if a man enslave you, if a man eat you up, if a

man receive from you, if a man is insolent, if a man smite you on the face. ²¹I speak with reference to the reproach *cast on me*, as though we were feeble; but wherein any man is bold (I speak in foolishness), I am bold also. ²²Are they Hebrews? so am I. Are they Israelites? so am I. Are they the seed of Abraham? so am I. ²³Are they the ministers of Christ? (I speak foolishly) I am above *them*: in labours more abundantly, in stripes exceedingly more, in prisons more frequently, in the most immediate danger of death often. ²⁴Of the Jews five times I have received forty stripes save one. ²⁵Thrice I have been scourged with rods, once I have been stoned, thrice I have suffered shipwreck, a whole night and day I have passed in the deep; ²⁶in journeyings often, in perils of rivers, in perils of robbers, in perils from my own countrymen, in perils from the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the desert, in perils on the sea, in perils among false brethren; ²⁷in labour and travail, in watchings often, in fastings frequently, in hunger and thirst, in cold and nakedness; ²⁸and beside all these things from without, that accumulated burden which cometh on me daily, the care of all the churches. ²⁹Who is feeble, and am I not feeble? Who is offended, and am I not on fire? ³⁰If I must glory, I will glory in the things which respect my infirmities. ³¹The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not. ³²In Damascus the governor under Aretas the king guarded the city of the Damascenes, intending to seize me; ³³and through a window in a basket I was let down by the wall, and escaped out of his hands.

CHAP. XII.

IT is not expedient doubtless for me to boast. I will yet come to visions and revelations of the Lord. ²I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago, (whether in the body I know not, or whether out of the body I know not: God knoweth;) such a one was caught up unto the third heavens. ³And I knew such a man, (whether in the body or out of the body I know not: God knoweth,) ⁴that he was caught up into paradise, and heard ineffable words, which it is not permitted to man to speak. ⁵Of such a one will I boast; but in myself will I not boast, save in my infirmities. ⁶For though I should be disposed to boast, I shall not be a fool; for I shall speak truth: but I desist, lest any man think of me above what he seeth me to be, or what he heareth of me. ⁷And that I might not be lifted up above measure by the transcendent greatness of the revelations, there was given me a thorn in the flesh, the angel Satan, to buffet me, that I might not be lifted up above measure. ⁸For this thrice I besought the Lord, that he might depart from me. ⁹And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee; for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may fix its residence in me. ¹⁰Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses, for Christ's sake; for when I am weak, then am I strong.

¹¹Have I become a fool in boasting? ye have compelled me; for I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing have I been inferior to the very chief apostles, though I be nothing. ¹²The signs indeed of an apostle have been wrought among you in all patience, in miracles, and wonders, and mighty deeds. ¹³For what is there wherein ye have been inferior to the other churches, except that I have not been burdensome to you? Forgive me this wrong. ¹⁴Lo! I hold myself ready the third time to come unto you, and I will not burden you; for I seek not yours but you: for the children ought not to lay up treasure for their parents, but the parents for the children. ¹⁵And I will most cheerfully spend and be spent for your souls, though the more abundantly I love you, the less I am loved.

¹⁶But admit it, I was not burdensome to you: but being crafty, I caught you with guile. ¹⁷Did I make a gain of you by any one individual whom I sent unto you? ¹⁸I entreated Titus *to go to you*, and with him I sent a brother. Did Titus make any advantage of you? walked we not in the same spirit? walked we not in the same steps?

¹⁹Think ye that we are again making an apology to you? In the sight of God speak we in Christ: but all things, beloved, for your edification. ²⁰For I am afraid that when I come I shall not find you such as I wish, and that I shall be found of you such as ye would not: lest haply there be contentions, jealousies, animosities, quarrels, backbitings, whisperings,

swellings, tumults: ²¹and lest when I come to you again, my God should bow me down, and I should lament over many who have sinned before, and have not repented of the impurities, and whoredom, and lasciviousness which they have committed.

CHAP. XIII.

THIS third time I am coming to you: by the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every charge be established. ²I have told you before, and I repeat it, as when I was present the second time, and now absent, I write to those who have sinned already, and to all the rest, that if I come again, I will not spare you: ³since ye demand a proof that Christ speaketh in me, who to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in you. ⁴For though he was crucified in weakness, yet he liveth by the power of God: for we also are weak in him, but we shall live with him by the power of God *displayed* towards you.

⁵Examine yourselves, whether ye are in the faith; prove your ownelves: know ye not your ownelves, that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobate? ⁶But I hope that ye shall know that we are not reprobate. ⁷Now I pray unto God that ye do no evil, not that we should appear approved, but that you may do that which is laudable, though we should be as reprobates. ⁸For we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth. ⁹For we rejoice when we are weak, but ye are strong: and this also we pray for, even your perfect establishment. ¹⁰For this cause, though absent, I have written these things, that when I am present I may not use severity, according to the power which the Lord hath given me for edification, and not for destruction.

¹¹Finally, brethren, rejoice: be perfectly united together, be comforted, be of one mind, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you. ¹²Salute one another with a holy kiss. ¹³All the saints salute you. ¹⁴The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost be with you all. Amen.

The second epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi, a city of Macedonia, by Titus and Luke.

THE
EPISTLE of PAUL the APOSTLE,
TO THE
GALATIANS.

CHAP. I.

PAUL the apostle (not *sent* from men, nor by man, but by Jesus Christ, and our Father who raised him from the dead), ²and all the brethren with me, to the churches of Galatia: ³grace unto you, and peace from God the Father and our Lord Jesus Christ; ⁴who gave himself for our sins, that he might pluck us out of this present wicked world, according to the will of God and our Father: ⁵to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

⁶I marvel that ye are so quickly departed from him that called you, by the grace of Christ into another gospel ⁷which is not another; but there are certain persons who trouble you, and desire to pervert the gospel of Christ. ⁸But though even we, or an angel from heaven, preach unto you another gospel, different from that which we have preached to you, let him be an anathema. ⁹As we have before spoken, and I now repeat it again, If any man preach a gospel different from that ye have received, let him be anathema. ¹⁰For do I now use persuasions from men, or from God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

¹¹But I give you to understand, brethren, that the gospel which was preached by me is not a merely human ministry. ¹²For I neither received it from man, nor was taught, but by immediate revelation from Jesus Christ. ¹³For ye have heard of my former manner of life, when I

professed Judaism, that in the most outrageous manner I persecuted the church of God, and wasted it: ¹⁴and signalized myself in Judaism above many of those of my own age among my countrymen, being more exceedingly a zealot for the traditions of my fathers. ¹⁵But when it pleased God, who selected me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace, ¹⁶to reveal his Son in me, that I might preach the glad tidings of him to the nations, immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood, ¹⁷nor went up to Jerusalem to those who were apostles before me; but I went away into Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus. ¹⁸Afterwards at the expiration of three years I went up unto Jerusalem to pay a visit to Peter, and I abode with him fifteen days. ¹⁹But I saw no other of the apostles except James, the Lord's brother. ²⁰Now respecting the things which I write unto you, behold, in the presence of God, I lie not. ²¹Afterwards I went into the regions of Syria and Cilicia; ²²and I was personally unknown to the churches of Judea, which are in Christ: ²³only they had heard, that he who persecuted us in time past, now preaches the faith which he once laid waste. ²⁴And they glorified God on my behalf.

CHAP. II.

FOURTEEN years afterwards I again went up to Jerusalem with Barnabas, taking Titus also along with us. ²And I went up then by revelation, and laid before them that gospel which I preach among the Heathen, but in private conference with those who were of the first importance, that haply I might not run, nor had run in vain. ³And even Titus, who was with me, though a Greek, was not compelled to be circumcised: ⁴but this I did because of false brethren artfully introduced, who came to pry into our liberty which we hold in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage: ⁵to whom not even for an hour have we yielded subjection, that the truth of the gospel might abide with you. ⁶But from those who appeared men of the greatest importance, (what sort of men soever they were it maketh no difference to me: God accepteth not a man's person;) for these important personages in conference added nothing to me; ⁷but contrariwise when they saw that I was entrusted with the gospel to the uncircumcision, as Peter was to the circumcision: ⁸(for he that wrought powerfully by Peter in his apostolic mission to the circumcision, wrought mightily also by me among the Gentiles.) ⁹And when they knew the grace which was bestowed on me, James and Cephas and John, who appeared to be the pillars of *the church*, gave unto me and Barnabas the right hand of fellowship, that we should go unto the Gentiles, and they to the circumcision: ¹⁰only desiring that we would remember the poor—the very thing which I have also been diligent to perform.

¹¹But when Peter came to Antioch I withstood him to his face, because he was blameable. ¹²For before certain persons came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles, but when they were come, he withdrew, and separated himself, fearing those of the circumcision. ¹³And the other Jews were guilty of the same dissimulation with him, so that even Barnabas was carried away by their hypocrisy. ¹⁴But when I saw that they walked not directly according to the truth of the gospel, I said to Peter before them all, If thou, being a Jew, livest as the Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to judaize? ¹⁵We who are Jews by descent, and not sinners sprung from Gentiles, ¹⁶knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by faith in Christ, and not by works of the law; because by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified. ¹⁷For if seeking to be justified by Christ, we also ourselves should be found sinners, is Christ then a minister of sin? God forbid. ¹⁸For if I build up again the very same things which I have pulled down, I stamp myself a transgressor.

¹⁹For I through the law am dead to the law, that I should live unto God. ²⁰I am crucified with Christ, yet I live; though no more I, but Christ liveth in me: and my present life in the flesh, is a life by faith in the Son of God, who hath loved me, and delivered up himself for me. ²¹I do not set at nought the grace of God; for if righteousness came by the law, truly Christ hath died in vain.

CHAP. III.

O INFATUATED Galatians, who hath bewitched you that ye should not obey the truth? To whom Jesus Christ has been described, as before your eyes, crucified among you. ²This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or from hearing of the faith? ³Are ye so senseless? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect in the flesh? ⁴have ye suffered so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain.

⁵He therefore who ministereth to you a supply of the Spirit, and powerfully worketh miracles among you, doth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of the faith? ⁶as Abraham believed in God, and it was imputed to him for righteousness. ⁷Know then that they who are of faith, these are the children of Abraham. ⁸And the scripture foreseeing that by faith God would justify the Gentiles, preached the gospel before unto Abraham, saying, that "In thee shall all the nations be blessed¹⁰⁸." ⁹Wherefore they who are of faith are blessed with believing Abraham.

¹⁰For as many as are of the works of the law, are under a curse: for it is written, "Cursed is every one who continueth not in all the things written in the book of the law to do them¹⁰⁹." ¹¹But that by the law no man is justified before God is evident: because "The just by faith shall live¹¹⁰." ¹²Now the law is not by faith: but "The man that doeth these things shall live by them¹¹¹." ¹³Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, "Cursed is every one who is hanged on a tree¹¹²." ¹⁴that unto the Gentiles the benediction pronounced on Abraham might come by Jesus Christ, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit by faith.

¹⁵Brethren, I speak humanly; to use a similitude, a man's testament, if it be passed in legal form, no man can vacate, or add thereunto. ¹⁶But to Abraham were the promises spoken, and to his seed. He saith not, To seeds, as unto many persons; but as to an individual, and to thy seed, which is Christ. ¹⁷Now this I say, the covenant confirmed of God to Christ, the law, which was given three hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, so as to vacate the promise. ¹⁸For if the inheritance is of the law, it is no more by promise; but to Abraham God gave it freely by promise.

¹⁹To what end then was the law given? It was given on account of transgressions, until that seed should come to whom the promise was made, being delivered through the ministry of angels into the hand of a mediator. ²⁰But the mediator of the one *seed* he is not, though God is one.

²¹Is the law then contrary to the promises of God? God forbid. For if there had been a law given which was capable of procuring life, verily righteousness would have been by the law. ²²But the scripture hath shut up all things under sin, that the promise by faith in Jesus Christ might be given to those who believe.

²³But before the faith came, we were in ward under the law, shut up together for the faith that should be revealed. ²⁴Wherefore the law was our conductor, as of children, to Christ, that we might be justified by faith. ²⁵But when faith was come, we were no longer under a pædagogus. ²⁶For ye are all the sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus. ²⁷For as many of you as have been baptised into Christ, have been invested with Christ. ²⁸There is no more Jew or Gentile, there is no more slave or freeman, there is no more male or female: but ye are all one in Christ Jesus. ²⁹But if ye are Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

CHAP. IV.

NOW I affirm, that as long as the heir is an infant, he differeth nothing from a servant, though he be master of all; ²but is under tutors and trustees until the time fixed by his father. ³So we also, when we were infants, were in bondage under the first elementary principles of the world: ⁴but when the fulness of time was come, God sent forth his Son born of a woman, born under the law, ⁵that he might redeem those who were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. ⁶But because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father! ⁷Therefore thou art no more a slave, but a son, and if a son, an heir also of God through Christ.

⁸But at that time when ye knew not God, ye served those who by nature are not gods. ⁹But now after having known God, or rather being

known of God, how turn ye back again to those weak and beggarly elements, to which again a second time ye desire to be in bondage? ¹⁰Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years. ¹¹I am afraid for you, lest haply I have bestowed on you labour in vain.

¹²Be as I am, for I also am as ye are, brethren—this is my request to you: ye have not injured me in the least. ¹³Ye know that with infirmity of flesh I preached to you the gospel at the first. ¹⁴And my temptation, which was in my flesh, ye despised not, nor rejected with disgust; but as an angel of God ye received me, even as Christ Jesus himself. ¹⁵What then was your blessedness, for I bear witness to you that, if it were possible, ye would have plucked out your eyes, and given them to me. ¹⁶Am I therefore become your enemy because I tell you the truth?

¹⁷They affect zeal for you, not honourably; but they wish to exclude us, that you may be zealously attached to them. ¹⁸It is good indeed to be zealously affected in a good cause always, and not only when I am present with you.

¹⁹My little children of whom I travail in birth again, until Christ be formed in you, ²⁰I wish I could be with you now, and change my address; for I am in doubt about you.

²¹Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law? ²²For it is written¹¹³ that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondwoman, and the other by a free. ²³Now the son of the bond-maid was born after the flesh, but that by the free woman was by promise. ²⁴Which things are allegorical; for these are the two covenants, the one from mount Sinai, gendering unto bondage, which is represented by Agar. ²⁵For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and corresponds with Jerusalem that now is, and is in bondage with her children. ²⁶But the Jerusalem above is free, which is the mother of us all. ²⁷For it is written, "Rejoice, thou barren who bearest not, cry out and shout for joy, thou that travailest not, for more are the children of her that was desolate, than of her which had an husband¹¹⁴." ²⁸So we, brethren, as Isaac, are the children of the promise. ²⁹But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so is it now. ³⁰But what saith the scripture? "Cast out the bond-woman and her son for the son of the bond-maid shall in no wise inherit with the son of the free woman¹¹⁵." ³¹So then, brethren, we are not the children of the bondwoman, but of the free.

CHAP. V.

STAND fast therefore in the liberty with which Christ has made you free, and be not again held under a yoke of bondage. ²Behold, I Paul declare to you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ will be of no advantage to you. ³And again, I testify to every man who is circumcised, that he is under an obligation to keep the whole law. ⁴Ye have vacated all expectations from Christ, as many of you as are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace. ⁵For we in spirit by faith expect the hope of righteousness. ⁶For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but faith exerting its energy by love. ⁷Ye were running well: who hath hindered you that ye should not obey the truth? ⁸This persuasion cometh not from him who called you. ⁹A little leaven leaveneth the whole mass. ¹⁰I have confidence in you through the Lord, that ye will be no otherwise minded: but he that troubleth you shall bear condign punishment whosoever he be.

¹¹But I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why am I still persecuted? then indeed the offence of the cross is at an end. ¹²I wish that they who trouble you were cut off from you. ¹³For ye have been called unto liberty, brethren; only use not that liberty as a pretext for carnality, but in love be subject one to another. ¹⁴For the whole law is fulfilled in one word, even in this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. ¹⁵But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed by one another.

¹⁶But I say, Walk in the Spirit, and ye will not fulfil the lust of the flesh. ¹⁷For the flesh hath appetites contrary to the Spirit, and the Spirit contrary to the flesh, and these act in opposition the one to the other: so that ye do not the things which ye would. ¹⁸But if ye are under the conduct of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

¹⁹Now the works of the flesh are evident, which are these: adultery,

whoredom, impurity, lasciviousness, ²⁰idolatry, magical charms, enmities, strifes, jealousies, animosities, quarrels, divisions, heresies, ²¹envyings, murders, drunkenness, revels, and the like of these, concerning which I tell you now, as I have told you already, that they who live in such practices shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

²²But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, fidelity, ²³meekness, temperance; against such there is no law. ²⁴But they who are Christ's have crucified the flesh with its passions and irregular appetites. ²⁵If we live by the Spirit, let us also walk by the Spirit. ²⁶Let us not be vain-glorious, irritating one another, envying one another.

CHAP. VI.

BRETHREN, if a man also be surprised into any act of offence, ye that are spiritual, replace such a one in the spirit of meekness; keeping an attentive eye on thyself, lest thou also be tempted. ²Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ. ³For if any man conceits that he is something when he is nothing, he deceiveth himself. ⁴But let every man bring his own work to the test, and then shall he have glorying in himself alone, and not *by comparison* with another. ⁵For every man shall bear his own burden.

⁶Let him who is a learner of the word communicate to his instructor in all good things. ⁷Be not deceived; God is not to be trifled with: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. ⁸For he that soweth unto his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption, and he that soweth to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting. ⁹Let us not then be weary of well-doing; for in due time we shall reap, if we faint not. ¹⁰Well then, whilst we have opportunity, let us do good unto all men, but especially unto those who are of the household of faith.

¹¹Ye see in how many words I have written unto you with my own hand. ¹²As many as wish to make a fair appearance in the flesh, they compel you to be circumcised, only that they may not suffer persecution for the cross of Christ. ¹³For even they who are themselves circumcised do not keep the law, but desire you to be circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh. ¹⁴But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world, ¹⁵For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creation. ¹⁶And as many as shall walk after this rule, peace be upon them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

¹⁷Henceforth let no man trouble me; for I bear the marks of our Lord Jesus Christ in my body.

¹⁸The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit, brethren. Amen.

To the Galatians, written from Rome.

THE
EPISTLE of PAUL the APOSTLE,
TO THE
EPHESIANS.

CHAP. I.

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus: ²grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

³Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with every spiritual blessing in heavenly things in Christ; ⁴as he hath elected us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and blameless before him in love: ⁵having predestinated

us for his adopted children by Jesus Christ unto himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, ⁶to the praise of the glory of his grace, whereby he hath made us acceptable in that beloved one; ⁷in whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; ⁸wherein he hath abounded towards us with all wisdom and intelligence, ⁹having made known to us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure, which he purposed in himself; ¹⁰at the dispensation of the fulness of the appointed times to gather together under one head all things in Christ, whether they be things in heaven or things in earth, in him: ¹¹in whom also we have obtained our inheritance, predestinated according to the purpose of him who effectually worketh all things according to the counsel of his own will: ¹²that we should be to the praise of his glory, who first had hope in Christ. ¹³In whom ye also *trusted* after ye had heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation; in whom also, having believed, ye have been sealed with the holy Spirit of promise, ¹⁴which is the earnest of our inheritance, until the final redemption, acquired by him, come, to the praise of his glory.

¹⁵For this cause I also, since I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and the love ye have to all saints, ¹⁶have not ceased offering up my praises for you, making mention of you in my prayers, ¹⁷that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, would give you the spirit of wisdom and revelation by the knowledge of him; ¹⁸the eyes of your understanding being enlightened, that you may know what is the hope to which he hath called you, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance for the saints, ¹⁹and what the transcendent greatness of his power in us, who believe, according to the energy of his mighty strength ²⁰which he displayed in Christ when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly regions, ²¹far above all principality, and authority, and power, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come; ²²and hath put all things under his feet, and hath appointed him head over all to the church, ²³which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

CHAP. II.

AND you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins, ²wherein in times past ye walked after the fashion of this world, after the prince of the power of the air, the spirit who now worketh with energy in the children of disobedience: ³among whom also we all have had our conversation in time past, in the lusts of the flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature children of wrath, as well as the rest. ⁴But God, being rich in mercy, through the great love with which he hath loved us, ⁵though we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved,) ⁶and hath raised us up together with him, and made us sit down together in the heavenly regions in Christ Jesus. ⁷That he might shew forth in the ages to come the transcendent riches of his grace, in the kindness shewed to us in Christ Jesus. ⁸For by grace ye are saved through faith, and this not of yourselves; it is the gift of God: ⁹not by works, lest any man should boast; ¹⁰for we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, for which God hath before prepared us, that we should walk therein.

¹¹Wherefore remember that ye in time past were Gentiles in the flesh, who are called uncircumcision by that called circumcision made by hands in the flesh; ¹²that ye were at that time without Christ, alienated from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers to the covenants of promise, having no hope, and atheists in the world: ¹³but now in Christ Jesus, ye who formerly were far off, are become nigh by the blood of Christ. ¹⁴For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of separation, ¹⁵destroying the enmity in his flesh, even the law of precepts, in ordinances, that he might from the two create in himself one new man, making peace, ¹⁶and might reconcile them both in one body to God by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby; ¹⁷and coming, hath preached peace to you who were afar off, and to those who were nigh: ¹⁸for through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father. ¹⁹So then ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the household of God; ²⁰built up on the foundation of apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ

himself being the chief corner stone; ²¹in whom the whole building exactly cemented together groweth into a holy temple in the Lord: ²²by whom also ye have been built up together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

CHAP. III.

FOR this cause *am* I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles, ²if so be, that ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God which was given to me for you: ³that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery, as I wrote unto you before briefly; ⁴wherein when ye read, ye may be able to perceive my knowledge in the mystery of Christ, ⁵which in other generations was not made known to the children of men, as it hath been now revealed to his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit; ⁶that the Gentiles should be co-heirs, and of the same body, and sharers with them of his promise in Christ by the Gospel: ⁷of which I am made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God, which was given unto me by the effectual working of his power. ⁸To me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ; ⁹and to make all men see what the communication of that mystery means, which was hid from the beginning in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ: ¹⁰that now to the principalities and powers in the heavenly regions, the manifold wisdom of God might be made known by the church, ¹¹according to the purpose from everlasting, which he formed in Christ Jesus our Lord: ¹²in whom we have boldness and access with confidence to God by the faith of him.

¹³Wherefore I beseech you, that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory. ¹⁴For this end I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, ¹⁵of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named; ¹⁶that he would give you according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his spirit in the inner man; ¹⁷that Christ may dwell by faith in your hearts; that rooted and grounded in love, ¹⁸ye may be strengthened to comprehend with all saints, what is the breadth and length, and height and depth; ¹⁹and to know the love of Christ, transcendently surpassing knowledge, that ye may be filled with all the fulness of God.

²⁰Now to him that is able to do above all things, exceeding abundantly, beyond what we ask or think, according to the power which effectually worketh in us; ²¹to him be glory in the church, in Christ Jesus, unto all generations for ever and ever. Amen.

CHAP. IV.

I THEN, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you, that ye walk worthy of the vocation with which ye are called, ²with all humility and meekness, with long suffering, forbearing one another in love; ³careful to preserve unity of spirit, in the bond of peace. ⁴There is one body, and one spirit, even as ye have been called to one hope of your calling; ⁵one Lord, one faith, one baptism, ⁶one God, and father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

⁷But to every one of us hath the grace been given, according to the measure of the gift of Christ. ⁸Wherefore the Scripture saith, "When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men¹¹⁶." ⁹Now this, that he ascended, what does it imply? but that he also first descended into the more internal parts of the earth? ¹⁰He that descended is the same also, who ascended above all the heavens, that he might fill all things.

¹¹And he himself appointed, some indeed apostles, and some prophets; and others preachers of the Gospel; and others pastors and teachers; ¹²for the perfecting the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edification of the body of Christ: ¹³until we all attain in the unity of the faith, and the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a state of complete manhood, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: ¹⁴that we should be no longer infants, floating on the waves, and carried about with every wind of novel doctrine, by the juggling of men, by their craftiness after the delusive wiles of error; ¹⁵but, speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, who is the head, even Christ: ¹⁶From whom the whole body nicely joined together, and firmly

connected by every joint of exact proportion, according to the energy exerted in the measure of every several part, causeth the increase of the body unto the edification of itself in love.

¹⁷This then I urge and testify in the Lord, that ye walk no more as the other Gentiles walk in the vanity of their mind, ¹⁸darkened in understanding; alienated from the life of God through the ignorance which is in them; through the blindness of their hearts: ¹⁹who insensible to remorse, have delivered themselves over in lasciviousness, to the practice of all impurity, with insatiable avidity. ²⁰But ye have not so learned Christ; ²¹if indeed ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: ²²that ye put off respecting your former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful passions; ²³but be renewed in the spirit of your minds; ²⁴and put on the new man, which is created godlike, in righteousness and true holiness.

²⁵Wherefore putting away lying, speak truth, every one with his neighbour: for we are members one of another.

²⁶Are ye provoked; and do you not sin? let not the sun go down upon your wrath: ²⁷nor give place to the devil.

²⁸Let him that stole steal no more; but rather labour hard, working with his hands that which is good, that he may have something to give to him that is in want.

²⁹Let no loose discourse proceed out of your mouth, but whatever is good for useful edification, that it may communicate grace to the hearers. ³⁰And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye have been sealed unto the day of redemption. ³¹Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and scandal, be removed from you, with all malice: ³²but be ye kind one to another, full of sensibility, forgiving mutually, even as God in Christ hath forgiven you.

CHAP. V.

BE ye therefore imitators of God, as beloved children; ²and walk in love as Christ also hath loved us, and given himself for us, an oblation and sacrifice to God, for an odour of a sweet smell. ³But fornication and all impurity, or insatiable desire, let it not be mentioned among you, as becometh saints; ⁴or obscenity, or foolish talk, or loose witticisms; things which become not *a Christian*, but rather thanksgiving. ⁵For this ye know, that no whoremonger, or impure person, or avaricious, who is an idolater, hath an inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God. ⁶Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things, the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience. ⁷Be not ye therefore partakers with them. ⁸For ye were formerly darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light; ⁹(for the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth;) ¹⁰proving what is acceptable to the Lord. ¹¹And have no society with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather rebuke them. ¹²For it is scandalous but to mention the things done of them in secret. ¹³But all things which are rebukeable are made manifest by the light; for it is the light, by which every thing is made manifest. ¹⁴Wherefore he saith, "Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light"¹⁷."

¹⁵Take heed, then, that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, ¹⁶redeeming the time, because the days are evil. ¹⁷Therefore be not unwise, but intelligent concerning what is the will of the Lord. ¹⁸And be not drunk with wine, in which there is sottishness, but be filled with the Spirit; ¹⁹speaking one to another in psalms and hymns, and spiritual canticles, singing and making melody in the heart to the Lord; ²⁰giving thanks always for all things in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, to God even the Father; ²¹being subject one to another in the fear of God.

²²Wives, be in subjection to your own husbands, as to the Lord. ²³For the husband is the head of the wife, as also Christ is the head of the church; and is himself the saviour of the body. ²⁴As then the church is subject to Christ, so also let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing.

²⁵Husbands, love your own wives, as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; ²⁶that he might sanctify it, purifying it in the laver of water by the word, ²⁷that he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having blemish, nor wrinkle, nor any such things; but that it

may be holy and unblameable. ²⁸So ought husbands to love their own wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his own wife loveth himself. ²⁹For no man ever hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church: ³⁰for we are the members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones. ³¹For this reason shall a man forsake his father and mother, and shall cleave unto his wife, and the two shall be as one flesh. ³²This mystery is great: but I am speaking with regard to Christ, and with regard to the church. ³³Nevertheless let every one of you individually see that each love his own wife even as himself; but the wife that she stand in awe of the husband.

CHAP. VI.

C HILDREN, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. ²“Honour thy father and mother; (which is the first commandment with a promise;) ³that it may be well with thee, and that thou mayest be long-lived upon earth¹¹⁸.” ⁴And, ye fathers, exasperate not your children: but educate them in the discipline and admonition of the Lord.

⁵Servants, be obedient to your masters after the flesh, with fear and trembling, in simplicity of your heart as unto Christ; ⁶not with eye-service, as men-pleasers; but as servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the soul; ⁷with good will doing service as to the Lord, and not unto men: ⁸knowing that whatsoever good a man doeth, the same shall he receive from the Lord, whether he be a bondman, or whether he be free.

⁹And ye masters, do the same things to them, avoiding menacing language: knowing that you also yourselves have a master in heaven; and there is no respect of persons with him.

¹⁰Finally, brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. ¹¹Be clothed in the panoply of God, that we may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. ¹²For our conflict is not merely against flesh and blood, but against principalities, and against powers, and against the rulers of the darkness of this world, and against wicked spirits in the aerial regions. ¹³Therefore take the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all things to stand. ¹⁴Stand therefore, girded about your loins with truth, and putting on the breastplate of righteousness; ¹⁵and underneath your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; ¹⁶and over all lifting up the shield of faith, with which ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked one. ¹⁷And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: ¹⁸praying at every opportunity with all prayer and supplication in Spirit, and watching for this very purpose with perseverance and intercession for all the saints; ¹⁹and for me that there may be given unto me utterance to open my mouth with boldness, to make known the mystery of the gospel, ²⁰for which I am an ambassador in bonds; that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

²¹But that ye also may know the things which concern me, and what I am doing, Tychicus will inform you of the whole, a beloved brother, and faithful in the Lord: ²²whom I have sent unto you for this very purpose, that ye may know our affairs, and that he might comfort your hearts.

²³Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. ²⁴Grace be with all those who love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity.

Written to the Ephesians from Rome by Tychicus.

THE
EPISTLE of PAUL the APOSTLE,
TO THE
PHILIPPIANS.

PAUL and Timothy, servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons: ²grace be unto you and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

³I give thanks to my God on every remembrance of you, ⁴always in every prayer of mine for you all, making request with joy, ⁵for your fellowship in the gospel from the first day even until now; ⁶being confident of this very thing, that he who hath wrought in you the good work will perfect it until the day of Jesus Christ: ⁷as it is right for me to think this of you all, because I bear you on my heart, both in my bonds and in my defence and the confirmation of the gospel, as being all of you sharers in my grace. ⁸For God is my witness, how earnestly I long after you all in the bowels of Jesus Christ. ⁹And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and all understanding; ¹⁰that ye may prove the things that are excellent, in order that ye may be sincere and without offence unto the day of Christ; ¹¹filled with fruits of righteousness, which by Jesus Christ are to the glory and praise of God.

¹²Now I wish you, brethren, to know, that the things which have befallen me have rather conduced to the progress of the gospel; ¹³so that my bonds are manifest in Christ through the whole palace, and all other places; ¹⁴and very many of our brethren in the Lord, assuming confidence from my chains, are more abundantly bold, fearlessly to preach the word. ¹⁵Some indeed do it in a spirit of envy and strife; but some also preach Christ with cordial good-will: ¹⁶the one indeed preach Christ out of contention, not with purity of intention, thinking to add affliction to my bonds: ¹⁷but the others of love, knowing that I am exposed for the defence of the gospel. ¹⁸What then? if Christ is preached in whatever manner it be, whether in pretext or reality, even in this do I rejoice, yea, and will rejoice. ¹⁹For I know that this shall issue in my salvation through your prayers, and the supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ, ²⁰according to my firm expectation and hope, that I shall be confounded by no event, but that with all boldness, as always hitherto, Christ shall now also be magnified in my body, whether by my life or death. ²¹For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. ²²But if it be his will, that I should live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my travail: and what to chuse I know not. ²³For I am in a strait between the two, having an earnest longing to be dissolved, and to be with Christ, for this is far, far better: ²⁴but to abide in the flesh may be more necessary for you. ²⁵And being so persuaded, I know that I shall stay and continue with you all for your progress and joy of faith; ²⁶that your glorying may abound in Christ Jesus for me by my coming again unto you.

²⁷Only conduct yourselves worthily as becometh the gospel of Christ; that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one soul wrestling together in the faith of the gospel; ²⁸and not dismayed on any occasion by your adversaries; which is indeed the proof of perdition to them, but of salvation to you, and that from God. ²⁹For this favour on the part of Christ is granted you, not only that ye should believe on him, but also that ye should suffer for his sake; ³⁰experiencing the same conflict which ye have seen in me, and now hear to be in me.

CHAP. II.

IF there be then any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any communion of spirit, if any bowels and compassions, ²fulfil ye my joy, that ye may be united in sentiment, having the same love, of one soul, of one mind. ³Let nothing be done contentiously or vain-gloriously; but in humility reckoning others superior to yourselves. ⁴Let not each aim at their own particular interests, but every man at those of others.

⁵Let the same sentiment of mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: ⁶who being in the form of God counted it no usurpation to claim equality with God: ⁷but emptied himself, assuming the form of a servant, made after the similitude of mortal men; ⁸and found in fashion as man, he humbled himself, becoming obedient to death, even to the death of the cross. ⁹Wherefore God also hath transcendently exalted him, and bestowed on him a name which is above every name: ¹⁰that to the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of beings celestial and terrestrial, and infernal; ¹¹and every tongue should confess that the Lord Jesus *is*

Messiah, to the glory of God the Father.

¹²Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always been obedient, not only during my presence with you, but now much more in my absence, with fear and trembling work out your own salvation. ¹³For it is God who worketh effectually in you both to will and to perform of his good pleasure.

¹⁴Do all things without murmurings or disputes: ¹⁵that ye may be blameless and harmless, the children of God, inoffensive, in the midst of an untoward and perverse generation, among whom ye shine as luminaries in the world; ¹⁶holding up the word of life, that I may glory in the day of Christ, that I have not run in vain, nor laboured in vain. ¹⁷Yea, and should I become the victim, in the sacrifice and service of your faith, I joy, and rejoice with you all. ¹⁸In like manner do ye also joy and rejoice with me.

¹⁹But I hope in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy shortly unto you, that I also may be refreshed in spirit, when I know your affairs. ²⁰For I have no one like minded with him, who will genuinely care for your affairs. ²¹For all seek their own interests, not those of Christ Jesus. ²²But ye have known the trial of him, that, as a son with a father, he hath served with me in the gospel. ²³Him therefore I hope to send immediately as soon as I see clearly what will become of me. ²⁴But I have confidence in the Lord that I myself shall come shortly. ²⁵But I have thought it necessary to send unto you Epaphroditus, my brother, and fellow-labourer, and fellow-soldier, but your messenger, and the minister who supplied my want. ²⁶For indeed he greatly longed after you all, and was very sorry that ye had heard that he had been sick. ²⁷For sick indeed he was, nigh unto death: but God had mercy on him; and not on him only, but on me also, that I might not have sorrow upon sorrow. ²⁸I have sent him therefore the more diligently, that seeing him once more ye may rejoice, and I be less sorrowful. ²⁹Receive him therefore in the Lord with all joy, and honourably treat those that are such: ³⁰for in the work of Christ he was nigh unto death indifferent about life, that he might afford me that service which it was not in your power to render me.

CHAP. III.

MOREOVER, brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not irksome, but is safe for you. ²Beware of dogs, beware of the malicious labourers, beware of the concision. ³For we are the circumcision, who serve God in spirit, and glory in Christ Jesus, and put no confidence in the flesh. ⁴Though I too might have confidence in the flesh; if any other man thinks that he may have confidence in the flesh, I may claim more: ⁵circumcised the eighth day, of the race of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of Hebrews; ⁶respecting the law, a Pharisee; with regard to zeal, persecuting the church; as touching the righteousness which is by the law, blameless. ⁷But what things were gain to me, these have I counted loss for Christ. ⁸Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the transcendently excellent knowledge of Jesus Christ my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and count them but as offals of ordure, that I may gain Christ, ⁹and be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is by the law, but that which is through faith in Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith: ¹⁰that I may know him, and the virtue of his resurrection, and communion with his sufferings, being conformed to his death; ¹¹if haply I may attain unto the resurrection of the dead. ¹²Not that I have already attained, or am now perfect: but I pursue, that I may overtake that for which also by his apprehension of me I am destined by Christ Jesus.

¹³Brethren, I count not myself to have overtaken it; but this one object I pursue, forgetting the things which are behind, and reaching out to those which are before, ¹⁴I press towards the mark for the prize of the divine calling from on high in Christ Jesus.

¹⁵Let as many of us therefore as are perfect, be thus minded: and if ye entertain any other sentiment, God also will unveil this unto you. ¹⁶Nevertheless, so far as we have advanced, be it our care to walk by the same rule, to mind the same thing.

¹⁷Be ye imitators, brethren, of me, and eye attentively those who walk so as ye have us for an example. ¹⁸For many walk, whom I have often mentioned to you, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the

enemies of the cross of Christ: ¹⁹whose end is perdition, whose God is their belly, and their glory in their shame, whose minds are occupied with earthly things. ²⁰But our conversation is in heaven as its citizens, from whence also we are expecting the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ, ²¹who shall transform our body of humiliation, that it may be conformed to his body of glory, according to the effectual working of him who is able to subdue even all things to himself.

CHAP. IV.

W HEREFORE, my brethren, beloved, and very dear to me, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, O beloved.

²I beseech Euodias, and I beseech Syntiche to be of one mind in the Lord. ³And I beseech thee also, my genuine associate, assist those women who laboured with me in the gospel, with Clement also, and my other fellow-labourers, whose names are in the book of life.

⁴Rejoice in the Lord always; again I say, Rejoice.

⁵Let your moderation be known unto all men.

The Lord is at hand. ⁶Be not anxious about any thing, but in every case by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving, let your petitions be made known unto God. ⁷And the peace of God which surpasseth all comprehension, shall guard your hearts and minds in Christ Jesus.

⁸Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are serious, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are amiable, whatsoever things are laudable, if there be any virtue, or any thing praise-worthy, pay attention to these things. ⁹Whatsoever things also ye have learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, these practise, and the God of peace shall be with you.

¹⁰Now I rejoiced greatly in the Lord, that now once more your thoughtful attention about me hath again sprung up, to which also your mind had been disposed, but ye had not found the opportunity. ¹¹Not that I mention this with a view to my indigence: for I have learned in whatever circumstances I am, to be content. ¹²I know how to be abased, and I know how to abound; in every state and in all situations I am instructed either to be full or famishing, either to enjoy abundance, or to suffer want: ¹³I am enabled for all things by Christ who strengtheneth me. ¹⁴Nevertheless ye have done nobly in your communications to me during my affliction.

¹⁵But know also, Philippians, that at my first preaching the gospel, when I went from Macedonia, no church communicated to me in the way of giving and receiving but ye alone. ¹⁶For in Thessalonica also ye sent me once, yea twice, a supply for my want. ¹⁷Not that I am anxious for a gift; but I am anxious to see fruit abounding on your account. ¹⁸But I have now all things, and abound: I am full, having received from Epaphroditus your bounty, an odour of sweet smell, an acceptable sacrifice, well pleasing to God. ¹⁹But my God will fully supply all your want, according to his riches in glory, by Christ Jesus. ²⁰Now to God, even our Father, be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

²¹Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren that are with me salute you. ²²All the saints salute you, specially those who are of Cæsar's household.

²³The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.
Unto the Philippians, written from Rome by Epaphroditus.

THE
EPISTLE of PAUL the APOSTLE,
TO THE
COLOSSIANS.

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothy a brother, ²to the saints at Colosse, and to the faithful brethren in Christ: grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

³We give thanks to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, always praying for you, ⁴having heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and the love ye show to all the saints; ⁵because of the hope laid up for you in the heavens, which ye have heard before in the word of truth, the gospel, ⁶which is come unto you, as it is also unto all the world; and beareth fruit, as also among you, from the day that ye heard and knew the grace of God in truth; ⁷even as ye have learned from Epaphras our beloved fellow-labourer, who is a faithful minister of Christ for you; ⁸who also declared to us your love in the Spirit. ⁹For this cause we also from the day we heard it have not ceased praying for you, and beseeching God that ye may be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; ¹⁰that ye may walk worthy of the Lord, well pleasing him in all things, in every good work fruitful, and increasing in the knowledge of God; ¹¹strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joy; ¹²giving thanks to God, even the Father, who hath made us meet for a portion in the inheritance of the saints in light; ¹³who hath plucked us out from the dominion of darkness, and transferred us into the kingdom of the Son of his love: ¹⁴in whom we have redemption through his blood, and forgiveness of sins. ¹⁵Who is the image of the invisible God, the prime author of all creation: ¹⁶for by him were all things created, celestial and terrestrial, visible or invisible, whether thrones, or dominations, or principalities, or powers, all were created by him, and for him: ¹⁷and he is before all, and by him all things subsist. ¹⁸And he is the head of the body, the church; he is the beginning, the first begotten from the dead, that he might be in all things pre-eminent. ¹⁹For it hath pleased the Father that in him all fulness should dwell; ²⁰and by him to reconcile all things to himself, making peace by the blood of his cross: by him, I say, whether they be things on earth, or things in the heavens. ²¹And you who in time past were all aliens, and enemies in mind by wicked works, hath he now reconciled, ²²by the body of his flesh, through death, to present you holy, and blameless, and irreprehensible in his presence: ²³if ye abide in faith grounded and firm, and never moved aside from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, and which hath been preached to the whole creation which is under heaven, of which I Paul am a minister.

²⁴Now I rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up in my flesh the measure of afflictions for Christ which remains to be endured for his body, which is the church, ²⁵of which I am a minister, according to the dispensation of God, which was given me for you to fulfil the ministry of the word of God—²⁶the mystery which was hid from ages and from generations, but is now unveiled to his saints; ²⁷to whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory: ²⁸whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus; ²⁹for which also I am labouring, conflicting in the energy of his might, which worketh in me powerfully.

CHAP. II.

FOR I wish you to know how great a struggle I sustain for you, and those at Laodicea, and as many as have not seen my face in the flesh; ²that their hearts may be comforted, firmly united together in love, and unto all riches of full assurance of understanding, in the knowledge of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ; ³in whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

⁴Now this I say, lest any man pervert you with specious discourse. ⁵For though I am absent from you in person, yet I am present with you in spirit, rejoicing and beholding your regular order, and the steadfastness of your faith in Christ. ⁶As therefore ye have received Christ Jesus the Lord, walk in him: ⁷rooted and built up on him, and confirmed in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving. ⁸Beware that no man make a prey of you by means of philosophy and

vain delusion, after the tradition of men, after the principles of the world, and not after Christ: ⁹for in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily; ¹⁰and ye are complete in him, who is the head of all principality and power: ¹¹in whom also ye have been circumcised with the circumcision not made with hands, by the putting off the body of the sins of the flesh, through the circumcision of Christ: ¹²buried with him in baptism, in which also ye have been raised up together with him by faith, the energy of God, who raised him from the dead.

¹³And you, who were dead in sins and in the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened with him, freely forgiving you all trespasses; ¹⁴and hath blotted out the handwriting in ordinances that was against us, which was the obstacle to us, and took it from the midst, nailing it to the cross; ¹⁵spoiling principalities and powers, he exposed them to view openly, triumphing over them on it. ¹⁶Let no man therefore judge you concerning what you eat, or what you drink, or the observance of a feast, or new moon, or the sabbaths; ¹⁷which are *merely* shadows of things to come: but the body is Christ's. ¹⁸Let no man juggle you out of your prize, voluntary in *his* humility and the worship of angels, intruding into things which he never saw, vainly puffed up by his carnal imagination; ¹⁹and not firmly attached to the head, from which the whole body, by joints and ligaments, harmoniously adjusted and closely compacted, increaseth with increase from God.

²⁰If then ye have been dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye dogmatically taught, ²¹eat not, nor talk, nor touch, ²²(all which things tend to corruption by abuse) according to the injunctions and doctrines of men? ²³Which things indeed hold forth an appearance of wisdom in will-worship, and humility, and bodily mortification, *though* not of any value, *but* a gratification to the flesh.

CHAP. III.

IF ye then be risen with Christ, seek the things which are above, where Christ is seated at the right hand of God. ²Fix your minds on things above, not on things on the earth. ³For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. ⁴When Christ shall appear, who is our life, then shall you also with him be manifested in glory. ⁵Mortify therefore your members which are on the earth, fornication, impurity, the vile passion, evil concupiscence, and insatiable desire, which is idolatry: ⁶for which things the wrath of God cometh upon the children of disobedience; ⁷in which ye also walked formerly when ye lived among them: ⁸but now ye have put away all these things, anger, asperity, malice, scandal, obscenity, out of your mouth.

⁹Lie not one to another, seeing ye have put off the old man with his practices; ¹⁰and have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him. ¹¹Where there is no difference whether a man be Greek or Jew, circumcised or uncircumcised, barbarian or Scythian, slave or freeman: but Christ is all and in all.

¹²Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindness, humility, meekness, long-suffering; ¹³forbearing one another, and freely forgiving one another, if any man hath a complaint against another: even as Christ hath freely forgiven you, so also do ye. ¹⁴But above all these things put on love, which is the bond of perfection. ¹⁵And let the peace of God set up its throne in your hearts, whereunto also ye have been called in one body; and be ye thankful.

¹⁶Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom, teaching and admonishing yourselves in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual canticles, singing with grace in your heart unto the Lord. ¹⁷And everything that ye do in word or in work, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.

¹⁸Wives be subject to your own husbands, as is fit in the Lord.

¹⁹Husbands, love your wives, and use no asperity against them.

²⁰Children, be obedient to your parents in all things; for this is well-pleasing to the Lord.

²¹Parents, irritate not your children, lest their spirit be broken.

²²Servants, obey in all things your masters after the flesh, not with eye-service as men-pleasers, but, in simplicity of heart, fearing God.

²³And in every thing that ye do, labour from the soul, as for the Lord, and

not man; ²⁴knowing that from the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye are servants to the Lord Christ. ²⁵But he that is guilty of injustice shall receive punishment for the wrong he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

CHAP. IV.

MASTERS, afford to your servants that which is just, and an equivalent, knowing that ye also have a Master in the heavens.

²Persevere in prayer, watching therein with thanksgiving; ³praying also at the same time for us, that God may open to us a door for the word, that I may speak the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in chains: ⁴that I may make it evident, as I ought to speak.

⁵Walk wisely with regard to those without, redeeming the time. ⁶Let your discourse be always gracious, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to reply to every man.

⁷All my affairs will Tychicus make known unto you, a beloved brother, and faithful minister, and fellow-servant in the Lord: ⁸whom I have sent unto you for this very purpose, that he might know your affairs, and comfort your hearts; ⁹with Onesimus, that faithful and beloved brother, who is one of you: they will make known unto you all things that have passed here.

¹⁰There salute you Aristarchus my fellow-prisoner, and Mark nephew to Barnabas, concerning whom ye have received injunctions; if he come unto you, receive him, ¹¹and Jesus, who is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These only are my fellow-labourers for the kingdom of God, who have been a comfort to me.

¹²Epaphras, one of you, saluteth you, a servant of Christ, always wrestling for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God. ¹³For I bear him witness that he hath great zeal for you, and for those in Laodicea, and those in Hierapolis.

¹⁴Luke, the beloved physician, saluteth you, and Demas.

¹⁵Salute the brethren that are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the church which is at his house. ¹⁶And when this epistle hath been read among you, cause that it also be read in the church of the Laodiceans, and that ye also read that from Laodicea. ¹⁷And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received from the Lord, that thou fulfil it.

¹⁸The salutation of Paul with mine own hand. Remember my chains. Grace be with you. Amen.

Written to the Colossians from Rome by Tychicus and Onesimus.

THE FIRST EPISTLE
OF
PAUL THE APOSTLE,
TO THE
THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

PAUL, and Silvanus, and Timothy, to the church of the Thessalonians in God the Father, and in the Lord Jesus Christ: grace unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. ²We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers; ³without ceasing calling to mind your work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, before our God and Father; ⁴knowing, brethren, beloved of God, your election. ⁵For our gospel came not unto you in word only, but in power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in great fulness of assurance; as ye know what manner of men we have been among you for your sakes. ⁶And ye became imitators of us, and of the Lord, receiving the word in much affliction, with joy of

the Holy Ghost; ⁷so that ye became models for all that believe in Macedonia and Achaia. ⁸For from you sounded forth the word of the Lord, not only into Macedonia and Achaia, but into every region also your fidelity towards God is gone out, so that we have no need to say any thing. ⁹For they publish concerning you what manner of entrance we had unto you, and how ye turned unto God from idols, to serve the living and true God, ¹⁰and to wait for his Son from the heavens, whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus, who delivereth us from the wrath to come.

CHAP. II.

FOR ye yourselves, brethren, know our entrance in to you, that it was not in vain. ²But though we had suffered before, and were infamously treated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our God to preach unto you the gospel of God amidst a great conflict. ³And our exhortation originated not from delusion, or impurity, or from guile; ⁴but as we have been approved of God to be entrusted with the gospel, so we speak, not as pleasing men, but God, who trieth our hearts. ⁵For neither at any time used we insinuating language, as ye know, nor a pretext for covetousness; God is witness: ⁶not seeking glory from men, neither from you, nor from others, though we might have been burdensome, as apostles of Christ. ⁷But we were gentle in the midst of you, as a nurse cherisheth her own infants. ⁸So, tenderly affected towards you, we could with pleasure have imparted to you not the gospel of God only, but our own lives also, because ye were beloved by us. ⁹For ye remember, brethren, our labour and toil: for night and day working hard, that we might be no burden to any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God. ¹⁰Ye are witnesses, and God also, how holily, and justly, and faultlessly we conducted ourselves among you that believe: ¹¹as ye know how *we treated* every one of you, as a father doth his children, exhorting you, and admonishing, and conjuring you, ¹²that ye should walk worthy of God, as calling you into his kingdom and glory.

¹³For this cause do we also give thanks to God unceasingly, because when ye received the word reported by us from God, ye received it not as the word of man, but, as it is in truth, the word of God, which worketh also effectually in you that believe. ¹⁴For ye, brethren, became imitators of the churches of God which are in Judea, in Christ Jesus: for ye suffered the same things also yourselves from your own countrymen, as they too have of the Jews; ¹⁵who both murdered the Lord Jesus and their own prophets, and have persecuted us, and please not God, and are in opposition to all mankind; ¹⁶forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles, that they might be saved, to fill up the measure of their iniquities always: but wrath is coming upon them to the extremity.

¹⁷But we, brethren, bereaved of you for a short moment, in person, not in heart, have more abundantly longed to see your face with great desire. ¹⁸Therefore we wished to have come unto you, even I Paul, once and again; but Satan prevented us. ¹⁹For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? Are not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at his coming? ²⁰For ye are our glory and joy.

CHAP. III.

WHEREFORE when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone: ²and sent Timothy our brother, and a minister of God, and our fellow-labourer in the gospel of Christ, that he might stablish you, and comfort you concerning your faith: ³that no man might be shaken by these tribulations; for ye yourselves know that thereunto we are appointed. ⁴For when we were with you, we told you before that we were about to suffer tribulation; as also it came to pass, and ye know. ⁵For this cause also, when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your fidelity, lest by any means the tempter had tempted you, and our labour should be in vain. ⁶But now when Timothy returned to us from you, and brought us the glad tidings of your faith and love, and that ye retain a kind remembrance of us always, earnestly desirous to see us, as we are also to see you: ⁷for this cause we have felt consolation, brethren, in you under all our tribulation and distress, because of your fidelity. ⁸For now we live, if ye stand fast in the Lord. ⁹For what sufficient thanks can we render to God for you, for all the joy with which we rejoice on your account before our God, ¹⁰night and day most fervently praying that we may see your face, and amply supply the

deficiencies of your faith?

¹¹Now God himself, and our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ direct our way unto you. ¹²And the Lord cause you to abound and overflow with love one to another, and towards all men, as we also do to you: ¹³to the end that your hearts may be established blameless in holiness before God and our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints.

CHAP. IV.

FINALLY, brethren, we beseech you therefore, and conjure you by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how ye ought to walk, and please God, so ye would abound more and more. ²For ye know what commandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus. ³For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that you should abstain from whoredom; ⁴that every one of you may know how to possess his own vessel in sanctification and honour, ⁵not in the vile passion of lewdness, as the Gentiles which know not God; ⁶that no man transgress against, or act dishonestly to his brother in this matter because the Lord is the avenger of all such things, as we have told you before, and testified. ⁷For God hath not called us unto impurity, but unto holiness. ⁸Therefore he that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his Holy Spirit.

⁹Now concerning brotherly love, I have no need to write unto you: for ye yourselves are divinely taught to love one another. ¹⁰And indeed ye practise it towards all the brethren that are throughout Macedonia: but we conjure you, brethren, to abound more and more; ¹¹and that you make it your study to live peaceably, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, even as we have enjoined you; ¹²that ye walk becomingly towards those without, and need no assistance from any person.

¹³Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren, concerning those who are fallen asleep, that ye be not afflicted, as the rest of *mankind* who have no hope. ¹⁴For if we believe that Jesus died, and rose again, so also those that have fallen asleep for Jesus shall God bring with him. ¹⁵For this I say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive, who are left unto the coming of the Lord, shall not prevent those who are fallen asleep. ¹⁶For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trumpet of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first: ¹⁷then we who are alive, who remain, shall be caught up together with them into the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air; and so shall we be ever with the Lord. ¹⁸Wherefore comfort one another with these words.

CHAP. V.

NOW concerning the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I should write to you: ²for yourselves know precisely that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. ³For when they say, Peace and safety, then sudden destruction rusheth upon them, as travail on a woman with child, and they shall in no wise escape. ⁴But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that the day should overtake you as a thief. ⁵Ye are all the children of light, and the children of day: we are not the children of night, nor of darkness. ⁶Let us not then sleep as do others; but let us watch and be sober. ⁷For they who sleep, sleep in the night, and they who are drunken, are drunken in the night; ⁸but let us who are of the day be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love, and for a helmet the hope of salvation. ⁹For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ, ¹⁰who died for us, that whether we sleep, or whether we wake, we may live together with him. ¹¹Wherefore comfort one another, and edify one another, as also ye do.

¹²Now we entreat you, brethren, to know those who labour among you, and preside over you in the Lord, and admonish you; ¹³and to account of them very highly in love for their work's sake. And live in peace among yourselves.

¹⁴Now we conjure you, brethren, admonish the unruly, comfort the feeble-minded, support the infirm, be patient with all men. ¹⁵See that no man return evil for evil to any man; but always pursue that which is

good, both towards one another, and towards all men.

¹⁶Rejoice evermore. ¹⁷Pray without ceasing. ¹⁸In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus to you-wards. ¹⁹Quench not the Spirit. ²⁰Despise not prophesyings. ²¹Prove all things; hold fast that which is good. ²²Abstain from all appearance of evil.

²³Now the God of peace himself sanctify you wholly; and may your whole spirit, and soul, and body be preserved faultless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. ²⁴Faithful is he that calleth you, who also will do it.

²⁵Brethren, pray for us. ²⁶Salute all the brethren with an holy kiss.

²⁷I conjure you by the Lord, that this epistle be read to all the holy brethren.

²⁸The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

The first epistle to the Thessalonians was written from Athens.

THE SECOND EPISTLE

OF

PAUL THE APOSTLE,

TO THE

THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

PAUL, and Silvanus, and Timothy, to the church of the Thessalonians in God our Father and in the Lord Jesus Christ: ²grace unto you and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. ³We are bound to give thanks to God always for you, brethren, as it is fit, because your faith groweth exceedingly, and the love of every one of you all towards each other aboundeth: ⁴so that we ourselves make our boast of you among the churches of God, for your patience and fidelity under all your persecutions and afflictions which ye endure: ⁵which is a manifest proof of the righteous judgment of God, that ye should be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which ye also suffer: ⁶seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you; ⁷and to you who are troubled, rest with us, at the revelation of the Lord Jesus Christ from heaven with his mighty angels, ⁸in a flame of fire, taking vengeance of them that know not God, and obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: ⁹who shall receive punishment, even eternal perdition, from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power: ¹⁰when he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired by all those who believe; because our testimony was believed among you in that day. ¹¹Wherefore also we pray continually for you, that our God would count you worthy of the calling, and fulfil all the good pleasure of his goodness, and the work of faith with power: ¹²that the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified by you, and you by him, according to the grace of our God and Lord, Jesus Christ.

CHAP. II.

NOW we entreat you, brethren, with regard to the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and our gathering together unto him: ²that ye be not hastily agitated with apprehension, nor troubled, neither by spirit, nor by discourse, nor by letter, as coming from us, as though the day of the Lord was instantly approaching. ³Let no man deceive you in any way: because that cannot be till the apostasy come first, and the man of sin appear, the son of perdition, ⁴who opposeth himself against, and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or is the object of adoration; so that he in the temple of God sitteth as God, exhibiting himself in public that he is God. ⁵Do ye not remember that when I was yet with you, I told you these things? ⁶And now ye know what withholdeth, that he may be

revealed in his own time. ⁷For the mystery of iniquity is already powerfully working; only he that withholdeth hitherto, will do so till he is removed. ⁸And then that lawless person will appear, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming; ⁹whose appearing is known by fanatical energy, displayed in all power, and signs, and lying miracles, ¹⁰and in every unrighteous delusion among those who perish: in consequence of which things they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. ¹¹And for this cause God shall send unto them the energy of delusion, that they should believe a lie: ¹²that they all might be damned who have not believed the truth, but have taken pleasure in unrighteousness. ¹³But we are bound to give thanks always to God for you, brethren, beloved of the Lord, because God hath elected you from the beginning unto salvation, by sanctification of the Spirit, and faith in the truth: ¹⁴whereunto also he called you by our gospel, in order to your acquisition of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. ¹⁵Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and firmly hold the injunctions delivered to you, as ye have been taught, whether by our discourse, or by letter.

¹⁶Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and our God, and Father, who hath loved us, and given us everlasting consolation, and good hope through grace, ¹⁷comfort your hearts, and stablish you in every good word and work.

CHAP. III.

F INALLY, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may run, and be glorified, even as among you; ²and that we may be delivered from unreasonable and wicked men: for there is not faith in all. ³But the Lord is faithful, who will stablish you, and keep you from the wicked one. ⁴But we have confidence in the Lord towards you, that the things which we have enjoined you, ye both do, and will do. ⁵And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into the patience of Christ.

⁶Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, to withdraw yourselves from every brother who walketh disorderly, and not according to the injunction which he hath received from us. ⁷For ye yourselves know how ye ought to imitate us; for we behaved not ourselves disorderly among you, ⁸neither did we eat bread with any man unpaid for, but with labour and toil worked night and day, that we might be burdensome to none of you: ⁹not that we have not such power, but that we might be ourselves an example for you to imitate. ¹⁰For when we were with you, this we enjoined you, that if a man would not work, neither should he eat. ¹¹For we hear that there are some among you who walk disorderly, doing no work, but being busy-bodies. ¹²Now such we command, and conjure, by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they labour, and eat their own bread.

¹³But ye, brethren, be not weary of well doing. ¹⁴And if any man obey not our word by letter, mark that man, and maintain no society with him, that he may be ashamed. ¹⁵Yet regard him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother. ¹⁶And the Lord of peace himself give you peace, by every means, in every situation.

The Lord be with you all.

¹⁷The salutation of Paul with my own hand, which is my sign in every letter: so I write.

¹⁸The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

The second epistle was written to the Thessalonians from Athens.

THE FIRST EPISTLE

OF

THE APOSTLE PAUL

TO

T I M O T H Y.

CHAP. I.

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the order of God, our Saviour, and Lord, Jesus Christ, who is our hope; ²to Timothy, my genuine son in faith: grace, mercy, and peace from God our Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord.

³As I exhorted thee to abide at Ephesus when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest enjoin certain persons to introduce no different doctrine, ⁴nor to attend to fables and endless genealogies, which give occasion to disputes rather than godly edification, which is by faith; *so do.* ⁵For the end of the commandment is love out of a clean heart, and good conscience, and faith unfeigned: ⁶from which some, having swerved, have turned aside to vain babbling; ⁷affecting to be doctors of the law, though they understand neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm. ⁸But we know that the law is good if a man use it according to its institution; ⁹knowing this, that the law is not made for the just man, but for the lawless and disorderly, for the ungodly and for sinners, for the unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for men-slayers, ¹⁰for whoremongers, for sodomites, for stealers of men, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing which is contrary to sound doctrine, ¹¹according to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, with which I have been put in trust. ¹²And I render thanks to him who hath strengthened me, even to Christ Jesus our Lord, that he hath counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry; ¹³who was before a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and insolently violent, But I was admitted to mercy, for I did it ignorantly in unbelief; ¹⁴but the grace of our Lord hath exceedingly abounded with faith and love, which is in Christ Jesus. ¹⁵It is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am the chief. ¹⁶But for this end obtained I mercy, that in me, the chief, Jesus Christ might shew forth all long-suffering, for a pattern to those who should after believe in him unto eternal life. ¹⁷Now to the king eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

¹⁸This commandment, son Timothy, I give thee, according to the prophecies which were before delivered concerning thee, that by them thou mightest war a good warfare; ¹⁹holding faith and a good conscience, which some having renounced, as touching the faith, have been shipwrecked: ²⁰of whom are Hymeneus and Alexander, whom I have delivered over unto Satan, that they may be corrected, so as to blaspheme no more.

CHAP. II.

I EXHORT therefore, first of all, that there be offered supplications, prayers, intercessions, thanksgivings for the whole race of mankind: ²for kings, and all that are in a state of eminence, that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and seriousness. ³For this is becoming, and acceptable before God our Saviour; ⁴who wills all men to be saved, and come to the acknowledgment of truth. ⁵For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; ⁶who gave himself a ransom for all, the testimony to be born in his appointed times; ⁷of which I am ordained a preacher and apostle, (I speak the truth in Christ, I lie not,) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and truth.

⁸I will then that men pray in every place, lifting up holy hands without wrath or doubting: ⁹in like manner also that the women dress themselves in decent apparel, with modesty and sobriety; not with plaited tresses, or gold, or pearls, or very costly clothing, ¹⁰but as becometh women professing godliness, with good works.

¹¹Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection: ¹²for I permit not a woman to teach in public, or to assume authority over the man, but to abide in silence. ¹³For Adam was first formed, Eve afterwards. ¹⁴And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived, by transgression fell. ¹⁵But she shall be saved through childbearing, if they abide in faith, and love, and holiness with sobriety.

CHAP. III.

IT is a true saying, If a man seeks the office of a bishop, he desireth a laudable employment. ²A bishop then must be irreprehensible, the husband of one wife, temperate, sagacious, respectable, hospitable, well qualified for teaching; ³not addicted to wine, not using hard words or blows, not greedy of base gain; but gentle, not quarrelsome, not a lover of money; ⁴presiding over his own family with propriety, having his children under subjection with all gravity of behaviour: ⁵for if a man knoweth not how to order his own family, how shall he take proper care of the church of God? ⁶Not a new convert, lest he be puffed up, and fall into the devil's crime. ⁷He must also have a fair character from those who are without, that he may not fall into reproach, and into the snare of the devil.

⁸The deacons also in like manner must be grave, not doubletongued, not addicting themselves to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre; ⁹holding the mystery of the faith with a pure conscience. ¹⁰And let these also be first proved, and if found blameless, then let them enter on the deacon's office.

¹¹Their wives in like manner must be grave women, not addicted to scandal, sober, faithful in all things.

¹²Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ordering well their children and their own families. ¹³For they who discharge the office of a deacon with propriety, acquire to themselves a respectable station *in the church*, and great boldness in the faith which is in Jesus Christ.

¹⁴These things I write to thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly: ¹⁵but should I be delayed, that thou mayest know how it behoveth thee to conduct thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and the pedestal of truth. ¹⁶And confessedly great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifested in the flesh, justified by the Spirit, seen of angels, preached among the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.

CHAP. IV.

NOW the Spirit speaketh expresly, that in the latter days some will apostatise from the faith, giving heed to spirits of delusion, and doctrines of devils; ²men who teach lies with hypocrisy; and have their own consciences cauterised; ³prohibiting marriage, and enjoining abstinence from particular meats, which God created to be received with thanksgiving by the faithful, and those who acknowledge the truth. ⁴For every creature of God is good, and none to be rejected, if used with thanksgiving: ⁵for it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer. ⁶If thou suggest these truths to the brethren, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith and sound doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained. ⁷But profane and antiquated fables reject, but exercise thyself unto godliness. ⁸For bodily exercise is of little advantage, but godliness is profitable for all things, having the promise of the life which now is, and of that which is to come. ⁹This is a faithful saying, and deserving all acceptance. ¹⁰For therefore do we labour and are exposed to abuse, because we have hoped in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, especially of the faithful. ¹¹Announce and teach these things. ¹²Let no man despise thy youth; but be a pattern of the faithful, in discourse; in conduct, in love, in spirit, in faith, in purity. ¹³Till I come, apply to reading, to exhortation, to teaching. ¹⁴Neglect not the gift which is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, with imposition of the hands of the presbytery. ¹⁵Let these things be thy care; be wholly devoted to them; that thy progress may be evident to all men. ¹⁶Take heed unto thyself, and to thy doctrine; abide in them: for so doing thou shalt both save thyself, and those who hear thee.

CHAP. V.

REBUKE not harshly an aged man, but admonish him as a father; the younger men as brethren; ²the aged women as mothers; the younger as sisters, with all purity. ³Honour the widows, that are widows indeed. ⁴But if any widow has children or grandchildren, let them learn as their first duty to shew their piety towards their own family, and make a grateful return to their progenitors: for this is becoming and acceptable before God. ⁵But she who is a widow indeed, and abandoned to solitude, hopeth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers

night and day. ⁶But she who lives voluptuously is dead, though she liveth. ⁷And these things inculcate, that they may be blameless. ⁸But if any man provide not for his own relations, and especially for those more immediately of his own family, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.

⁹Let no widow be put on the list under sixty years of age, who hath been the wife of one husband, ¹⁰bringing attestation of her good works; that she hath well educated her children, that she hath been hospitable to strangers, that she hath washed the saints feet, that she hath assisted the afflicted, that she hath followed diligently every good work. ¹¹But the younger widows reject: for when they give themselves to wantonness contrary to Christ, they will marry; ¹²incurring censure, for having violated their former engagement. ¹³And at the same time also they learn to be idle, visiting about in the houses; and not merely idle, but talkative and inquisitive, speaking things they ought not. ¹⁴I would therefore have the younger widows to marry, bear children, govern their house, give no occasion to the adversary to bring a reproach on them. ¹⁵For some are already turned aside after Satan. ¹⁶But if any man or woman who believes hath widows their relations, let him provide for them, and let not the church be burdened; that there may be a sufficiency for the real widows.

¹⁷Let the elders who preside properly be counted worthy of double honour, especially those who are laborious in preaching and teaching. ¹⁸For the Scripture saith, "Thou shalt not muzzle the ox while he treadeth out the corn¹¹⁹." And again, "The labourer is worthy of his hire."

¹⁹Against a presbyter receive not an accusation, except it be from two or three witnesses. ²⁰Those who sin rebuke before all, that the rest also may tremble.

²¹I adjure thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without prejudice, doing nothing by partiality.

²²Lay hands hastily on no man, nor share another's sins: keep thyself pure; ²³confine thyself no longer to water-drinking; but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake, and thy frequent indispositions. ²⁴Some men's sins are glaringly manifest, going before to judgment; and after others also they follow *to detection*. ²⁵In like manner also the good works of *some* are previously manifest; and it is not possible that what they have besides should be concealed.

CHAP. VI.

LET as many slaves as are under the yoke account their own masters worthy of all honour, that the name of God and the doctrine be not blasphemed. ²But they who have believing masters, let them not think less of them, because they are brethren; but serve them the rather, because they are faithful and beloved, who have equally partaken of the benefit. These things teach and enjoin. ³If any man teach another doctrine, and attend not to the sound words, which are those of Jesus Christ our Lord, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness; ⁴he is conceited, knowing nothing, but delirious with disputes and quarrels about words, from whence come wrath, contentions, evil speakings, wrong suspicions, ⁵perverse wranglings of men corrupt in mind, and destitute of truth, who think to make gain of godliness; depart from such men. ⁶But godliness with contentment is great gain. ⁷For that we brought nothing into the world is evident, neither can we carry any thing out of it. ⁸Having then food and raiment, let us be therewith content. ⁹For they who will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful passions, which sink men in the abyss of destruction and perdition. ¹⁰For the love of money is the root of all evils, which some coveting, have wandered away from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

¹¹But thou, O man of God, flee from these things; but pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness. ¹²Strain every nerve in the noble conflict of faith, lay fast hold on eternal life, unto which also thou hast been called, and hast confessed the good confession before many witnesses.

¹³I conjure thee in the presence of God, who giveth life to all things, and of Christ Jesus, who witnessed that noble confession before Pontius

Pilate; ¹⁴that thou observe this injunction spotless, irreproachable, unto the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ: ¹⁵which in his own appointed times he will shew forth, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; ¹⁶who alone possesseth immortality, inhabiting light inaccessible, whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and glory eternal. Amen.

¹⁷Charge the rich in this world not to be lifted up with pride, nor to trust on the stability of wealth, but on the living God, who giveth us richly all things for our enjoyment; ¹⁸to do good, to be rich in generous actions, to take pleasure in liberality, ready to distribute; ¹⁹laying up treasure for themselves a noble foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life.

²⁰O Timothy, guard the sacred deposit, avoiding profane trifling talk, and antitheses of misnamed science: ²¹which some affecting have erred concerning the faith.

Grace be with thee.—Amen.

The first epistle was written from Laodicea, which is the metropolis of Phrygia Pacatiana.

THE SECOND EPISTLE

OF

PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO

T I M O T H Y.

CHAP. I.

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of the life which is in Christ Jesus, ²to Timothy, my beloved son: grace, mercy, peace, from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

³I thank God, whom I serve from my forefathers with a pure conscience, that I keep up a constant remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day; ⁴earnestly desiring to see thee, remembering thy tears, that I might be filled with joy; ⁵recalling to my memory the unfeigned faith which was in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and in thy mother Eunice; and I am persuaded that *it is* in thee also. ⁶For which cause I remind thee that thou fan into a flame the divine gift, which is in thee by the imposition of my hands. ⁷For God hath not given us a spirit of fear; but of courage, and of love, and of sobriety.

⁸Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but suffer affliction with me in the gospel, supported by the power of God; ⁹who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before time had a beginning; ¹⁰but is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and brought to light life and immortality by the gospel: ¹¹whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles. ¹²For which cause also I suffer these things; but I am not ashamed: for I know on whom I have placed my confidence, and am persuaded that he is mighty to guard my deposit unto the great day.

¹³Model thy teaching according to the pattern of the sound discourses, which thou hast heard from me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus. ¹⁴The glorious deposit committed to thy trust, guard by the Holy Ghost who dwelleth in us.

¹⁵Knowest thou this, that all those of Asia have deserted me? among whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes. ¹⁶The Lord grant mercy unto the household of Onesiphorus because he frequently was a refreshment to my soul, and was not ashamed of my chain: ¹⁷but, when he was at Rome, he sought me out diligently, and found me. ¹⁸The Lord grant that he may find mercy with the Lord in the great day; and how liberally he

ministered to me at Ephesus, thou knowest better than any other person.

CHAP. II.

THOU therefore, my son, be mighty in the grace which is in Jesus Christ. ²And the things which thou hast heard of me before many witnesses, these commit to faithful men, who shall be qualified to teach others also. ³Thou therefore endure hardships, as a brave soldier of Jesus Christ. ⁴No man who enters the army involves himself with secular affairs; that he may please the person who hath enlisted him. ⁵And if a man contend in the public games, he is not crowned victor, unless he contend according to the laws. ⁶The husbandman who toils is the first who ought to partake of the fruits. ⁷Consider what I say; and the Lord give thee understanding in all things.

⁸Remember that Jesus Christ of the seed of David was raised from the dead, according to my gospel: ⁹for which I suffer affliction, even unto chains as a malefactor; but the word of God is not bound. ¹⁰Therefore I endure all things for the sake of the elect, that they also may obtain the salvation which is in Jesus Christ with eternal glory.

¹¹It is a faithful saying: for if we be dead with him, we shall also live with him: ¹²if we suffer with him, we shall also reign with him: if we renounce him, he also will renounce us: ¹³if we are unbelieving, he abideth faithful; he cannot contradict himself. ¹⁴Put them in mind of these things, adjuring them before the Lord not to quarrel about words of no use, but tending to the perversion of the audience.

¹⁵Be diligent to present thyself before God approved, a workman that need not blush, rightly dividing the word of truth. ¹⁶But profane vain babblings avoid: for they will proceed to greater lengths of impiety. ¹⁷And their discourse will eat like as a gangrene; of whom are Hymeneus and Philetus; ¹⁸who with respect to the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection hath been already; and pervert the faith of some. ¹⁹Nevertheless the stable foundation of God standeth firm, having this seal, the Lord knoweth those who belong to him. And, let every man who mentions the name of the Lord depart from unrighteousness.

²⁰But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and silver, but also of wood and pottery; and some for an honourable use, and others for baser service. ²¹If therefore a man preserve himself pure from these things, he shall be a vessel for honour, sanctified and highly useful to the master, ready for every good work.

²²But flee youthful passions, and pursue righteousness, faith, love, peace, with those who call upon the Lord out of a pure heart. ²³But foolish and uninformative disputes avoid, knowing that they produce quarrels. ²⁴And a servant of the Lord ought not to quarrel; but to be gentle to all men, apt to teach, forbearing, ²⁵with meekness correcting those who are opposers, if at last God may give unto them repentance so as to submit to the conviction of the truth; ²⁶and that they may escape out of the snare of the devil, who have been captured by him for his will.

CHAP. III.

BUT this know, that in the last days distressing times will come. ²For men will be self-lovers, money-lovers, boasters, vainglorious, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, ³unnatural, implacable, slanderers, intemperate, inhuman, averse to goodness, ⁴treacherous, wilful, puffed up *with pride*, lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God; ⁵holding the form of godliness, but denying the power of it: from these men turn with aversion. ⁶For such are they who insinuate themselves into houses, and captivate weak women laden with accumulated sins, and actuated by a variety of passions, ⁷always learning, yet never able to attain unto the knowledge of truth. ⁸But in the same manner as Jannes and Jambres opposed Moses, so do these also set themselves in opposition to the truth; men corrupt in mind, reprobate respecting the faith. ⁹But they shall not proceed to the uttermost; for their infatuation shall be evident to all men, as theirs also was.

¹⁰But thou hast fully known my doctrine, conduct, purpose, faith, long-suffering, love, patience, ¹¹the persecutions, the sufferings, which beset me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra; what persecutions I endured, yet out of them all the Lord delivered me. ¹²And all indeed who will live godly in Christ Jesus will be persecuted. ¹³But wicked men and

impostors will proceed from bad to worse, deceiving and deceived. ¹⁴But abide thou in the things which thou hast learned and believed, knowing of whom thou hast learned them; ¹⁵and that from a child thou hast known the sacred writings, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Jesus Christ. ¹⁶All scripture is given by the inspiration of God, and advantageous for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness ¹⁷that the man of God may be properly furnished, fully qualified for every good work.

CHAP. IV.

I ADJURE thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the living and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom; ²preach the word, be urgent, in season, out of season; reprove, enjoin, exhort with all long suffering and doctrine. ³For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own inclinations will set up a herd of teachers for themselves, having the itch of hearing; ⁴and will turn away their ears from the truth, and listen unto fables. ⁵But watch thou in all things, endure hardship, do the work of an evangelist, fully discharge thy ministry. ⁶For I am now ready to be sacrificed, and the time of my dissolution approaches. ⁷I have struggled hard in the honourable contest, I have finished the race, I have kept the faith: ⁸henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, shall give me at that day: yet not to me only, but also to all who have loved his appearing.

⁹Hasten to come to me shortly: ¹⁰for Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is gone unto Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia; Titus to Dalmatia. ¹¹Luke alone is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with thee; for he is very useful to me in the ministry. ¹²But Tychicus I have sent to Ephesus.

¹³The cloke which I left behind me at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest bring, and the books, especially the parchments.

¹⁴Alexander the brazier did me many ill offices: the Lord repay him according to his works: ¹⁵against whom be thou also on thy guard, for he hath greatly resisted our words.

¹⁶At my first apology no man stood by me, but all forsook me: (may it not be imputed to them!) ¹⁷but the Lord stood by me, and strengthened me, that by me the preaching might be fully discharged, and that all the Gentiles might hear; and I was snatched out of the lion's mouth. ¹⁸And the Lord will deliver me from every evil work, and preserve me for his celestial kingdom: to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

¹⁹Salute Priscilla and Aquila, and the house of Onesiphorus. ²⁰Erastus hath abode at Corinth: but Trophimus I left behind me at Miletum sick.

²¹Hasten to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

²²The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.

The second epistle to Timothy, appointed the first bishop of the Ephesian church, was written from Rome, when the second time Paul stood before the Cæsar Nero.

THE

EPISTLE of PAUL the APOSTLE

TO

T I T U S.

CHAP. I.

PAUL, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of the elect of God, and the knowledge of truth which leads to godliness; ²in hope of life eternal, which God, who cannot lie, hath promised before time had a being; ³but hath manifested in his

own appointed season his word by the preaching, with which I have been entrusted, according to the command of our Saviour God; ⁴to Titus, my genuine son after the common faith, be grace, mercy, peace, from God the Father and our Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.

⁵For this purpose I left thee behind me at Crete, that thou mightest direct the regulations which remained to be executed, and that thou shouldst appoint presbyters in every city, as I charged thee to do: ⁶if there be a man blameless, the husband of one wife, having children who believe, not under an accusation or debauchery, or disorderly conduct. ⁷For a bishop ought to be irreproachable, as the steward of God; not self-willed, not irritable, not addicted to wine, not quarrelsome, not greedy of filthy lucre; ⁸but the stranger's host, the good man's friend, grave, just, holy, temperate; ⁹firmly attached to the faithful word, according to the doctrine delivered, that he may be able to exhort with sound instruction and to confute the opposers. ¹⁰For there are many disorderly persons vainly talkative, and under a spirit of delusion, especially some of the circumcised; ¹¹whose mouths ought to be muzzled, who pervert whole families, teaching things which they ought not, for the sake of base gain. ¹²One of them, a poet of their own nation, hath said, The Cretans are always liars, wicked beasts, slothful gluttons. ¹³This testimony is true. For which cause rebuke them with severity, that they may be sound in the faith; ¹⁴not attending to Jewish fables, and injunctions of men, who have turned away from the truth. ¹⁵All things indeed are clean to the clean: but to the defiled and to the unbelievers there is nothing clean; but their very mind and conscience are defiled. ¹⁶They profess to know God; but in works deny him, being abominable and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.

CHAP. II.

BUT speak thou the things which become sound doctrine: ²that the elder men be sober, grave, discreet, sound in faith, in love, in patience. ³That the elder women also be sacredly becoming in their behaviour, not slanderers, not enslaved by much wine, teachers of propriety; ⁴that they instruct the young women to be discreet, to love their husbands, to love their children, ⁵to be sober, domestic, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not ill reported of. ⁶The younger men in like manner exhort to be sober minded. ⁷In all things approving thyself as a pattern of good works: in thy teaching, shewing integrity, gravity, incorruptibility, ⁸sound discourse, incapable of confutation; that he who is in opposition may be confounded, having nothing faulty to say of you.

⁹Let servants be subject to their own masters, in all things to be agreeable to them; not contradicting; ¹⁰not embezzling their property, but demonstrating all good fidelity; that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things.

¹¹For the grace of God which leads to salvation hath appeared unto all men, ¹²instructing us, that denying ungodliness and worldly affections, we should live soberly and righteously, and godly in the present day; ¹³expecting the blessed hope, and glorious appearing of our great God and Saviour Jesus Christ; ¹⁴who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify to himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works. ¹⁵These things speak and enjoin, and reprove with all authority. Let no man despise thee.

CHAP. III.

REMIND them to be subject to princes and those invested with authority, to obey magistrates, to be ready for every good work, ²to slander no man, to be inoffensive, gentle, shewing all meekness to all men. ³For we ourselves also in time past were thoughtless, disobedient, erroneous, enslaved by various passions and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, hating one another. ⁴But even then the kindness and love of God our Saviour to man shone forth, ⁵not for works of righteousness which we had done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the laver of regeneration, and by renovation of the Holy Spirit; ⁶which he poured out upon us richly through Jesus Christ our Saviour; ⁷that justified by his grace, we might become heirs in hope of eternal life.

⁸Faithful is the saying, and of these things I wish thee firmly to testify, that they who have believed in God be careful to be pre-eminent in good works. These are becoming and advantageous to men. ⁹But foolish disquisitions, and genealogies, and disputes, and contentions about the law avoid; for they are unprofitable and vain.

¹⁰An heretical person after a first and second admonition reject; ¹¹knowing that such a one is perverted, and sinneth, being self-condemned.

¹²When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, hasten to come to me unto Nicopolis: for there I have determined to pass the winter.

¹³Send forward diligently Zenas the lawyer and Apollos, that nothing may be wanting for them. ¹⁴And let those who belong to us learn also to be pre-eminent in good works for all necessary calls, that they be not without fruits.

¹⁵All that are with me salute thee. Salute those who love us with fidelity.

Grace be with you all. Amen.

This epistle was written to Titus appointed by suffrage first bishop of the church of Crete, from Nicopolis in Macedonia.

THE

EPISTLE of PAUL the APOSTLE,

TO

PHILEMON.

PAUL, a prisoner of Christ Jesus, and Timothy a brother, to Philemon the beloved, and our fellow-labourer, ²and to Apphia the beloved, and to Archippus our fellow-soldier, and to the church at thy house: ³grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

⁴I thank my God always, making mention of thee in my prayers, ⁵hearing of thy love and faith which thou hast towards the Lord Jesus, and unto all the saints; ⁶that there may be an operative communication of thy faith made known by every good thing, which is in you towards Jesus Christ. ⁷For we have great joy and consolation in thy love, because the bowels of the saints have been refreshed by thee, brother. ⁸Wherefore, though I have in Christ great liberty to enjoin thee what is becoming, ⁹I rather for love's sake entreat, being such as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner for Jesus Christ. ¹⁰I entreat thee for my son, whom I have begotten during my bonds, Onesimus: ¹¹who in time past hath been an unprofitable servant to thee, but now very profitable to thee and to me: ¹²whom I have sent back; thou therefore receive him, even as my own bowels: ¹³whom I wished to detain about myself, that in thy stead he might have waited upon me during my bonds for the gospel: ¹⁴but without thy consent would I do nothing; that this good deed of thine might not be as of necessity, but from thy own choice. ¹⁵For to this end perhaps was he separated from thee for a season, that thou mightest receive him for ever; ¹⁶no longer as a slave, but above a slave, as a brother beloved, especially by me, but how much more by thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord? ¹⁷If therefore thou holdest me a sharer with thee, receive him as myself. ¹⁸If he hath injured thee or oweth thee ought, put that to my account; ¹⁹I Paul have given it under my own hand, I will repay it, not to say to thee, that thou owest even thine own self unto me. ²⁰Yea, brother, I wish to have joy in thee in the Lord: refresh my bowels in the Lord. ²¹Having confidence in thy obedience, I have written unto thee, knowing that thou wilt do more than I say. ²²But at the same time prepare me also a lodging: for I hope that through your prayers I shall be given unto you.

²³There salute thee Epaphras, my fellow-prisoner in Christ Jesus;

²⁴Mark, Aristarchus, Demas, Luke, my fellow-labourers.

²⁵The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Amen.

THE EPISTLE
TO THE
H E B R E W S.

CHAP. I.

GOD, who spake to the fathers of old at various times, and in different manners by the prophets, ²in these last days hath spoken to us by a Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; ³who being the splendour of his glory, and the very impress of his substance, and upholding all things with his powerful word, by himself having effected the cleansing of our sins, he sat down at the right hand of Majesty on high; ⁴made as much superior to the angels, as he hath inherited a more distinguished name than they. ⁵For to which of the angels ever said he, "My Son art thou, I have to-day begotten thee¹²⁰?" And again, "I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son¹²¹?" ⁶And again, when he introduces the first-begotten into the world, he saith, "Let all the angels of God also worship him¹²²." ⁷And concerning the angels indeed he thus speaks: "Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministering servants a flame of fire¹²³." ⁸But to the Son, "Thy throne, O God, is unto eternity; a sceptre of rectitude is the sceptre of thy kingdom. ⁹Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of exultation above those who partake with thee¹²⁴." ¹⁰"And thou from the beginning, O Lord, hast founded the earth, and the heavens are the works of thine hands. ¹¹They will be destroyed, but thou remainest; and they all will grow old as a garment, ¹²and as a cloak thou wilt wrap them up, and they will undergo a change: but thou art the same, and thy years will never end¹²⁵." ¹³Unto which indeed of the angels said he ever, "Sit at my right hand until I put thine enemies for a footstool of thy feet¹²⁶?" ¹⁴Are they not all ministerial spirits, sent to perform service on account of those who are about to inherit salvation?

CHAP. II.

FOR this reason we ought to attend more diligently to the things which have been heard, lest by any means we let them flow by us. ²For if the discourse spoken by angels was confirmed, and every transgression and disobedience received a just punishment as its due, ³how shall we escape if we neglect so great salvation, which, commencing at the beginning to be spoken by the Lord, was confirmed unto us by those who had heard him; ⁴God superadding his testimony with them, by signs, and wonders, and various miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to his own will? ⁵For he hath not subjected the future world, of which we are speaking, to the angels. ⁶But one in a certain passage testifieth, saying, "What is man, that thou rememberest him, or a son of man, that thou regardest him?" ⁷"Thou hast made him for a little while lower than angels, thou hast crowned him with glory and honour, and hast placed him over the works of thy hands: ⁸thou hast subjected all things under his feet¹²⁷." Now in subjecting all things to him, he left nothing unsubjected to him; but at present we see not yet all things subjected to him. ⁹But we see Jesus for a little while made lower than angels, by the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour, that, by the grace of God, he might taste of death for every one. ¹⁰For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to perfect the Author of their salvation by sufferings. ¹¹For both he that sanctifies, and they who are sanctified, are all of one. For which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren, ¹²saying, "I will declare thy name to my brethren, in the midst

of the church I will sing hymns to thee¹²⁸.” ¹³And again, “I will place my confidence in him¹²⁹.” And again, “Behold! Here am I, and the children which God hath given me¹³⁰.”

¹⁴Seeing therefore that the children have partaken of flesh and blood, he also himself, in exact resemblance, partook of the same, that by death he might destroy him who held the power of death, that is, the devil; ¹⁵and deliver those, even as many as through their whole life were subjects of bondage to the fear of death. ¹⁶For he verily took not on him the angelic nature, but assumed that of the seed of Abraham. ¹⁷Wherefore he ought in all things to be made like to his brethren, in order to become a merciful and faithful high-priest in those things which relate to God, to make a propitiation for the sins of the people: ¹⁸for inasmuch as he hath himself suffered, having been tempted, he is able to succour those who are tempted.

CHAP. III.

WHEREFORE, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, contemplate the apostle and high-priest whom ye confess, Jesus Christ; ²who was faithful to him who appointed him, as Moses also was in all his house. ³For this personage hath been counted worthy of higher glory than Moses, inasmuch as he who built it, hath greater honour than the house. ⁴For every house is built by some person; but he who is the architect of all things is God. ⁵And Moses indeed was faithful in all that house of his as a servant, to bear testimony of the things which should be after spoken; ⁶but Christ as a son over his own house: whose house are we, if we hold firmly the confidence and glorying of hope stedfast unto the end. ⁷Wherefore, as the Holy Ghost saith¹³¹, To day if ye will hear his voice, ⁸harden not your hearts, as in that bitter provocation, at the day of the temptation in the wilderness; ⁹when your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works during forty years. ¹⁰Wherefore I was provoked against that generation, and said, They are always deluded in heart, and they have not known my ways: ¹¹so I swore in my wrath that they shall not enter into my rest. ¹²Take heed, brethren, that there be not in any one of you a wicked heart of infidelity, *evident* in departure from the living God: ¹³but exhort one another daily, whilst to-day remains, that no one of you be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin. ¹⁴For we are partakers with Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence firm unto the end; ¹⁵while it is said, To-day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts as in the provocation. ¹⁶For some, though they had heard, provoked him; yet not all who came out of Egypt by Moses. ¹⁷But against whom was he incensed forty years? Was it not against those who had sinned, whose corpses fell in the wilderness? ¹⁸And to whom did he swear that they should not enter into his rest, but to those who did not believe? ¹⁹So we see that they could not enter in because of unbelief.

CHAP. IV.

LET us fear then lest, though a promise be left of entering into his rest, any one of you should appear to fail of obtaining it. ²For we are hearing the same gospel preached as they did; but the word heard did not profit them, not being incorporated by faith with those who heard it. ³For we who have believed, have entered into the rest, even as he said, “So, I sware in my wrath, that they shall not enter into my rest;” and that notwithstanding the works were done from the foundation of the world. ⁴For he said in a certain passage concerning the seventh day to this purport, “And God rested on the seventh day from all his works¹³².” ⁵And in this passage again, “They shall not enter into my rest.” ⁶Forasmuch therefore as it remaineth for some to enter into it, and they who first had the gospel preached to them entered not in because of unbelief; ⁷again he limiteth a certain day, saying by David, To-day, after so long a time; as it is said, “To-day if ye will hear his voice harden not your hearts.” ⁸For if Joshua had given them the rest, he would not afterwards have spoken of another day. ⁹A sabbatical rest then still remaineth for the people of God. ¹⁰For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath rested from his works, as God did from his own. ¹¹Let us then earnestly endeavour to enter into that rest, lest any person fall after the same example of unbelief. ¹²For the word of God is quickening, and energetic,

and sharper than every two-edged sword, and piercing through and through, so as to divide both soul and spirit, both joints and spinal marrow, and critically judges the thoughts and intents of the heart.

¹³Even creation is not invisible before him, but all things are naked, and fully displayed before his eyes, to whom we must give our account.

¹⁴Having then a great high-priest passed through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast the confession. ¹⁵For we have not an high-priest incapable of a fellow-feeling with our infirmities, but one tempted in all points, in exact resemblance with ourselves, sin excepted.

¹⁶Let us therefore approach with boldness the throne of grace, that we may receive mercy, and find grace for seasonable help.

CHAP. V.

FOR, every high-priest taken from among men, is constituted on behalf of men for those services which relate to God, that he should offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins: ²being able to feel tenderly for the ignorant and erroneous; forasmuch as he is himself encompassed with infirmity. ³And on this account he ought, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer sacrifice for sins. ⁴And no man assumes to himself this honour, but he who is called of God, even as Aaron was. ⁵So Christ also did not himself assume the glory to become high-priest, but *HE gave it* who spake to him, "Thou art my Son; I have this day begotten thee." ⁶As he saith also in another passage, "Thou art priest forever after the order of Melchisedec¹³³;" ⁷who in the days of his flesh, with strong crying and tears, having offered up prayers and supplications to him who was able to save him from death, and being heard for his reverential awe, ⁸though he was a son, he learned obedience from the things which he suffered: ⁹and complete himself, he became the author of eternal salvation to all who obey him; ¹⁰publicly proclaimed of God high-priest after the order of Melchisedec.

¹¹Concerning whom we have much to discourse, and of difficult interpretation to explain, seeing ye are dull of hearing. ¹²For though ye ought for the time to be teachers of others, ye have again need that some one teach you the leading principles of the oracles of God; and are become as those who need milk, and not solid food. ¹³For every one who useth milk is inexperienced in the word of righteousness: for he is an infant. ¹⁴But solid nourishment is proper for grown men, even as many as by habit have their organs of perception exercised for the discernment both of good and evil.

CHAP. VI.

WHEREFORE, desisting from initiatory discourse respecting Christ, let us advance towards perfection; not again laying a foundation of repentance from dead works, and faith in God, ²of the doctrine of ablutions, and of imposition of hands, and of the resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. ³And so we will do, if God permit. ⁴For it is not possible to renew again unto repentance those who have been once illuminated, and have tasted the celestial gift, and have been made partakers of the Holy Ghost, ⁵and have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, ⁶and yet have fallen away: for they crucify again to themselves the Son of God, and expose him to public infamy. ⁷For the earth which imbibes the rain which often falls upon it, and bringeth forth herbage suitable for those by whom it is cultured, receiveth a blessing from God; ⁸but if it produceth thorns and thistles, it is abandoned, and near the curse of *barrenness*, whose end will be for burning.

⁹But, beloved, we are persuaded concerning you that things are better, and connected with salvation, though we thus speak. ¹⁰For God is not unjust, to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have demonstrated in his name, having ministered assistance to the saints, and still ministering. ¹¹But we earnestly desire that every one of you do manifest the same diligence, in order to obtain the full assurance of hope unto the end: ¹²that ye be not slothful, but imitators of those who, by faith and long suffering, are inheriting the promises. ¹³For God when he gave the promise to Abraham forasmuch as he had nothing greater to swear by, swore by himself, ¹⁴saying, "Verily, blessing, I will bless thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee¹³⁴." ¹⁵And so after long patient

waiting he obtained the promise. ¹⁶For men indeed swear by something greater than themselves; and an oath for confirmation is with them conclusive in all disputes. ¹⁷And thus God, designing more abundantly to demonstrate to the heirs of promise the immutability of his will, pledged himself by oath, ¹⁸that by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold on the hope set before us; ¹⁹which, as an anchor for our soul, we hold both sure and stedfast, and entering into the sanctuary within the veil, ²⁰into which the forerunner for us is entered, even Jesus, made after the order of Melchisedec an high-priest for ever.

CHAP. VII.

FOR this Melchisedec, king of Salem, a priest of God most high, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him; ²to whom also Abraham gave a tenth share of all the spoil: being, as the interpretation of his name imports, first, King of righteousness, and then also King of Salem, that is, King of peace: ³without father, without mother, without genealogy, having neither beginning of days nor end of life, but in exact resemblance with the Son of God, abideth a priest for ever. ⁴Now observe how great is this *Melchisedec*, to whom even Abraham the patriarch gave the tenth of the spoils. ⁵For they indeed of the sons of Levi, who are admitted to priesthood, have an order to receive tithes from the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though also sprung from the loins of Abraham. ⁶But he who derived not his genealogy from them, received tithes from Abraham, and blessed him who had the promises; ⁷but without all dispute the inferior receives benediction from the superior. ⁸And here indeed dying men receive the tithes, but there he hath a testimony borne to him that he liveth. ⁹And, if I may so say, through Abraham even Levi, who receiveth tithes, paid tithes. ¹⁰For he was as yet in the loins of his father when Melchisedec met him. ¹¹If therefore there was perfection by the Levitical priesthood (for under that the people had the law given to them), what farther need was there that another priest should arise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron? ¹²For the priesthood being transferred, there is of necessity an abrogation of the law also. ¹³For he to whom these things are spoken belonged to another tribe, in which no man approached the altar. ¹⁴For it is evident that our Lord sprang from Judah; to which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning the priesthood; ¹⁵and it is yet more abundantly evident, that there should arise another priest after the likeness of Melchisedec, ¹⁶who was not made such by the law of a carnal commandment, but by the power of a life indissoluble. ¹⁷For the testimony is, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec. ¹⁸For there is indeed an abrogation of the preceding command, because of its weakness and inutility. ¹⁹For the law led to no perfection, but was an introduction to a better hope, by which we draw nigh unto God.

²⁰Moreover, forasmuch as he was not *made priest* without an oath, ²¹(for they indeed were made priests without an oath; but he with an oath, by him who said unto him, "The Lord hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec:") ²²by so much is Jesus become the surety of a better testament.

²³And they indeed are many who were made priests, because by death they were prevented from abiding *in their office*: ²⁴but this person, because he abideth for ever, hath a priesthood that passeth not over to another. ²⁵Wherefore also he is able to save to the uttermost those who come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them. ²⁶For such an high-priest was suitable to us, holy, inoffensive, spotless, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens: ²⁷who hath not daily need, as the high-priests, first, to offer sacrifice for their own sins, afterwards, for those of the people: for this he did once for all, when he offered up himself. ²⁸For the law constitutes men high-priests, though they have infirmity; but the word of the oath, which is since the law, constitutes the Son, unto eternity completely perfect.

CHAP. VIII.

NOW the summary of the things spoken is this: we have such an high-priest, who hath taken his seat at the right hand of the throne

of Majesty in the heavens; ²a minister of the holies, and of the true tabernacle which the Lord hath pitched, and not man. ³For every high-priest is appointed to offer both gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is necessary that this person also have somewhat to offer. ⁴For if he were on earth, he would not be a priest, there being priests who offer gifts according to the law; ⁵who perform the service after the figure and shadow of things in the heavens, as Moses was divinely instructed, when he was about to finish the tabernacle. "For see," saith God, "that thou make all things according to the model shewed thee on the mount¹³⁵." ⁶But now hath Christ obtained a more excellent ministry, inasmuch as he is the mediator of a better covenant, which hath been established on better promises.

⁷For if that first covenant had been faultless, there would have been no place sought for a second. ⁸For finding fault with them, he saith, "Behold, the days are coming, saith the Lord; and I will accomplish for the house of Israel and for the house of Judah a new covenant: ⁹not according to that covenant which I made with their fathers, in the day when I laid hold upon their hand to lead them up out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant, and I took no longer care of them, saith the Lord. ¹⁰For this is the covenant which I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; giving my laws to their understanding, even on their hearts will I inscribe them: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people. ¹¹And they shall no more teach every man his neighbour, and every one his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me from the mean man of them unto the great among them. ¹²For I will be placable to their unrighteousnesses and their sins, and their iniquities I will never more remember¹³⁶." ¹³In calling it a new covenant, he hath made the first antiquated. Now what is antiquated and grown aged, is near evanescence.

CHAP. IX.

THEN also the first tabernacle had indeed regulations for the divine service, and a sanctuary furnished. ²For the tabernacle was prepared; the first part, in which was both the candlestick, and the table, and the shew-bread, which is called THE HOLY. ³But behind the second veil was the tabernacle, called THE HOLY OF HOLIES: ⁴having the golden censer, and the coffer of the covenant, overlaid with gold within and without, in which were the golden urn containing the manna, and Aaron's rod which had budded, and the stone tables of the covenant; ⁵and above, over it the cherubim of glory, overshadowing the propitiatory. ⁶Now when these things were thus disposed, the priests entered continually into the first tabernacle indeed, performing the divine services: ⁷but into the second once in every year entered the high-priest alone, not without blood, which he offered for his own inadvertencies, and for those of the people: ⁸the Holy Ghost thus signifying, that the way into THE HOLIES was not yet made manifest, whilst the first tabernacle held its station; ⁹which figurative representation *continues* unto the present time, according to which both gifts and sacrifices are offered, which cannot, with respect to conscience, make him perfect who performs the services, ¹⁰as they consist only of meats, and drinks, and different ablutions, and corporal services, until the appointed time of perfect reformation.

¹¹But Christ becoming the high-priest of future good things, through a better and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is, not of this creation; ¹²nor by the blood of goats and of calves, but by his own blood, he entered once for all into THE HOLIES, having obtained eternal redemption.

¹³For if the blood of bulls, and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the defiled sanctifieth to corporal purification, ¹⁴how much more shall the blood of Christ, who, by the eternal Spirit, offered up himself in sacrifice without blemish to God, cleanse our conscience from dead works, that we may perform divine service to the living God?

¹⁵And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that, death being suffered for the redemption of transgressions committed against the first testament, they who are called might receive the promise of an eternal inheritance. ¹⁶For where a testament is, of necessity the death of the testator is implied. ¹⁷For a testament is valid when men are dead; for else it is of no efficacy whilst the testator is alive. ¹⁸Wherefore also that first testament was not consecrated without

blood. ¹⁹For when every command according to the law had been spoken by Moses to all the people, taking the blood of calves and of goats, with water, and scarlet wool, and hyssop, he sprinkled both the book itself and all the people, ²⁰saying, This is the blood of the testament which God hath enjoined unto you. ²¹And the tabernacle also, and all the vessels employed in the divine service, he in like manner sprinkled with blood. ²²And almost all things are purified by blood according to the law, and without effusion of blood there is no remission of sin. ²³There was a necessity therefore that the representations of the things in heaven should be purified by these; but the celestial things themselves with better sacrifices than these. ²⁴For Christ is not entered into THE HOLIES made with hands, the antitypes of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear before the presence of God for us: ²⁵and not that he should often offer up himself in sacrifice, as the high-priest enters every year into THE HOLIES with blood not his own, ²⁶(for in that case he must have suffered often since the foundation of the world:) but now once for all at the consummation of the ages hath he been manifested for the abolishing sin by the sacrifice of himself. ²⁷And forasmuch as it is appointed to men once to die, but after this the judgment, ²⁸so Christ having been once offered in sacrifice to bear the sins of men, will appear the second time without sin, to those who expect him, for their salvation.

CHAP. X.

NOW the law, having a shadow of the good things which were to come, not the very substance of the things, cannot possibly, by the same sacrifices which they offer year by year continually, make those perfect who approach *God*; ²else they would have discontinued to make the offering, because they who performed the service being once made clean, would have had no more sense of sins on their conscience. ³But in these *sacrifices* there is a commemoration of sins every year. ⁴For it is impossible that the blood of bulls and goats should take away sin. ⁵Wherefore, coming into the world, he saith, "Sacrifice and oblation thou hast not chosen, but thou hast exactly fashioned a body for me: ⁶thou hast had no delight in whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices for sin: ⁷then I said, Here am I; (in the volume of the book it is written of me) I come to do thy will, O God¹³⁷." ⁸Having said before that sacrifice, and oblation, and whole burnt-offerings and sin-offerings thou hast not chosen, nor takest pleasure in, (which are offered according to the law,) ⁹he then added, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God. He abolishes the first that he may establish the second. ¹⁰By the which will we are sanctified through the oblation of the body of Jesus Christ, once for all.

¹¹And every priest standeth indeed daily performing the divine service, and frequently offering the same sacrifices, which cannot possibly take away sins: ¹²but this person, having offered one sacrifice for sins, for ever hath seated himself at the right hand of God; ¹³henceforth waiting till his enemies be put as a footstool for his feet. ¹⁴For by one oblation he hath made those perfect for ever who are sanctified.

¹⁵Now the Holy Ghost also beareth this testimony to us: for after declaring before, ¹⁶"This is the testament which I will appoint to them after those days, saith the Lord; giving my laws to their hearts, even on their minds will I inscribe them;" ¹⁷he adds, "and their sins and their iniquities I will in no wise remember any more." ¹⁸Now where there is remission of these, no more offering for sin *is needed*.

¹⁹Having therefore, brethren, entire liberty of entrance into THE HOLIES by the blood of Jesus—²⁰a way, which he hath consecrated for us, newly opened, and giving life, through the vail, that is, his flesh; ²¹and having a great priest over the house of God, ²²let us come to him with a true heart, in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and the body washed with pure water: ²³let us hold fast the profession of hope unwavering, (for he who promises is faithful.) ²⁴and let us attentively observe one another, to excite an ardour of love and of good works: ²⁵not deserting the assembling of ourselves together, as is the custom with some, but exhorting to it; and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.

²⁶For if we sin wilfully after we have received the knowledge of the truth, no more sacrifice for sins remaineth; ²⁷but a certain terrible expectation of judgment, and a burning indignation, ready to devour

these enemies.

²⁸Any man who treated the law of Moses with neglect, was put to death, without mercy, on the deposition of two or three witnesses: ²⁹by how much, think ye, shall he be counted worthy of more condign punishment who hath trampled on the Son of God, and regarded the blood of his testament, by which he was sanctified, as an unclean thing, and hath treated the gracious Spirit contumeliously? ³⁰For we know him who declares, "Vengeance is mine, I will repay, saith the Lord¹³⁸." And again, "The Lord will judge his people." ³¹It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

³²But remember the past days in which, after ye had been illuminated, ye endured a great conflict of sufferings; ³³partly while publicly exposed to revilings and tribulations, partly as being in communion with those who were treated in this manner. ³⁴For ye have been fellow-sufferers with my bonds, and received with joy the plundering of your properties, knowing in yourselves that you have in the heavens a better substance, and permanent.

³⁵Recede not therefore from your boldness of profession, which brings a great recompence of reward. ³⁶For ye have need of patience, that after ye have done the will of God, ye may receive the promise. ³⁷For yet a little, very little while, and he that is coming will come, and will not delay. ³⁸"The just man then will live by faith¹³⁹;" and if he draw back, my soul shall have no delight in him. ³⁹But we are not of those who turn back unto perdition; but of those who believe to the salvation of the soul.

CHAP. XI.

NOW faith is the realizing confidence of the things hoped for, and the demonstration of things unseen: ²for thereby the ancients obtained a testimony of approbation.

³By faith we understand that the worlds were exactly formed by the word of God, so that the visible objects were not made out of things which now appear.

⁴By faith Abel offered unto God a sacrifice of more excellence than Cain, by which he received a testimony that he was a righteous man, God bearing witness upon his gifts: and by this, though dead, he still speaketh.

⁵By faith Enoch was translated, so as not to see death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he was recorded to have been acceptable to God. ⁶But without faith it is impossible to be acceptable; for he must believe, who cometh unto God, that he exists, and is a rewarder of those who diligently seek him.

⁷By faith Noah, being divinely warned respecting things not yet seen, filled with reverential awe, prepared an ark for the salvation of his household, by which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith.

⁸By faith Abraham, called to go forth unto a place which he should in future obtain as an heritage, obeyed; and he went forth, not knowing whither he was going. ⁹By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as a foreign land, dwelling in tents with Isaac and Jacob, the co-heirs of the same promise. ¹⁰For he expected a city having foundations, of which God is the planner and architect.

¹¹By faith also that very Sarah, who was barren, received ability for the conception of seed, and past the usual time of life brought forth a child, because she accounted that he who promised it, would be true to his promise. ¹²Wherefore even from one person, and he become dead in respect to these matters, there sprang a race, as the stars of heaven for multitude, and as the sand, which is on the shore of the sea, innumerable. ¹³All these died in faith, not having received the promises, but beholding them at a great distance, though believing and embracing them, and confessing that they were strangers and sojourners in the land. ¹⁴Now they who speak thus, shew evidently that they are in earnest search of their native country. ¹⁵And if indeed they had fixed their minds on that from whence they had gone forth, they might have had opportunity to go back to it again. ¹⁶But now their longing desires are after a better country, that is, the heavenly one: wherefore God is not ashamed of them to be called their God: for he hath prepared a city for them.

¹⁷By faith Abraham, when tried, offered up Isaac; and he who had

received the promise, presented in sacrifice his only begotten son, ¹⁸unto whom it had been said, "That by Isaac shall there be a seed bearing thy name¹⁴⁰;" ¹⁹reasoning that God was able to raise him up again, even from the dead; from whence also figuratively he had received him.

²⁰By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau with regard to future things.

²¹By faith, dying Jacob blessed each of the sons of Joseph, and bowed down in adoration upon the top of his staff.

²²By faith Joseph, approaching his end, made mention of the children of Israel's departure thence; and gave a charge respecting his bones.

²³By faith Moses, after he was born, was hid three months by his parents, because they saw the child singularly beautiful; and they were not intimidated by the command of the king.

²⁴By faith Moses, when he became a grown man, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter; ²⁵choosing rather to suffer afflictions with the people of God, than to have a temporary fruition of sin; ²⁶esteeming the reproach of Christ riches greater than the treasures of Egypt: for he looked earnestly to the recompence of reward. ²⁷By faith he forsook Egypt, not intimidated by the wrath of the king: for he boldly persisted, as seeing the invisible *Jehovah*. ²⁸By faith he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of the blood, that the destroyer of the first-born might not touch them.

²⁹By faith they passed through the Red sea, as on dry ground; which the Egyptians attempting to do were swallowed up.

³⁰By faith the walls of Jericho fell, after being circled round seven days.

³¹By faith Rahab the harlot perished not with those who were infidels, having received the spies in peace.

³²And what more shall I say: for the time would fail me if I should make a narration concerning Gideon, and Barac, and Sampson, and Jephtha, and David, and Samuel, and the prophets: ³³who by faith vanquished kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, ³⁴extinguished the force of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, they were made strong out of weakness, became mighty in battle, routed the armies of aliens. ³⁵Women received by a resurrection their dead: but others were tortured, not accepting a release; that they might obtain a better resurrection: ³⁶and others had trials of mockeries and whippings, yea and farther of chains and imprisonment: ³⁷they were stoned, they were sawn asunder, they experienced the severest trials, they were slain by the edge of the sword: they went about wrapped in skins of sheep and goats, destitute of all things, pressed down with afflictions, suffering all kind of misery; ³⁸of whom the world was not worthy: they wandered up and down in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens, and caverns of the earth. ³⁹And these all though having obtained a testimony by faith, received not the promise: ⁴⁰God having provided for us something better, that without us they should not attain to perfection.

CHAP. XII.

T HEREFORÉ also seeing we have so great a cloud of witnesses surrounding us, laying aside every weight, and that most easily besetting sin, let us run with patience the race lying before us, ²earnestly looking up to Jesus the author and the finisher of faith; who, for the joy set before him, endured the cross, despising shame, and hath sat down at the right hand of the throne of God. ³Consider then attentively him that endured from sinners such opposition against himself, that ye be not wearied out, fainting in your souls. ⁴As yet ye have not resisted unto blood, struggling against sin. ⁵And have you forgotten the exhortation which is addressed to you, as children, "My son, count not lightly of the Lord's childlike correction, nor faint when under his rebuke: ⁶for whom the Lord loveth he correcteth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth¹⁴¹." ⁷If ye patiently endure correction, God carries himself towards you as his children: for who is the son whom the father doth not correct? ⁸If then ye are without correction, of which all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not children.

⁹If then we have had the fathers of our flesh for correctors, and revered them; shall we not much more be under subjection to the Father of spirits, and live? ¹⁰For they indeed for a few days as seemed

proper to themselves corrected us; but he for our own advantage, that we might be partakers of his holiness. ¹¹Now all correction at the moment seemeth not to be cause for joy, but for sorrow; but after a while it produceth peaceable fruit of righteousness to those who have thereby been disciplined.

¹²Wherefore stretch out again the hands that hang down, and the paralytic knees; ¹³and make strait paths for your feet, that what is halting may not be turned out of the way; but that it may rather be healed.

¹⁴Earnestly seek peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord: ¹⁵carefully observing lest any of you fail of attaining the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and by it many be defiled; ¹⁶lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of bread parted with his birthrights. ¹⁷For ye know, that when afterwards he wished to inherit the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place for a change of *his father's* mind, though he sought it earnestly with tears. ¹⁸For ye have not approached the mountain that could only be groped for, and that burned with fire, and the thick cloud, and the darkness, and the tempest, ¹⁹and the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words, which they who heard, earnestly begged that the discourse might not be directed to them: ²⁰for they could not bear the charge given, and "If but a beast touch the mountain he shall be stoned, or shot through with a dart¹⁴²." ²¹and so terrible was the appearance, that Moses said, I am exceedingly afraid and trembling: ²²but ye are come unto mount Sion, and to the city of the living God, to the heavenly Jerusalem, and to myriads of angels, ²³and to the general assembly and church of the first-born registered in the heavens, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of just men perfected, ²⁴and to Jesus the mediator of the new testament, and to the blood of sprinkling, which speaketh better things than that of Abel.

²⁵Beware that ye reject not him that speaketh: for if they escaped not, who rejected him, that upon earth spake by divine influence, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him who speaks from heaven: ²⁶whose voice then shook the earth, but now he hath promised, saying, "Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also the heaven¹⁴³." ²⁷Now this word yet once more manifests the removal of the things shaken, as of things formed, that the things not shaken may endure.

²⁸Wherefore receiving a kingdom that cannot be shaken, may we hold fast the grace, by which we can offer to God acceptably divine service, with reverence and pious awe: ²⁹for our God is a devouring fire.

CHAP. XIII.

L ET brotherly love continue. ²Forget not to exercise hospitality: for thereby some have entertained angels unawares.

³Remember those who are in chains, as in chains with them; and those who are suffering afflictions, as being yourselves also in the body.

⁴Marriage is honourable for all persons, and the marriage bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.

⁵Let the tenor of your life be divested of the love of money; content with your present possessions: for he hath said, "I will in no wise leave thee, neither will I in any case forsake thee¹⁴⁴." ⁶So that we may with confidence say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me.

⁷Remember your presidents, who have spoken to you the word of God: the ultimate issue of whose conduct attentively observing, be imitators of their fidelity.

⁸Jesus Christ *is* the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever. ⁹Be not tossed about by various and strange doctrines: for it is good to have the heart firmly established by grace, not by meats, in which observances they who have walked have found no manner of advantage. ¹⁰We have an altar, of which they have no right to eat, who perform the service in the tabernacle. ¹¹For the bodies of those beasts are burnt without the camp, whose blood for a sin offering is brought into the holy of holies by the high-priest. ¹²Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate.

¹³Therefore let us go forth to him without the camp, bearing his reproach. ¹⁴For we have not here an abiding city, but we earnestly seek that which is to come. ¹⁵By him therefore let us offer a sacrifice of praise

perpetually to God, that is the fruit of our lips confessing his name. ¹⁶But of beneficence, and liberal distribution, be not unmindful: for such sacrifices God accepts with delight.

¹⁷Obey your presidents, and be subject to them: for they are vigilant for your souls, as being to render an account, that they may do it with joy, and not groaning: for that would be disadvantageous for you.

¹⁸Pray for us: for we have confidence that we maintain a good conscience, in all things desirous to conduct ourselves with propriety.

—¹⁹But I entreat you the rather to do this, that I may the more speedily be restored to you.

²⁰Now the God of peace, who brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, the great pastor of the sheep, by the blood of the everlasting testament, ²¹make you fit for every good work to do his will, producing in you that which is acceptable in his sight, through Jesus Christ; to whom be glory unto the everlasting ages. Amen.

²²But I entreat you, brethren, suffer the word of exhortation; for I have written to you in few words.

²³Know that our brother Timothy is set at liberty; with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you.

²⁴Salute all your presiding ministers, and all the saints. They of Italy salute you.

²⁵Grace be with you all.—Amen.

Written to the Hebrews from Italy by Timothy.

THE EPISTLE GENERAL
OF
JAMES THE APOSTLE.

CHAP. I.

JAMES, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes which are dispersed, greeting.

²My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into various trials; ³knowing that the proof of your faith produceth patience. ⁴But let patience have its work perfected, that ye may be perfect and complete, deficient in nothing. ⁵But if any man of you be deficient in wisdom, let him ask it of God, who giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not and it shall be given him. ⁶But let him ask in faith, harbouring no doubt: for he who is doubtful is like a wave of the sea, driven by the wind, and in constant agitation. ⁷For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing from the Lord. ⁸A double-minded man is unsteady in all his ways.

⁹Let the brother low in station rejoice in his elevation: ¹⁰but the rich, in his abasement: for as the flower of grass he shall pass away. ¹¹For the sun arose with fervour, and burnt up the grass, and the flower of it fell off, and the beauty of its appearance was lost: just so the rich man in his course of life shall wither away. ¹²Blessed is the man who patiently supports temptation: for when he is proved, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to those who love him. ¹³Let no man under temptation say, I am tempted of God: for God is incapable of temptation from evils, and he tempteth no man: ¹⁴but every person is tempted, when by his own peculiar passion he is born away, and ensnared. ¹⁵Then passion impregnated, bringeth forth sin, and sin reaching its consummation, bringeth forth death. ¹⁶Be not deceived, my beloved brethren.

¹⁷Every good gift, and every perfect gift, is from above, descending from the father of illuminations, with whom there is no variableness, nor shadow of change. ¹⁸Of his own choice he produced us by the word of truth, that we might be a sort of first fruit of his creatures. —¹⁹Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath. ²⁰For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God. ²¹Wherefore laying aside all vicious pollution, and

the abundance of iniquity, receive with meekness the ingrafted word, which hath power to save your souls. ²²But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving yourselves by false reasoning. ²³For if any man be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like a man that looks at his natural face in a glass; ²⁴for he beheld himself, and went away, and immediately forgot what sort of person he was. ²⁵But he that looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and perseveres, this man not being a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, he shall be blessed in his practice.

²⁶If any man thinks he is a religious character among you, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain. ²⁷Pure religion and undefiled with God even the Father is this, To pay diligent attention to the orphans and widows in their affliction, and to preserve himself spotless from the world.

CHAP. II.

MY brethren, hold not the faith of our glorious Lord Jesus shewing a respect for persons. ²For if there come into your congregation a man with a gold ring, and in splendid apparel, and there come in also a poor man in a sordid garb; ³and ye fix your eyes upon him who bears the splendid robe, and say to him, Sit thou here in an honourable place; and ye say to the poor man, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool: ⁴are you not thus partial among yourselves, and form your decision from bad reasonings? ⁵Hear me, my beloved brethren. Hath not God elected the poor of this world to be rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which God hath promised to those who love him; ⁶but ye have put contempt on the poor man? Do not the rich men tyrannize over you? and they drag you to the tribunals. ⁷Do they not blaspheme that honourable name by which ye are called? ⁸If indeed ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well: ⁹but if ye have respect of persons, ye commit sin, and are convicted by the law as transgressors. ¹⁰For whosoever shall keep the whole law, but offendeth in a single particular, he is chargeable with the breach of all. ¹¹For he that said, Thou shalt not commit adultery, said also, Thou shalt not commit murder. Now if thou dost not commit adultery, yet dost commit murder, thou art a transgressor of the law.

¹²So speak, and so act, as those who shall be judged by the law of liberty. ¹³For judgment without mercy shall be on him who shewed no mercy, and mercy glorieth against judgment.

¹⁴What is the advantage, my brethren, if a man profess to have faith, but hath not works; can faith save him? ¹⁵Now if a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, ¹⁶and should one of you say to them, Go in peace, be warm, be replenished with food: yet if ye give them not the necessaries for their body; what doth it avail? ¹⁷So also faith, if it hath not works, is dead itself.

¹⁸Perhaps a man will say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith by thy works, and I will shew thee by my works my faith. ¹⁹Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe and tremble. ²⁰But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? ²¹Was not our father Abraham justified by works, when he offered up Isaac his son upon the altar? ²²Thou seest that faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith consummated. ²³And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, "Abraham believed God, and it was imputed to him for righteousness¹⁴⁵;" and he was called "the friend of God¹⁴⁶." ²⁴Observe therefore that by works a man is justified, and not by faith merely. ²⁵But was not Rahab the harlot in like manner justified by works, when she entertained the messengers, and sent them away by a different road? ²⁶For as the body without breath is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

CHAP. III.

MY brethren, be not many teachers, knowing that we shall receive a severer judgment. ²For in many things we all offend. If any man offend not in word, he is a perfect man, and capable of reining in the whole body. ³Behold, we put bits into the horses' mouths, that they may obey us, and we turn about their whole body. ⁴Behold also the ships, though so great, and driven by tempestuous winds, are turned about by

the smallest rudder, whithersoever the inclination of the pilot pleaseth. ⁵So also the tongue is a little member, and proudly vaunts. Behold how great a pile of wood, a little fire kindleth! ⁶And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: in such manner is the tongue placed among our members, that it defileth all the body, and setteth on fire the circle of nature; and is set on fire of hell. ⁷For every species of wild beasts, and also of birds, of reptiles, and even of fishes, is tamed, and hath also been tamed by human ingenuity: ⁸but the tongue can no man tame; it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison. ⁹With it we bless God even the Father; and with the same we curse men, though after the likeness of God. ¹⁰Out of the same mouth goeth forth blessing and cursing. These things, my brethren, ought not to be thus. ¹¹Doth a fountain from the same aperture spout forth sweet water and bitter? ¹²Can a fig-tree, my brethren, produce olives; or a vine figs? so also can no fountain send forth salt water and sweet.

¹³Who is a wise man and intelligent among you, let him shew in a becoming conduct his works with the meekness of wisdom. ¹⁴But if ye have bitter envy and contention in your heart, boast not, and lie not against the truth. ¹⁵This is not the wisdom which cometh from above, but is earthly, sensual, diabolical. ¹⁶For where envy and contention dwell, there is tumult and every vile deed. ¹⁷But the wisdom from above is first pure, then peaceable, meek, easily persuadable, full of mercy and good fruits, impartial, and void of dissimulation. ¹⁸But the fruit of righteousness in peace is sown for those who are peacemakers.

CHAP. IV.

FROM whence come wars and conflicts among you? spring they not from hence, even from your passions, which war in your members? ²Ye eagerly covet, yet have not: ye murder, and are envious, yet cannot obtain *your object*; ye wage war, but have not, because ye pray not. ³Ye ask, and receive nothing, because ye ask vilely, in order to consume it on your sensual appetites.

⁴Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that friendship with the world is enmity against God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is set down an enemy to God. ⁵Think ye that the scripture saith without meaning, The spirit which dwelleth in you strongly urges to envy? ⁶But he giveth mightier grace. Wherefore he saith, "God sets himself against the proud, but giveth grace to the lowly¹⁴⁷."

⁷Be in subjection then to God. Resist the devil, and he will fly from you. ⁸Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Make clean your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double-minded. ⁹Be bitterly afflicted and lament, and let your tears run down; let your laughter be converted into mourning, and your joy into dejection. ¹⁰Be humbled in the presence of God, so he will exalt you.

¹¹Traduce not one another, brethren. He that traduceth his brother, and judgeth his brother, traduceth the law, and judgeth the law: but if thou judgest the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but as judge. ¹²There is one lawgiver, who can save or destroy: who art thou that judgest another man?

¹³Come now, ye that talk, To-day or to-morrow we will go to such a town, and do business there during one year, and traffic, and make great profits: ¹⁴though ye know nothing of what shall be to-morrow. For what is your life? It is but a vapour which appeareth for a little while, and then vanishes away. ¹⁵Instead of your saying, If the Lord pleases, and we are alive, then we will do this or that thing. ¹⁶But now ye glory in your proud boastings: all such glorying is wicked. ¹⁷Therefore if a man knoweth how to act properly, and doth not, he is criminal.

CHAP. V.

COME now, ye rich men, let your tears run down, howling over your miseries which are coming upon you. ²Your wealth is corrupted, and your robes are moth-eaten. ³Your gold and silver is cankered with rust; and the rust upon them is a testimony against you, and shall eat into your flesh as fire. Ye have heaped up treasures in the last days. ⁴Behold, the wages of the workmen who have mowed down your fields, which is kept back by you from them, crieth out: and the loud moans of the reapers are entered into the ears of the Lord of Sabaoth.

⁵Ye have gormandized upon the earth, and lived in every luxury: ye have pampered your hearts, as in a day of feasting on the victim slain. ⁶Ye have falsely condemned, ye have murdered the just man; nor doth he resist you. ⁷Be patient therefore, brethren, until the coming of the Lord. See, the husbandman waits for the precious fruit of the earth, in patient expectation for it, till it receives the former and the latter rain. ⁸Be ye also patient; stablish your hearts; for the coming of the Lord is at hand.

⁹Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest be ye condemned: lo! the judge standeth at the gates. ¹⁰My brethren, take a pattern for suffering affliction, and patience from the prophets, who have spoken to you in the name of the Lord.

¹¹Behold, we esteem those blessed who patiently endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord; for the Lord is full of bowels of mercy, and tenderly compassionate.

¹²But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, nor by earth, nor by any other oath: but let your yea be yea, and your no, no; that ye fall not under condemnation.

¹³Is any man among you under afflictions? let him pray. Is any man happy in mind? let him sing psalms. ¹⁴Is any man sick among you? let him send for the presbyters of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: ¹⁵and the prayer of faith shall recover the sick man, and the Lord will raise him up; and if he hath committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.

¹⁶Confess your offences one to another, and pray for one another, that ye may be healed. The energetic prayer of a righteous man is mightily prevalent. ¹⁷Elias was a man of like feelings with us, and he prayed fervently that it should not rain; and there fell no rain on the earth during three years and six months. ¹⁸And he prayed again, and the heavens gave rain, and the earth shot up its fruit.

¹⁹Brethren, if any man among you should have erred from the truth, and one convert him; ²⁰let him know, that he that converteth a sinner from the error of his way will save a soul from death, and will cover a multitude of sins.

THE

FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL

OF

PETER THE APOSTLE.

CHAP. I.

PETER, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the sojourners, dispersed through Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, ²elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, by sanctification of the Spirit, that they might be brought to the obedience, and sprinkled with the blood of Jesus Christ: grace unto you and peace be multiplied.

³Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto an animating hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, ⁴for an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and unfading, reserved in the heavens for you, ⁵who are guarded by the omnipotence of God, through faith to obtain the salvation which is ready to appear at the last time. ⁶Wherein ye exult, though yet for a little space, (if it must be so,) ye are in sorrow through various trials: ⁷that the test of your faith (much more precious than that of gold, which is of a perishing nature, though proved by fire) may be found unto praise and honour and glory at the revelation of Jesus Christ: ⁸whom though ye have not seen, ye love; on whom, though ye have not as yet gazed, yet believing, ye exult with joy unutterable and glorious: ⁹receiving the end of your faith, the salvation of your souls. ¹⁰Concerning which salvation the prophets eagerly sought and diligently inquired, who prophesied of the grace which is come to

you: ¹¹investigating to what time and to what conjuncture the Spirit of Christ in them pointed, when predicting the sufferings coming upon Christ, and the glories subsequent thereto. ¹²To whom it was revealed, that not for themselves, but for us were their ministrations employed in the things which are now declared unto you by those who have preached the gospel unto you by the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; on which things the angels bending forwards eagerly desire to gaze.

¹³Wherefore girding up the loins of your mind, vigilant, wait with assured hope for the grace, which shall be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ; ¹⁴as obedient children, not conformed to the former passions of the days of your ignorance: ¹⁵but as he who hath called you is holy, be ye holy also in all your conduct: ¹⁶because it is written, "Be ye holy; for I am holy¹⁴⁸." ¹⁷And if ye invoke him as Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, conduct yourselves during the time of your sojourning with *jealous* fear: ¹⁸knowing that ye have not been redeemed out of your vain manner of life, derived traditionally from your fathers, by the corruptible things, silver and gold, ¹⁹but by the precious blood of Christ, as the unblemished and spotless lamb: ²⁰who was indeed predestined before the foundation of the world, but manifested in these last times for us, ²¹who by him believe in God, that raised him from the dead, and gave him glory; that your faith and hope might be in God. ²²Having purified your souls by obedience to the truth through the Spirit unto fraternal affection undissembled, love each other intensely out of a pure heart: ²³born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the quickening word of God, and which abideth for ever. ²⁴"For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man, as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower of it falleth off¹⁴⁹;" ²⁵but the word of the Lord abideth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.

CHAP. II.

WHEREFORE putting far away wickedness of every kind, and all deceit, and hypocrisies, and envyings, and all backbitings, ²as newborn babes desire earnestly the unadulterated milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby: ³if so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious. ⁴Whom approaching, as the living stone, rejected indeed of men, but elect of God, and honourable, ⁵ye also, as living stones, are built up, a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer spiritual sacrifices, well pleasing to God through Jesus Christ. ⁶Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, "Behold, I lay in Sion a cornerstone, elect, precious, and the believer on him shall never be confounded¹⁵⁰." ⁷By you therefore who believe is he honoured: but respecting the disobedient, "the stone which the builders rejected, this very stone is become the head of the corner, ⁸and a stone of stumbling, and rock of offence¹⁵¹," to those who stumble at the word, disobedient; whereunto also they were appointed. ⁹But ye are an elect race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people acquired by purchase; that ye should publish abroad the excellencies of him, who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light: ¹⁰who in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God; who had not obtained mercy, but are now the objects of mercy.

¹¹Beloved, I exhort you, as strangers and sojourners, Abstain from carnal lusts, which war against the soul; ¹²having your conduct ornamental among the Gentiles: that, whereas they malign you as wicked doers, they may, being eye-witnesses of your good works, glorify God in the day when he visits them.

¹³Be subject therefore to every human constitution for the Lord's sake; whether to a king as the supreme magistrate; ¹⁴or to governors, as sent by him for the punishment of wicked doers, but the praise of those who do well. ¹⁵For such is the will of God, that by well doing ye hold under restraint the ignorance of foolish men: ¹⁶as free, yet not using liberty as a cloak for wicked practices; but as being servants of God. ¹⁷Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king.

¹⁸Servants, be in subjection to your masters with all fear, not only to the good and gentle, but even to the froward. ¹⁹For this is gracious conduct, if for conscience towards God, any man undergo sorrows, suffering wrongfully. ²⁰For what glory would there be, if committing faults, and being buffeted, ye suffered patiently? but if, when ye behave well, yet suffer, ye bear it patiently, this is graciously accepted of God.

²¹For hereunto have ye been called, because Christ also hath suffered for you, leaving you a pattern, that ye should follow his steps; ²²who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth: ²³who, when reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he used no menaces; but referred himself to him who judgeth righteously: ²⁴who himself bore our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead unto sins, might live unto righteousness; "by whose stripes, *even* his, ye were healed¹⁵²." ²⁵For ye were as sheep wandering astray; but are now returned unto the pastor and bishop of your souls.

CHAP. III.

LIKEWISE, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, ¹even if some obey not the word, by their wives' conduct without the word, they may be won over; ²being eye-witnesses of your chaste behaviour with timidity. ³Whose adorning let it not be that exterior one of braided locks, and golden trimmings, and dresses put on with nicety; ⁴but let it be the hidden man of the heart, with that incorruptible ornament of a gentle and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God highly valuable. ⁵For so in times of old the holy women also, who hoped in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection to their own husbands; ⁶as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose children ye are, if ye do well, and are not affrighted with any terror.

⁷Ye husbands, in like manner dwell with them discreetly, putting respect on the dear woman as being the weaker vessel, and as co-heirs of the grace of life, so that your prayers may meet no interruption.

⁸Finally, be all like-minded, sympathizing, loving fraternally, compassionate, friendly hearted, ⁹not returning evil for evil, or railing for railing; but, contrariwise, wishing men every blessing; knowing that hereunto ye have been called, that ye should inherit the *divine* benediction. ¹⁰"For he that would love life, and see good days, let him restrain his tongue from evil, and his lips from speaking guile. ¹¹Let him depart from every wicked thing, and do good; let him seek peace, and pursue it¹⁵³." ¹²For the eyes of the Lord are upon the just, and his ears open to their prayers: but the face of the Lord is against those who practise wicked things. ¹³And who will do you harm if ye be imitators of him that is good? ¹⁴But if ye should even suffer for righteousness, blessed are ye: be not afraid of their terror, neither be troubled, ¹⁵but sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: and be always ready with your reply to every man who demands a reason respecting the hope which is in you with meekness and fear: ¹⁶keeping a good conscience; that whereas they malign you, as evil doers, they may be confounded who take pleasure in ridiculing your good conduct in Christ. ¹⁷For it is better (if it be God's will) to suffer as well doers than as evil doers. ¹⁸For Christ also suffered once for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, put to death indeed in the flesh, but raised to life by the Spirit: ¹⁹by which also he went and preached to those spirits imprisoned; ²⁰who in time of old were disobedient, when the long suffering of God in the days of Noe waited, while the ark was preparing, in which a few, that is, eight persons, were preserved through the water. ²¹The antitype to which baptism now saveth us (not the mere removal of filth from the flesh, but the engagement of a good conscience to God), by the resurrection of Jesus Christ: ²²who is at the right hand of God, gone into heaven, angels and dominations and powers being put in subjection under him.

CHAP. IV.

CHRIST then having suffered for us in the flesh, be ye also in mind armed for the same conflict: for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sinning; ²that he might not spend the remaining space of life in the flesh after human passions, but the divine will. ³For the time past of life is enough for us to have wrought the will of the heathen, when we walked in all impurities, lewd appetites, excess of wine, revels, drinking-bouts, and abominable idolatries; ⁴wherein they think it a strange thing, that you are not running with them into the same gulph of profligacy, spreading every scandalous report of you: ⁵who shall give an account to him, who holds himself ready to judge the living and the dead. ⁶For to this end was the gospel preached to those that are dead, that they might be judged indeed in the flesh according to the will of men,

but live in spirit according to the will of God.

⁷But the end of all things is near: be ye therefore sober-minded, and vigilant in prayers. ⁸But above all things have fervent love towards each other: for love will conceal a multitude of faults.

⁹Exercise hospitality one towards another without grudgings. ¹⁰Let every one, according as he hath received a gift, minister it to others, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God. ¹¹If any man speak, let it be agreeably to the oracles of God; if any man act as a deacon, let it be from the strength which God supplieth: that in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ; to whom be glory and might for ever and ever. Amen.

¹²Beloved, be not amazed at the fiery trial among you which is to bring you to the test, as though something strange happened to you; ¹³but as ye share in the sufferings of Christ rejoice, that at the revelation of his glory also ye may hail him with exultations. ¹⁴If ye suffer reproach for the name of Christ, blessed are ye; for the spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you: by them indeed he is blasphemed, but by you he is glorified. ¹⁵Let no one of you then suffer as a murderer, or a thief, or an evil-doer, or a meddler in other persons' business. ¹⁶But if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him give glory to God on this very account. ¹⁷For now is the time when judgment is commencing at the house of God; and if it begin with us, what will be the end of those who obey not the gospel of God? ¹⁸And if the righteous man is hardly saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear? ¹⁹Wherefore let those who suffer according to the will of God commit their souls to him in well-doing as to the faithful Creator.

CHAP. V.

THE presbyters among you I exhort, who am a co-presbyter and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and a partaker of the glory which shall be revealed: ²feed the flock of God which is among you, exercising your pastoral office not of necessity, but of choice, not for base gain, but with alacrity of mind; ³not as domineering over your allotted congregations, but as being examples of the flock. ⁴And when the arch Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that will never fade away.

⁵In like manner, ye who are younger persons, be in subjection to your elders: but all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed from head to foot with humility: for God sets himself in opposition to the proud, but he giveth grace to the lowly. ⁶Humble yourselves therefore beneath the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due season: ⁷casting all your anxiety upon him; for he careth for you. ⁸Be sober, be vigilant; for your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, prowleth around, seeking whom he may devour: ⁹against whom stand fast, firm in the faith, knowing that the very same sufferings are fully endured by the brotherhood which is in the world. ¹⁰But the God of all grace, who hath called us to his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, when ye have suffered a little while, himself perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you. ¹¹To him be glory and might for ever and ever. Amen.

¹²By Silvanus, a faithful brother as I think, I have written to you a few words, exhorting, and testifying that this is the true grace of God wherein ye are standing fast. ¹³She who is co-elect at Babylon, saluteth you, and my son Mark.

¹⁴Salute one another with a kiss of love. Peace be with you all that are in Christ Jesus. Amen.

THE

SECOND GENERAL EPISTLE

OF

THE APOSTLE PETER.

CHAP. I.

S IMON Peter, the servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, to those who have obtained with us the same precious faith by the righteousness of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ: ²grace unto you and peace be multiplied through the knowledge of God, even Jesus our Lord, ³as his divine power hath freely given us all things tending to life and godliness, through the acknowledgment of him who hath called us to glory and fortitude: ⁴whereby superlatively great and precious promises are freely given to us: that by these ye might become partakers of a divine nature, having fled far away from the corruption that is in the world through inordinate concupiscence.—⁵And for this very purpose employing the greatest diligence, lead up in the train of your faith courage; and with courage intelligence; ⁶and with intelligence moderation; and with moderation patience; and with patience piety; ⁷and with piety fraternal affection; and with fraternal affection love. ⁸For if these things are in your possession, and abounding, they will render you neither inactive nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. ⁹But he that hath no possession of these things, is blind, dim-sighted, sinking into oblivion of his purification from the sins of his former days. ¹⁰Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make sure your calling and election: for by doing these things, ye shall never at any time stumble: ¹¹but an entrance will thus be richly afforded you into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

¹²Wherefore I will not be negligent continually to remind you of these things, though ye know them, and are established in the present truth. ¹³Indeed, I think it right, as long as I am in this frail tabernacle, to rouse up your attention by reminding you: ¹⁴knowing that the deposition of this frail tabernacle of mine is hastily approaching, as our Lord Jesus Christ hath made evident to me. ¹⁵I will endeavour then that even after my decease, ye may always have wherewith to preserve the remembrance of these things. ¹⁶For we have not followed artfully devised fables, when we made known to you the power and advent of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eye-witnesses of his majesty. ¹⁷For he received from God the Father honour and glory, when such a voice was sent forth to him from the transcendently magnificent glory, This is my beloved son, in whom I am well pleased. ¹⁸And this voice we heard coming out of heaven, when we were with him on the holy mountain. ¹⁹And we hold the prophetic word more confirmed, to which ye do well to attend, as to a lamp shining in a dark passage, until the day dawn, and the morning-star arise upon your hearts. ²⁰Knowing this in the first place, that all scriptural prophecy is not from any man's own suggestions. ²¹For prophecy in old time came not by the will of man: but the holy men of God spake under the impulse of the Holy Ghost.

CHAP. II.

B UT there were false prophets among the people, as there will be false teachers also among you, who wickedly introduce damnable heresies, and deny the sovereign Lord who bought them, bringing on themselves swift destruction. ²And many will go out of the way after their fatal errors; by means of whom the way of truth will be injuriously reviled. ³And with plausible speeches will they avariciously make gain of you whose condemnation from of old lingereth not, and their perdition doth not slumber. ⁴For if God spared not the angels when they sinned, but casting them bound in chains of darkness into hell, delivered them to be kept fast until the judgment; ⁵and spared not the old world, but guarded safely Noah the eighth person, the preacher of righteousness, when he brought a deluge on the world of the ungodly: ⁶and reducing the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah to ashes, condemned them to final destruction, making them an example for all who in future should live ungodly; ⁷but righteous Lot, afflicted grievously with the infamously impure conduct of those lawless men, he plucked out: ⁸for by seeing and hearing, that righteous man whilst sojourning among them, suffered torment day by day in his righteous soul from their lawless doings; ⁹the Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptation, but to reserve the wicked unto the day of judgment to be punished: ¹⁰especially such as walk after the flesh in the eager pursuit of defilement, and despise government. Daring, self-sufficient, they tremble not at dignities, railing against them. ¹¹Whereas the angels, though so much greater in might

and power, bring not a reviling accusation against them before the Lord. ¹²But these men, as the naturally irrational brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speaking evil of the things of which they are ignorant, will perish by their own corruption; ¹³receiving the recompence of iniquity, counting daily luxury their pleasure; spots and blemishes, when they feast together with you; riotously indulging in their own delusions: ¹⁴having eyes full of adultery, and insatiable of sin; ensnaring souls of no stability; having a heart practised in all the wiles of covetousness; children for a curse: ¹⁵who forsaking the strait road are gone out of the way, following the path of Balaam the son of Bosor who loved the wages of iniquity. ¹⁶But received a reproof for his peculiar transgression: the dumb ass articulating with a human voice restrained the perverseness of the prophet.

¹⁷These are fountains without water, clouds driven by a hurricane; for whom the blackness of darkness for ever is reserved. ¹⁸Uttering pompous discourses of inanity, ensnaring by the lusts of the flesh, by lascivious impurities, those who had truly escaped from such as live in a course of delusion. ¹⁹Preaching liberty to them, while they themselves are the slaves of corruption: for by whatever a man is overcome, by that also he is enslaved. ²⁰For if having escaped from the defilements of the world by the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again enveloped by them and overcome, their last deeds are worse than the first. ²¹For it had been better for them never to have been acquainted with the way of righteousness, than, after knowing it, to have turned aside from the holy commandment delivered unto them. ²²But the true proverb is verified in them, The dog hath returned to his own vomit; and the sow which was washed to its wallowing in the mire.

CHAP. III.

THIS second epistle, beloved, I now write unto you; in both which I rouse up your sincere mind by awakening your recollection ²to remember the words, that have been spoken aforetime by the holy prophets, and the injunction of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour: ³knowing this principally, that in the last of the days there will come scoffers, walking after their own lewd passions, ⁴and saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for ever since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue in the same state as from the beginning of the creation. ⁵For this they chuse to keep out of sight, that by the word of God the heavens were created of old, and the earth rising out of the water and subsisting amidst the water; ⁶whence the world then existing, being deluged by water, was destroyed; ⁷but the present heavens and earth by the same word are treasured up, reserved for fire at the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.

⁸But let not this particular be concealed from you, beloved, that one day with the Lord is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. ⁹The Lord doth not delay the promise (as some count it delay); but is longsuffering towards us, not willing that any should perish, but that all should have space for repentance. ¹⁰But the day of the Lord will come as a thief by night; in which the heavens shall pass away with a rushing noise, and the first principles of matter in flames dissolve, and the earth and all the works upon it be burnt up. ¹¹Seeing then that all these things must be dissolved, what manner of persons ought we to be in a course of holy conduct and acts of piety, ¹²expecting and hastening towards the coming of God's day, at which the heavens on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements in flames be melted as wax? ¹³But we expect according to his promise new heavens and a new earth in which dwelleth righteousness. ¹⁴Wherefore, beloved, seeing ye are expecting these things, be diligent to be found of him in peace, spotless and blameless. ¹⁵And account the long suffering of our Lord conducive to salvation; as our beloved brother Paul also, according to the wisdom given to him, hath written unto you; ¹⁶as also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things, of which some are difficult to be understood, which the uninstructed and the unstable torture, as indeed they do the rest of the scriptures unto their own destruction. ¹⁷Ye therefore, beloved, knowing this before, be on your guard, that ye be not carried away with the delusion of these lawless men, and fall from your own steadfastness. ¹⁸But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be glory now and unto the day of eternity. Amen.

THE
FIRST GENERAL EPISTLE
OF
THE APOSTLE JOHN.

CHAP. I.

THAT which was from the beginning, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have gazed upon, and our hands have handled of the word of life; ²(for the life was manifested, and we have beheld it, and bear testimony, and declare unto you that life eternal, which was with the Father, and was manifested to us;) ³that which we have seen and heard, declare we to you, that ye also may have communion with us: and indeed our communion is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. ⁴And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be complete.

⁵And this is the promise which we have heard from him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and that darkness in him there is none. ⁶If we say that we have communion with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and practise not the truth: ⁷but if we walk in the light, as he is himself in the light, we have communion with each other, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin. ⁸If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. ⁹If we confess our sins, faithful is he and righteous to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. ¹⁰If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

CHAP. II.

MY dear children, these things I write to you, that ye should not sin. And if any of us sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: ²and he himself is the propitiatory victim for our sins: and indeed not for ours only, but for the whole world. ³And hereby we know that we know him, if we keep his commandments. ⁴He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and in him the truth is not. ⁵But whosoever keepeth his word, verily in him is the love of God perfected: by this we know that we are in him. ⁶He who saith that he abideth in him, ought as he walked, even so himself to walk.

⁷Brethren, I write not a new commandment unto you, but an old commandment which ye had from the beginning: the old commandment is the word which ye have heard from the beginning.

⁸Again, a new commandment I write unto you, which is a true thing in him, and in you, because the darkness is past, and the true light is now shining. ⁹He who saith, that he is in the light, yet hateth his brother, is in darkness even until now. ¹⁰He that loveth his brother is in the light, and occasion of stumbling in him there is none. ¹¹But he that hateth his brother is in darkness, and walketh in darkness, and knoweth not whither he is departing, because the darkness hath blinded his eyes.

¹²I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for his name's sake. ¹³I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because ye have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, because ye have known the Father. ¹⁴I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known him, who is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

¹⁵Love not the world, neither the things which are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. ¹⁶For every thing which is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pomp of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. ¹⁷And the world is passing away, and the lust thereof, but he who doeth the will of God abideth for ever.

¹⁸My dear children, it is the last hour; and as ye have heard that

antichrist is coming, even now there are many antichrists: by which we know it is the last hour. ¹⁹They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would have continued with us; but they departed, that they might be made manifest that they are not all of us: ²⁰though ye have an unction from the Holy One, and know all things. ²¹I have not written to you because ye know not the truth, but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth. ²²Who is the liar, but he that denieth that Jesus is the Messiah? This man is the antichrist, who denieth the Father and the Son. ²³Every one that denieth the Son, neither doth he hold the Father; but he that acknowledgeth the Son, holdeth the Father also. ²⁴Let that abide in you therefore which ye have heard from the beginning. If that abide in you which ye heard from the beginning, ye also shall abide in the Son and in the Father. ²⁵And this is the promise which he hath promised to us, even life eternal.

²⁶These things have I written unto you concerning those who are leading you astray. ²⁷But the unction which ye have received from him abideth in you; and ye need not that any person should instruct you. But as the same unction teacheth you concerning all things, and is true, and is no lie; and as it hath taught you, abide in him. ²⁸And now, my dear children, abide in him; that when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be put to shame by him at his coming. ²⁹If ye know that he is righteous, know that every one who practises righteousness is born of him.

CHAP. III.

BEHOLD, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called children of God! therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not. ²Beloved, now are we the children of God, and it is not yet evident what we shall be: but we know that when he shall appear, we shall be like him; because we shall see him as he is. ³And every one who hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

⁴Every one who committeth sin, committeth also a transgression of the law: for sin is the transgression of the law. ⁵And ye know that he was manifested, that he might take away our sins; and in him there is no sin. ⁶Every one who abideth in him, doth not sin; every one who sinneth hath not seen him, nor known him. ⁷My dear children, let no man deceive you: he who doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous: ⁸he that practises sin is of the devil; for from the beginning the devil sinneth. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. ⁹Every one who is born of God, doth not practise sin, because his seed abideth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. ¹⁰By this the children of God are manifestly seen, and the children of the devil. Every one that doth not practise righteousness, is not of God, and he that loveth not his brother.

¹¹For this is the commandment which ye have heard from the beginning, that we should love one another. ¹²Not as Cain, who was of the wicked one, and slew his brother: and wherefore did he slay him? Because his own works were wicked, and those of his brother righteous.

¹³Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you. ¹⁴We know that we are passed out of *a state of death* into life, because we love the brethren: he that loveth not his brother abideth in death. ¹⁵Every one who hateth his brother is a murderer; and ye know that no murderer hath life eternal abiding in him.

¹⁶By this we have known the love of *Christ*, because for us he laid down his own life: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren. ¹⁷But whosoever hath worldly abundance, and seeth his brother under necessity, and shutteth his bowels of compassion against him, how dwelleth the love of God in him? ¹⁸My dear children, let us not love in word and in tongue, but in deed and in truth; ¹⁹and hereby we know that we are of the truth, and in his presence have this persuasion in our hearts. ²⁰For should our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things. ²¹Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, we have confidence towards God. ²²And whatsoever we ask, we receive from him, because we keep his commandments, and do the things which are pleasing in his sight. ²³And this is his commandment, that we should believe in the name of his Son, Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us commandment. ²⁴And he that keepeth his commandments

abideth in him, and he in him; and by this we know that he abideth in us, from the Spirit which he hath given us.

CHAP. IV.

BELOVED, believe not every pretender to inspiration, but bring these spirits to the trial whether they are of God; because many false prophets are gone forth into the world. ²By this ye know the Spirit of God: every spirit who confesseth that Jesus the Messiah is come in the flesh, is from God. ³And every spirit who confesseth not that Jesus the Messiah is come into the world, is not from God: and this is that spirit of antichrist which ye have heard that it is coming, and now is already in the world. ⁴Ye are of God, my dear children, and have overcome them; because he that is in you is greater than he that is in the world. ⁵They are of the world, therefore speak they as of the world, and the world heareth them. ⁶We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth us not. By this we know the spirit of truth and the spirit of delusion.

⁷Beloved, let us love one another; because love is from God, and every one who loveth is born of God, and knoweth God. ⁸He that loveth not, never knew God; for God is love. ⁹By this was the love of God manifested to us, that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might have life by him. ¹⁰Herein is love, not that we have loved God, but that he hath loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiatory sacrifice for our sins. ¹¹Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another.

¹²No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God abideth in us, and his love is perfected in us. ¹³By this we know that we abide in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his own Spirit. ¹⁴And we have seen and bear testimony, that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.

¹⁵Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God abideth in him, and he in God. ¹⁶And we have known and believed the love which God hath towards us. God is love; and he that abideth in love, abideth in God, and God in him. ¹⁷By this is his love towards us perfected, that we might have confidence at the day of judgment; because as he is, so are we in this world. ¹⁸Fear is not in this love; but the perfect love casteth out fear: for fear hath anguish. He that is afraid is not made perfect in love.

¹⁹We love him, because he first loved us. ²⁰If any person say, I love God, yet hateth his brother, he is a liar; for he who loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love the God whom he hath not seen? ²¹So this commandment have we from him, that he who loveth God love also his brother.

CHAP. V.

EVERY one who believeth that Jesus is the Messiah, is born of God; and every one who loveth him that begat, loveth him also who is begotten by him. ²Hereby we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments. ³For this is the love of God, that we should keep his commandments: and his commandments are not burdensome. ⁴Because every one that is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory which overcometh the world, OUR FAITH. ⁵Who is he that overcometh the world, except he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

⁶This is he who came by water and blood, Jesus the Messiah; not by the water only, but by the water and the blood: and the Spirit is the witnessing person, because the Spirit is the truth. ⁷For they are three who bear witness in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit, and these, even the three, are one. ⁸And there are three which bear witness upon earth, the spirit, and the water, and the blood, and the three are for the same one object.

⁹If we receive the testimony of man, the testimony of God is stronger: for this is the testimony of God which he testified concerning his Son. ¹⁰He that believeth on the Son of God, hath the testimony in himself; he that believeth not God, hath made him a liar, because he hath not believed on the testimony which God testified of his Son. ¹¹And this is the testimony, that God hath given life eternal to us; and this life is in his Son. ¹²He that hath the Son, hath this life; and he that hath not the Son of God, hath not this life. ¹³These things have I written to you who

believe on the name of the Son of God, that ye may know that ye have life eternal, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God. ¹⁴And this is the confidence that we have towards him, that whatsoever we ask according to his will, he heareth us. ¹⁵And if we know that he heareth us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we receive the petitions, which we have requested, from him.

¹⁶If any person see his brother committing a sin not unto death, he shall request, and God will grant him life for those that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I say not that he should request for that.

¹⁷All unrighteousness is sin; and there is sin not unto death.

¹⁸We know that every one who is born of God sinneth not; but he that is born of God preserveth himself, and the wicked one toucheth him not.

¹⁹We know that we are of God, and the whole world is under the power of that wicked one. ²⁰But we know that the Son of God hath come, and hath given to us understanding, that we might know the true God; and we are in him that is true, in his Son Jesus the Messiah. HE is the true God, and the life eternal.

²¹My dear children, guard yourselves against idols. Amen.

THE SECOND EPISTLE GENERAL

OF

THE APOSTLE JOHN.

THE presbyter to the elect lady and her children, whom I love in the truth; and not I only, but also all who have known the truth: ²because of the truth which abideth in us, and shall be with us for ever: ³grace, mercy, peace be with you from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love.

⁴I rejoiced greatly that I found thy children walking in truth, as we have received commandment from the Father. ⁵And now I beseech thee, lady, not as writing to thee a new commandment, but that which we have had from the beginning, that we should love one another. ⁶And this is love, that we should walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, as ye have heard from the beginning, That ye should walk in it. ⁷For many deceivers are gone out into the world, who do not confess Jesus the Messiah as come in the flesh. Such a one is a deceiver and an antichrist.

⁸Take heed to yourselves that we lose not the things which we have wrought, but receive a full reward. ⁹Every one that transgresseth and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God: he that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, this man holdeth both the Father and the Son. ¹⁰If any person come unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into the house, nor say to him, Welcome. ¹¹He that biddeth him welcome, takes part in his wicked works.

¹²Having many things to write unto you, I would not do it with paper and ink; but I hope to come unto you, and speak mouth to mouth, that our joy may be complete.

¹³The children of thy elect sister salute thee. Amen.

THE THIRD GENERAL EPISTLE

OF

THE APOSTLE JOHN.

THE presbyter to the beloved Gaius, whom I love in the truth.
²Beloved, above all things I pray that thou mayest prosper, and be in sound health of body, even as thy soul prospereth.

³I rejoiced greatly when the brethren came, and bore witness to thy truth, even as thou walkest in the truth. ⁴I have no greater joy than these tidings, that I hear my own children are walking in the truth.

⁵Beloved, thou doest faithfully whatsoever services thou performest for the brethren, and for strangers; ⁶who have borne testimony to thy love before the church; to whom thou wilt perform a good act of service in forwarding them on their journey, in a manner worthy of God. ⁷For on account of his name they went forth, receiving nothing from the heathen. ⁸We therefore ought to assist such men, that we may become fellow-labourers in the truth.

⁹I wrote unto the church: but Diotrephes, who affects pre-eminence over them, receiveth us not. ¹⁰Therefore if I come I will remember his works which he doth, with wicked words prating against us; and not content with these things, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and those who are willing he hindereth, and casteth them out of the church. ¹¹Beloved, be not an imitator of what is evil, but of that which is good. He that doeth good is of God, but he that doeth evil hath not seen God.

¹²Demetrius hath a good testimony from all men, and from the truth itself: and we also bear our testimony, and ye know that our testimony is true.

¹³I had many things to write; but I would not write to thee with ink and pen: ¹⁴but I hope shortly to see thee, and we shall speak mouth to mouth.

Peace be to thee. The friends salute thee. Salute the friends by name.

THE EPISTLE GENERAL

OF

THE APOSTLE JUDE.

JUDE a servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to those who are sanctified in God the Father, and preserved by Jesus Christ, the called: ²mercy unto you, and peace and love be multiplied.

³Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you concerning the common salvation, I held it necessary to write unto you, exhorting you to contend earnestly for the faith once delivered unto the saints. ⁴For certain men have craftily introduced themselves, who were from of old proscribed for this condemnation, ungodly men, changing the grace of God into impurity, and denying our only sovereign God and Lord, Jesus Christ. ⁵But I would remind you, though ye once knew this, that the Lord, though he delivered the people out of the land of Egypt, afterwards destroyed those who believed not. ⁶And the angels who preserved not their own primitive state, but deserted their proper abode, hath he reserved in everlasting chains under darkness, unto the judgment of the great day. ⁷As Sodom and Gomorrhah and the surrounding cities, in like manner with them abandoned to whoredom, and going after other flesh, are set forth an example, suffering the judicial punishment of eternal fire.

⁸In like manner also do these men, even when they dream, defile indeed the flesh, despise sovereignty, and revile dignities. ⁹Though Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil, he disputed about the body of Moses, dared not to produce a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee. ¹⁰But these men speak evil even of the things of which they have no knowledge: but such things as they know naturally, as the brute beasts, in these they corrupt themselves.

¹¹Wo unto them! for they have walked in the way of Cain, and have eagerly run in Balaam's erroneous path of hire, and have perished in opposition, like Corah. ¹²These are in your feasts of love, as sunken rocks; though joining in your banquet, they feed themselves fearlessly;

clouds without water carried about by the winds; trees untimely withering, fruitless, twice dead, rooted up; ¹³raging billows of the sea foaming out their own infamies; stars wandering from their courses, for whom the blackness of darkness for ever is reserved.

¹⁴Now Enoch, the seventh from Adam, prophesied also of these men, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with myriads of his saints, ¹⁵to execute judgment against all men, and to convict all the ungodly of all their deeds of ungodliness which they have impiously committed, and of all the bitter words which impious offenders have spoken against him.

¹⁶These men are murmurers, complainers at their lot in life, walking after their own corrupt passions; and their mouth utters hyperbolically pompous expressions, pretending high personal admiration, in order to make their advantage.

¹⁷But ye, beloved, remember the words which have been spoken before by the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ, ¹⁸how they told you that in the last time there will be scoffers, walking after their own ungodly passions. ¹⁹These are the men who separate themselves, sensual, destitute of the Spirit.

²⁰But ye, beloved, building yourselves up on your most holy faith, praying by the Holy Ghost, ²¹preserve yourselves in the love of God, waiting for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life. ²²And of some have compassion, distinguishing their case; ²³and others save with trembling, snatching them out of the fire; though hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.

²⁴Now to him who is able to guard you from stumbling, and to present you blameless before the presence of his glory with exultation, ²⁵to the only wise God our Saviour, be glory and majesty, might and dominion, both now and unto all eternity. Amen.

THE REVELATION

OF

JOHN THE THEOLOGIAN.

CHAP. I.

THE revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave to him, to shew to his servants the things which must shortly come to pass; and sending by his angel, he shewed them to his servant John: ²who was a witness for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ, and for the things which he saw. ³Blessed is he that readeth, and they who hear the words of this prophecy, and observe the things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

⁴John to the seven churches which are in Asia: Grace be with you, and peace from him, who is, and who was, and who is coming; and from the seven spirits which are before the throne of God, ⁵and from Jesus Christ, the faithful witness, and first-born from the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth: to him who loved us, and washed us from our sins by his blood, ⁶and made us kings and priests to his God and Father; to him be glory and might for ever and ever. Amen.

⁷Behold! he is coming with clouds, and every eye shall see him, and they also who pierced him; and all the tribes of the earth shall lament bitterly, smiting their bosoms, because of him: even so! Amen.

⁸I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, saith the Lord, who is, and who was, and who is coming—the Almighty.

⁹I John, your brother and companion also with you in the tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the island which is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ. ¹⁰I was *rapt* in spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice as of a trumpet, ¹¹saying, I am the Alpha and the Omega, the first and the last; and what thou seest write in a book, and send to the churches which are in Asia: to Ephesus, and to Smyrna, and to Pergamos, and to Thyatira, and to Sardis, and to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea. ¹²And I turned to see what voice spake to me. And when I

turned round I saw seven lamps of gold; ¹³and in the midst of the seven lamps one like unto a son of man, clothed to the very feet, and girded about the breasts with a golden zone; ¹⁴his head and flowing locks white as a white fleece of wool, even as the snow; and his eyes as a flame of fire; ¹⁵and his feet resembled molten brass, as though they glowed in the furnace; and his voice was as the roar of many waters. ¹⁶And he held in his right hand seven stars; and out of his mouth proceeded a sharp two-edged sword; and his countenance was as when the sun shineth in his meridian lustre. ¹⁷And when I beheld him, I fell at his feet as dead: and he laid his right hand upon me, saying to me, Fear not; I am the first and the last, ¹⁸and I am the living one, though I was dead and lo! I am alive for evermore, Amen; and I hold the keys of hell and of death. ¹⁹Write the things which thou seest, and the things which are, and the things which shall be in future after these, ²⁰the mystery of the seven stars which thou seest in my right hand, and the seven golden lamps. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches, and the seven lamps which thou seest are the seven churches.

CHAP. II.

TO the angel of the Ephesian church write; These things saith he who grasps the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh round in the midst of the seven golden lamps; ²I know thy works, and thy travail, and thy patience, and that thou canst not bear the wicked; and hast tried those who give themselves out as apostles, yet are not, and hast found them liars; ³and hast borne, and hast exercised patience, and for my name sake hast endured great toil, and hast not fainted. ⁴Yet have I a charge against thee, that thou art gone back from thy first love. ⁵Remember then from whence thou hast fallen, and repent, and practise thy first works; but if not, I am coming to thee quickly, and I will remove thy lamp out of its place, except thou repent. ⁶But this thou holdest, that thou abhorrest the deeds of the Nicolatans, which I also abhor. ⁷He that hath ears, let him hear what the Spirit saith to the churches, To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

⁸And to the angel of the church of the Smyrnians write, These things saith the first and the last, who was dead, and is alive: ⁹I know thy works, and thy tribulation, and thy poverty (though thou art rich), and the calumnies of those who say they are Jews, yet are not, but are Satan's synagogue. ¹⁰Fear nothing from the things which thou shalt suffer: lo! the devil will cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have a ten day's tribulation: be thou faithful until death, and I will give thee a crown of life. ¹¹He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. He that overcometh shall receive no injury from the second death.

¹²And to the angel of the church at Pergamos write, These things saith he who holdeth the sharp two-edged sword; ¹³I know thy works and where thou hast thy abode, even where Satan's throne *is erected*: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days when Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was put to death among you, where Satan dwelleth. ¹⁴Yet I have a few things against thee, that thou hast there some who hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to lay a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, to eat of idol sacrifices, and to commit whoredom. ¹⁵Thou hast also some who hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which I abhor. ¹⁶Repent! but if not, I am coming to thee quickly, and will war against them with the sword of my mouth. ¹⁷He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches, To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and I will give him a white pebble, and upon the pebble a new name inscribed, which no man knoweth except the person who receiveth it.

¹⁸And to the angel of the church which is at Thyatira write, These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes as a flame of fire, and his feet like the molten brass; ¹⁹I know thy deeds, and thy love, and thy charity to the poor, and thy faith, and thy patience, and thy works, and that the last are more abundant than the first. ²⁰Yet I have a few things against thee, because thou hast suffered that woman Jezabel, calling herself a prophetess, to teach, and to lead my servants into error, to commit whoredom, and eat the idol sacrifices. ²¹And I gave her a space that she should repent of her whoredom, and she hath not repented. ²²Behold, I am about to cast her on a bed, and those who commit

adultery with her into great tribulation, unless they repent of their deeds. ²³And I will slay her children by death; and all the churches shall know that I am he who searcheth the reins and the hearts: and I will give to you, even to every one, according to your works. ²⁴But to you I say, and to the rest that are at Thyatira, as many as do not hold this doctrine, and who have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak, I will lay upon them no other burden. ²⁵Nevertheless that which you have, hold fast till I come. ²⁶And he who overcometh, and perseveres in my works unto the end, to him will I give authority over the nations; ²⁷he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as a potter's vessels they shall be broken in pieces, even as I have received authority from my Father: ²⁸and I will give him the star of the morning. ²⁹He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

CHAP. III.

AND to the angel of the church in Sardis write, These things saith he that hath the seven spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, and that thou hast a name, as though thou wert alive, yet art dead. ²Be vigilant and strengthen the things which remain, which are ready to die; for I have not found thy works complete before God. ³Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and observe, and repent. If then thou art not found watching, I will come upon thee as a thief, and thou shalt in no wise know at what hour I will come upon thee. ⁴Thou hast a few names even in Sardis, which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white robes, for they are worthy. ⁵He that overcometh, this man shall be clothed in white robes; and I will in no wise blot his name out of the book of life, and I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels. ⁶He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

⁷And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write, These things saith the Holy One, he that is true, who hath the key of David, who openeth, and none shutteth, and shutteth, and no man openeth. ⁸I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it; because thou hast but little strength, yet hast thou kept my word, and hast not denied my name. ⁹Behold, I give thee out of Satan's synagogue those who say they are Jews, yet they are not, but do lie. Lo! I will make them that they shall come and prostrate themselves at thy feet, and they shall know that I have loved thee. ¹⁰Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will preserve thee from the hour of temptation, which is coming upon the whole habitable globe to try the dwellers upon earth. ¹¹Behold, I come quickly: hold fast that thou hast, that no man take thy crown. ¹²He that overcometh, I will make him a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall never more go out from thence: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God, and my own new name. ¹³He that hath an ear to hear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

¹⁴And to the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write, These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the origin of the creation of God; ¹⁵I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: ¹⁶I wish thou wert cold or hot. So because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will vomit thee out of my mouth: ¹⁷because thou sayest, I am rich, and wallow in wealth, and have no want unsupplied; yet thou knowest not that thou art wretched, and pitiable, and poor, and blind, and naked. ¹⁸I advise thee to buy of me gold purified by the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white robes, that thou mayest be completely clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness may not appear; and anoint thine eyes with a collyrium, that thou mayest see. ¹⁹As many as I love, I rebuke and correct: be zealous then, and repent. ²⁰Lo! I stand at the door, and knock: if any person hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and I will sup with him, and he with me. ²¹He that overcometh, I will give to him to sit on my throne, as I also have overcome, and have sat down with my Father on his throne. ²²He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

CHAP. IV.

AFTER these things I beheld, and, lo! a door was opened in heaven, and a voice, the first which I heard, as of a trumpet, speaking to me,

said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee what things will be after these. ²And immediately I was *rapt* in spirit: and, lo! a throne was placed in heaven, and upon the throne a person sitting. ³And he that sat was in appearance like a stone of jasper and sardine: and a rainbow encircled the throne, like in hue to an emerald. ⁴And around the throne were twenty-four thrones; and upon these thrones I saw twenty-four presbyters seated, clothed in white robes; and they had on their heads golden crowns. ⁵And out of the throne issued forth lightnings, and thunder, and loud voices; and seven lamps of fire burned before the throne, which are the seven spirits of God. ⁶And before the throne was a sea of glass like crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and within the circle of the throne, were four living beings full of eyes before and behind. ⁷And the first living being was like a lion, and the second living being was like a calf, and the third living being had a face as a man, and the fourth living being was like an eagle with wings expanded. ⁸And the four living beings had each for himself six wings encircling him, and within they were full of eyes; and they never cease day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, who was, and who is, and who is coming. ⁹And when these living beings give glory, and honour, and thanksgiving to him that sitteth on the throne, to him who liveth for ever and ever, ¹⁰the four and twenty presbyters prostrate themselves before him who is Seated on the throne, and worship him who liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying, ¹¹Worthy art thou, O Lord, to receive glory, and honour, and power; for thou hast created all things, and by thy will they exist, and were created.

CHAP. V.

AND I saw on the right hand of him who was seated on the throne a *volume of a book* written within, and on the back sealed with seven seals. ²And I saw mighty angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to break the seals thereon? ³And no man was able in heaven, nor upon earth, nor under the earth, to open the book, nor to look into it.

⁴And I wept much because no man was found worthy either to open or read the book, or even to look upon it. ⁵And one of the presbyters said unto me, Weep not: behold the lion who is of the tribe of Judah, the root of David, hath prevailed, to open the book, and to break the seven seals upon it. ⁶And I beheld, and lo! in the midst of the throne, and of the four living beings, and in the midst of the presbyters, stood a lamb as just slaughtered, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven spirits of God that are sent forth into all the world: ⁷and he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that was seated upon the throne. ⁸And when he had taken the book, the four living beings and the four and twenty presbyters prostrated themselves before the lamb, having each harps, and vases of gold, full of perfumes smocking, which are the prayers of the saints. ⁹And they sung a new song, saying, Worthy art thou to take the book, and to open the seals thereon; because thou hast been slaughtered, and hast redeemed us for God by thy blood, out of every tribe, and tongue, and people, and nation; ¹⁰and hast made us for our God kings and priests, and we shall reign upon the earth.

¹¹And I looked, and heard the voice of many angels around the throne, and the living beings, and the presbyters, and their number was myriads of myriads and thousands of thousands, ¹²crying with a loud voice, Worthy is the slaughtered lamb to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and might, and honour, and glory, and blessing. ¹³And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and those who are on the sea, and all things which are therein, heard I, saying, To him who is seated on the throne, and to the lamb, be blessing, and honour, and glory, and might for ever and ever. ¹⁴And the four living beings said, Amen. And the four and twenty presbyters prostrated themselves, and worshipped him that liveth for ever and ever.

CHAP. VI.

AND I saw when the lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard one of the four living beings, saying, as with a voice of thunder, Come, and see. ²And I looked, and lo! a white horse; and he who sat on it held a bow, and a crown was given to him, and he went forth conquering and to conquer.

³And when he opened the second seal, I heard the second living being

say, Come and see. ⁴And there went out another horse flame-coloured; and to him who sat thereon there was power given to take peace from the earth, and that men should kill each other; and there was given to him a great sword.

⁵And when he opened the third seal, I heard the third living being say, Come and see. And I saw, and lo! a black horse; and he that sat upon it had a pair of scales in his hand. ⁶And I heard a voice from amidst the four living beings saying, A chœnix¹⁵⁴ of wheat for a denarius¹⁵⁵, and three chœnix of barley for a denarius; yet to the oil and the wine do no injury.

⁷And when he opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth living being saying, Come and see. ⁸And I looked, and lo! a pale coloured horse, and one sat on it, whose name was Death, and the grave followed after him: and power was given to them to kill the fourth part of the earth with the sword, and with famine, and with death, and with the wild beasts of the earth.

⁹And when he opened the fifth seal I saw underneath the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they maintained. ¹⁰And they cried with a loud voice, How long will it be, O sovereign, the holy one and the true, ere thou judge and avenge our blood on those who dwell on the earth? ¹¹And to each of them were given white robes, and it was told them that they should wait yet a little longer space, until the number of their fellow-servants and their brethren, who should be slain as well as they, should be completed.

¹²And I saw when he opened the sixth seal, and lo! there was a great earthquake, and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood; ¹³and the stars of heaven fell to the earth, as the fig-tree sheddeth her early ripe figs when shaken by a mighty wind: ¹⁴and the heaven was removed away as a volume rolled up and every mountain and island were removed out of their places: ¹⁵and the kings of the earth, and the grandees, and the rich, and the military commanders, and the men in power, and every slave, and every free man, hid themselves in the caves, and in the rocks of the mountains; ¹⁶and said to the mountains and to the rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him who sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb: ¹⁷for the great day of his wrath is come, and who is able to stand?

CHAP. VII.

AND after these things I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth, to hold back the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, neither on the sea, nor on any tree. ²And I saw another angel ascending from the rising of the sun, having the seal of the living God; and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels to whom power was given for them to hurt the earth and the sea, ³saying, Hurt not the earth, nor the sea, nor the trees, until we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads. ⁴And I heard the number of those who were sealed; one hundred and forty and four thousand were sealed out of every tribe of the children of Israel. ⁵Of the tribe of Judah were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelve thousand. ⁶Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Nephtalim were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Manasseh were sealed twelve thousand. ⁷Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Levi were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelve thousand. ⁸Of the tribe of Zebulon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Joseph were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand.

⁹After these things I looked, and beheld a great multitude, which no man could number, out of every nation, and tribe, and people, and tongue, standing before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed in white robes, and palm branches in their hands ¹⁰and crying with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God that sitteth on the throne, and to the Lamb. ¹¹And all the angels stood in a circle about the throne, and the presbyters and the four living beings, and fell on their faces before the throne, and worshipped God, ¹²saying, Amen: blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might be to our God for ever and ever. Amen.

¹³And one of the presbyters addressed me, saying, Who are these

persons who are clothed in white robes? and from whence came they? ¹⁴And I said to him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are persons who are come out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made their robes white in the blood of the Lamb. ¹⁵Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them. ¹⁶They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun scorch them, nor any burning heat. ¹⁷Because the Lamb who is in the midst of the throne will feed them, as a shepherd, and lead them unto living fountains of waters; and God shall wipe away every tear from their eyes.

CHAP. VIII.

AND when he opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about half an hour. ²And I saw the seven angels which stood before God, and there were given to them seven trumpets. ³And another angel came, and stood by the altar, holding a golden censer; and there were given to him many perfumes, to offer with the prayers of all the saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne. ⁴And the smoke of the perfumes went up with the prayers of the saints, out of the angel's hand before God. ⁵And the angel took the censer, and filled it from the fire of the altar, and cast it upon the earth: and there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings, and an earthquake.

⁶And the seven angels holding the seven trumpets prepared themselves to sound.

⁷And the first angel blew the trumpet, and there were hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast on the earth; and a third part of the trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up.

⁸And the second angel sounded, and there was cast into the sea as it were a vast mountain burning with fire: and the third part of the sea became blood; ⁹and a third part of the creatures having life, which are in the sea, died; and a third part of the ships was destroyed.

¹⁰And the third angel blew the trumpet, and there fell from heaven a great star, burning as a torch, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of water; ¹¹and the name of the star is called Wormwood: and the third part of the waters was turned into wormwood, and multitudes of men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

¹²And the fourth angel sounded, and a third part of the sun was smitten, and a third part of the moon, and a third part of the stars; so that a third part of them was darkened, and the day had no light during a third part of it, and the night likewise.

¹³And I saw and heard one angel flying in the mid-heavens, saying with a loud voice, Wo, wo, wo, to the dwellers upon earth, because of the remaining blasts of the trumpet of the three angels, which are ready to sound.

CHAP. IX.

AND the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven to the earth; and to him was given the key of the pit of the abyss *of hell*. ²And he opened the pit of the abyss; and a smoke ascended out of the pit like the smoke of a vast furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by the smoke of the pit. ³And out of the smoke came forth locusts upon the earth; and power was given to them, such power as the scorpions of the earth possess. ⁴And it was told them, Hurt not the grass of the earth, nor any herb, nor any tree, but only those men who have not the seal of God in their foreheads. ⁵And it was given them in charge that they should not kill these men outright, but that they should be tormented five months: and their torment is as the torment of a scorpion when he striketh a man. ⁶And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall earnestly desire to die, and death shall fly from them. ⁷And the figures of the locusts were like horses equipped for war; and upon their heads there were as crowns, like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men. ⁸And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were like the teeth of lions. ⁹And they had breastplates, as breastplates of iron: and the sound of their wings was as the rumbling of chariots of many horses rushing to battle. ¹⁰And they had tails like scorpions, and there were stings in their tails: and they had power to

hurt men five months. ¹¹And they had over them a king, the angel of the abyss of *hell*, whose name in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greek he is called Appollyon. ¹²One woe is past; and, behold, there are coming yet two woes after these.

¹³And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a great voice from the four horns of the altar of gold which is before God, ¹⁴saying to the sixth angel who held the trumpet, Loose the four angels which are bound at the great river Euphrates. ¹⁵And the four angels were loosed, who were ready at the hour, and day, and month, and year, to kill the third part of mankind. ¹⁶And the number of the armies of cavalry was two myriads of myriads and I heard the number of them. ¹⁷And in this manner saw I the horses in the vision, and those who were mounted upon them, having breastplates of the colour of fire, and jacinth, and sulphur; and the horses' heads were as the heads of lions; and out of their mouths proceeded fire and smoke and brimstone. ¹⁸By these three were slain the third part of mankind, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the sulphur, which proceeded out of their mouths. ¹⁹For their powers are in their mouth, and in their tails; for their tails are like serpents, having heads, and with them they do hurt. ²⁰And the residue of mankind, who were not slain by these plagues, repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship demons, and idols of gold, and of silver, and of brass, and of wood, and of stone: which can neither see nor hear, nor walk: ²¹and they repented not of their murders, nor of their magical arts, nor of their whoredom, nor of their thefts.

CHAP. X.

AND I saw another mighty angel descending from heaven, clothed with a cloud; and a rainbow on his head, and his countenance as the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire: ²and he held in his hand a little book open; and he placed his right foot on the sea, and his left on the land, ³and cried with a loud voice, as a lion roareth: and when he had cried, the seven thunders uttered their voices. ⁴And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven saying to me, Seal up the things, which the seven thunders have spoken, and write them not down.

⁵And the angel which I saw standing upon the sea and upon the land lifted up his hand towards heaven, ⁶and he swore by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created the heaven and the things which are therein, and the earth and the things which are in it, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that time shall be no longer: ⁷but that in the days of the blast of the seventh angel, when he shall sound, then shall the mystery of God be completed, as he spake by his own servants the prophets.

⁸And the voice which I heard out of heaven again spoke to me, and said, Go take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel that standeth upon the sea and upon the land. ⁹And I went up to the angel, saying unto him, Give me that little book. And he saith to me, Take it, and eat it up; and it will make thy belly bitter, though in thy mouth it will be sweet as honey. ¹⁰And I took the little book out of the angel's hand, and ate it up; and it was in my mouth as honey sweet; yet when I had eaten it, my belly was made bitter. ¹¹And he said to me, Thou must prophesy again before many people, and nations, and tongues, and monarchs.

CHAP. XI.

AND there was given me a cane like a measuring staff; and the angel stood by, saying, Arise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and those who worship therein. ²But the exterior court of the temple leave out, and measure it not; because it is given to the Gentiles: and they shall trample under foot the holy city forty-two months. ³And I will give charge to my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and sixty days, clothed in sackcloth. ⁴These are the two olive trees, and the two lamps which stand before the face of the God of the earth. ⁵And if any person attempts to hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any person attempts to injure them, he must thus be slain. ⁶These have power to shut up the heaven, that no rain water the earth during the days of their prophecy: and they have power over the waters to turn them into blood, and to

smite the earth with every plague, as often as they will. ⁷And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast which ascendeth out of hell shall make war with them, and shall overcome them, and put them to death. ⁸And their corpses shall be exposed in the streets of the great city, which is called spiritually Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified. ⁹And they of the people and tribes and tongues and nations will look upon their corpses three days and half, and they will not permit their corpses to be laid in sepulchres. ¹⁰And the dwellers upon earth will rejoice over them, and be very glad, and will send gifts to each other; because these two prophets were a torment to those who dwell on the earth. ¹¹And after three days and half, the spirit of life from God entered into them, and they stood up on their feet; and great terror fell on those who beheld them. ¹²And they heard a great voice out of heaven, saying unto them, Ascend up hither. And they ascended into heaven in a cloud: and their enemies beheld them. ¹³And in the same hour there was a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and there were slain in the earthquake seven thousand men of note: and the rest were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven. ¹⁴The second woe is past; behold the third woe is coming quickly.

¹⁵And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of the world are become our Lord's, and his Messiah's, and he shall reign for ever and ever. ¹⁶And the four and twenty presbyters, who were seated before God upon their thrones, fell upon their faces, and worshipped God, ¹⁷saying, We give thanks to thee, Lord the Almighty God, who is and who was, and who is coming, because thou hast assumed thy great power, and hast set up the throne of thy kingdom. ¹⁸Though the nations were incensed, yet thy wrath came, and the time of the dead to be judged, and to give the reward to thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and to all who fear thy name, to the small and to the great; and to destroy those who have destroyed the earth.

¹⁹And the temple of God was opened in the heaven, and there appeared the ark of his covenant in his temple: and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunders, and earthquake, and a great hail.

CHAP. XII.

AND there appeared a great sign in the heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: ²and being with child, she cried out in travailing pain, and in anguish to be delivered.

³And there appeared another sign in the heaven; and lo! a great fiery dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his heads seven crowns. ⁴And his tail drew a third part of the stars of heaven, and cast them on the earth: and the dragon placed himself before the woman who was ready to be delivered, that when she should bring forth, he might devour her babe. ⁵And she brought forth a male child, who should rule the nations with an iron sceptre: and her infant was caught up to God, and his throne. ⁶And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that she might there be fed during a thousand two hundred and sixty days.

⁷Then was there war in the heaven: Michael and his angels warred against the dragon; and the dragon warred and his angels, ⁸and they could not prevail; neither was there any more place found for them in the heaven. ⁹And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, who is called the Devil, and Satan, who deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. ¹⁰And I heard a great voice saying in the heaven, Now is come the salvation, and the power, and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Christ; because the accuser of our brethren is cast down, who accused them before our God day and night. ¹¹And they have vanquished him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto death. ¹²Therefore be exceeding glad ye heavens, and ye who dwell in them. Wo to the inhabitants of the earth and the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, knowing that he hath but a short time.

¹³And when the dragon saw that he was cast out into the earth, he persecuted the woman which had brought forth the male child. ¹⁴And there were given to the woman two wings of a great eagle, that she should fly into the wilderness, unto her place, where she is supported there for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.

¹⁵And the serpent cast out after the woman, from his mouth water, as a river, that he might sweep her away with the flood. ¹⁶And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the river which the dragon cast out of his mouth. ¹⁷And the dragon was incensed against the woman, and went forth to make war against the remnant of her seed, who keep the commandments of God, and hold the testimony of Jesus Christ.

CHAP. XIII.

AND I stood upon the sand of the sea, and I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon the horns ten diadems, and upon the heads a title of blasphemy. ²And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his throne, and great authority. ³And I saw one of his heads as if wounded unto death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the earth wondered after the beast. ⁴And they worshipped the dragon who had given authority to the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like to the beast? who is able to wage war with him? ⁵And there was given to him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and there was given to him authority to make war forty-two months.

⁶And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and those who dwell in heaven. ⁷And it was given to him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and authority was given to him over every tribe, and tongue, and nation. ⁸And all the inhabitants who dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. ⁹He that hath an ear, let him hear. ¹⁰If any person leads *others* into captivity, he shall be led into captivity; if any person kills with the sword, he must be slain by the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

¹¹And I saw another beast rising up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb, though he spake as the dragon. ¹²And he exerciseth all the authority of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth, and those who inhabit therein, to worship the first beast whose deadly wound was healed. ¹³And he performeth great signs, so that he even causeth fire to come down from heaven to the earth, in the sight of men, ¹⁴and deceiveth the inhabitants of the earth by the signs, which he is enabled to perform before the beast, saying to the dwellers upon the earth, that they should make an image for the beast who had the stroke of the sword, and survived. ¹⁵And he is enabled to impart life to the image of the beast that even the image of the beast should speak, and cause as many as will not worship the image of the beast to be put to death. ¹⁶And he causeth all the small and the great, the rich and the poor, the freemen and the slaves, to receive a brand upon their right hand, and upon their foreheads: ¹⁷and that no man may buy or sell, but he that hath the mark impressed, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. ¹⁸Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding calculate the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is six hundred sixty-six.

CHAP. XIV.

AND I saw, and lo, a lamb stood upon the mount Zion, and with him an hundred forty-four thousand, having the name of his Father inscribed on their foreheads. ²And I heard a voice from heaven, as the sound of many waters, and as the roar of loud thunder; and I heard the sound of harpers harping on their harps: ³and they sang as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four living beings, and the presbyters: and no person could learn that song, but the hundred forty-four thousand, who were redeemed from the earth. ⁴These are they who have not defiled themselves with women; for they are virgins: these are they who follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth: these have been redeemed among men, as first-fruits to God, and to the Lamb. ⁵And in their mouth no guile is found; for they are blameless before the throne of God.

⁶And I saw another angel flying in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach the glad tidings to the inhabitants of the earth, to every nation, and tribe, and tongue, and people, ⁷saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give him glory; for the hour of his judgment is

come; and worship him that made the heaven and the earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

⁸And another angel followed, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because all nations have been made to drink of the wine of the wrath of her whoredom.

⁹And a third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any person worship the beast, and his image, and receive the brand upon his forehead, and upon his right hand, ¹⁰he also shall drink of the wine of the fury of God, which is mixed undiluted with water in the cup of his wrath; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb: ¹¹and the smoke of their torment ascendeth for ever and ever: and they have no respite day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the brand of his name. ¹²Here is the patience of the saints: here are they who keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus. ¹³And I heard a voice from heaven saying to me, Write, Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord, from henceforward: yea, saith the Spirit, that they may have rest from their labours; but their works follow after them.

¹⁴And I saw, and, lo! a white cloud, and upon the cloud sat one like to a son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle. ¹⁵And another angel came forth out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat upon the cloud, Put in thy sickle, and reap: for the hour is come for thee to reap; because the harvest of the earth is fully ripe. ¹⁶And he who sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle upon the earth, and the earth was reaped.

¹⁷And another angel came forth out of the temple which is in heaven, having also himself a sharp sickle. ¹⁸And another angel came forth from the altar, having authority over fire; and he cried with a loud voice to him who held the sharp sickle, saying, Put in thy sharp sickle, and gather the bunches of the vine of the earth; for her clusters are ripe. ¹⁹And the angel thrust in his sickle upon the earth, and gathered the grapes of the vine of the earth, and cast them into the great winepress of the wrath of God. ²⁰And the wine-press was trodden without the city, and blood issued from the wine-press, as high as the horses' bridles, for the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.

CHAP. XV.

AND I saw another sign in the heaven, great and wonderful, seven angels having the seven last plagues because by them is the wrath of God completely executed. ²And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire; and those who had obtained the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name standing upon the sea of glass, holding the harps of God. ³And they sung the sacred ode of Moses the servant of the Lord, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are thy works, O Lord God Almighty; righteous and true are thy ways, O King of saints. ⁴Who should not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name? because thou only art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee, because thy righteous judgments are made evident. ⁵And after these things I beheld, and, lo! the temple of the tabernacle of witness in heaven was opened: ⁶and the seven angels having the seven plagues came forth out of the temple, clothed in linen white and shining, and girded about the breasts with golden girdles. ⁷And one of the four living beings gave unto the seven angels seven golden vases full of the wrath of God, who liveth for ever and ever. ⁸And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power; and no person was able to enter into the temple, until the seven plagues of the seven angels were completely executed.

CHAP. XVI.

AND I heard a loud voice out of the temple, saying to the seven angels, Go and pour out the vases of the wrath of God upon the earth. ²And the first angel went, and poured out his vase upon the earth; and there came an ulcer malignant and painful upon the men that had the brand of the beast, and upon those who worshipped his image.

³And the second angel poured his vase upon the sea and it became blood as of a dead man: and every living creature died in the sea.

⁴And the third angel poured out his vase upon the rivers and upon the fountains of waters; and they became blood. ⁵And I heard the angel of

the waters saying, Righteous art thou, O Lord, who art, and who wast, even the holy one, because thou hast judged these things. ⁶For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink; for they are worthy. ⁷And I heard another angel from the altar saying, Yea, Lord God Almighty, true and just are thy judgments.

⁸And the fourth angel poured out his vase upon the sun; and there was given to it a charge to burn men with fire. ⁹And the men were scorched with a fierce heat, and they blasphemed the name of God, who had power over these plagues: and they repented not, to give him glory.

¹⁰And the fifth angel poured out his vase upon the throne of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness, and they gnawed their own tongues from anguish, ¹¹and they blasphemed the God of heaven, in the midst of their anguish, and of their ulcers, and repented not of their works.

¹²And the sixth angel poured out his vase upon the great river Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings who come from the rising of the sun might be prepared.

¹³And I saw coming out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet, three unclean spirits like frogs. ¹⁴For they are the spirits of demons doing wonders, which go forth unto the kings of the earth, and of the whole habitable globe, to gather them together unto the battle of that great day of God Almighty. ¹⁵Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he who watcheth, and keepeth his garments, that he walk not about naked, and men see his shame. ¹⁶And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew, Armageddon.

¹⁷And the seventh angel poured out his vase into the air; and a loud voice come out from the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done. ¹⁸And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not from the day that men were upon the earth, an earthquake of such a kind, and so great. ¹⁹And the great city was cleft into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and Babylon the great came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fury of his wrath. ²⁰And every island fled, and the mountains were no more found. ²¹And a great storm of hail, each about a talent weight, fell from heaven upon men: and men blasphemed God for the plague of hail: for great was the plague of it, exceedingly great.

CHAP. XVII.

AND one of the seven angels who had the seven vases, came to me, and talked with me, saying to me, Come hither, I will shew thee the judgment of the great harlot, who sitteth upon many waters: ²with whom the kings of the earth have committed whoredom, and all the inhabitants of the world have intoxicated themselves with the wine of her whoredom. ³And he bore me away in spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads, and ten horns. ⁴And the woman was clothed in purple and scarlet, and all over decked with gold, precious stones, and pearls, holding a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and of the impurity of her whoredom. ⁵And upon her forehead was there a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. ⁶And I saw the woman drunk with the blood of saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great amazement. ⁷And the angel said unto me, Wherefore dost thou wonder? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast which carrieth her, which hath seven heads and ten horns. ⁸The beast which thou seest was, and is not; and shall come up out of the abyss of hell, and shall go into perdition: and the dwellers upon earth will wonder, (whose names are not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world,) when they shall see the beast which was, and is not, though he is. ⁹Here is the mind that hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, where the woman is seated even upon them. ¹⁰And these are seven kings: five have fallen, and the one exists, the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must abide but a little while. ¹¹And the beast which was, and is not, though he is himself the eighth, yet is of the seven, and shall go away into perdition. ¹²And the ten horns which thou sawest, are ten kings, who have not yet received their kingdoms; but will receive authority as kings for one hour with the beast. ¹³They hold one sentiment, and will give their own power and authority to the beast.

¹⁴They shall make war against the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: because he is Lord of lords, and King of kings and they that are with him, are called, and elect, and faithful. ¹⁵And he saith to me, The waters which thou sawest, on which the whore sat, are people, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. ¹⁶And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, they shall hate the whore, and make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and shall burn her up with fire. ¹⁷For God hath put it into their hearts to do his will, to perform one purpose, even to give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God are fulfilled. ¹⁸And the woman which thou sawest is the great city, which holds dominion over the kings of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

AND after these things I saw an angel descending from heaven, having great authority; and the earth was enlightened by his glory.

²And he cried mightily with a great voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of demons, and the hold of every impure spirit, and the cage of every unclean and hateful bird.

³Because all nations have drunk of the wine of the rage of her whoredom, and the kings of the earth have committed whoredom with her, and the merchants of the earth have been enriched by the excess of her profligate luxury.

⁴And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come forth out of her, my people, that ye have no share in her sins, and that so ye may not receive of her plagues. ⁵For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities. ⁶Render to her as she also hath done to you, and repay her double according to her works; in the cup which she hath mingled mingle for her double. ⁷As much as she hath glorified herself, and rioted in luxury, so much torment and sorrow give her: because she hath said in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow. ⁸Therefore in one hour shall all her plagues come, death, and mourning, and famine: and she shall be consumed with fire; because mighty is the Lord God, who judgeth her.

⁹And the kings of the earth who have committed whoredom with her, and shared in her luxuries, shall bewail her, and lament bitterly over her, when they see the smoke of her burning, ¹⁰standing afar off through terror of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that strong city! how in one hour is thy judgment come upon thee!

¹¹And the merchants of the earth wept and wailed over her: because no man buyeth their merchandise any more: ¹²the merchandise of gold and of silver, and of precious stones, and of pearl, and of fine linen, and of purple, and of silk, and of scarlet, and every sweet scented wood, and every ivory vessel, and every vessel of most precious wood, and of gold, and of iron, and of marble, ¹³and cinnamon, and perfumes, and myrrh, and libanum, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and cattle, and sheep, and of horses, and of chariots, and of bodies, and the souls of men. ¹⁴And the delicate autumnal fruit of thy soul's earnest longing is gone from thee, and all things that are dainty and that are splendid are departed from thee, and never shalt thou find them any more.

¹⁵The merchants of these things who enriched themselves by her, shall stand afar off through terror of her torment, weeping and wailing, ¹⁶and saying, Alas, alas, the great city, which was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and overlaid with gold, and precious stones, and pearls! how in one hour is so great wealth laid waste!

¹⁷And every pilot, and all the crew in the ships, and the mariners, and as many as exercise their labours on the sea, stood afar off, ¹⁸and cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What is like that great city! ¹⁹And they cast dust upon their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, by which all who occupied ships on the sea were enriched from her opulence! how in one hour is she made desolate!

²⁰Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye the holy apostles and prophets, for God hath adjudged her to punishment, for the judgment inflicted on you by her. ²¹And a mighty angel took up a stone as a great milstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, So with rapidity shall the great city Babylon be hurled into the deep, and never shall be found more. ²²And the sound of harpers, and musicians, and flute players, and trumpeters, shall never be heard in thee more; and no artificer of whatever trade shall be found in thee any more; and the sound of a

milstone shall be heard in thee no more; ²³and never shall the light of a lamp shine in thee any more; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard in thee no more: because thy merchants were the grandees of the earth; because all nations were deluded by thy magical incantation. ²⁴And in her was found the blood of prophets, and holy men, and of all who have been slaughtered upon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

AND after these things I heard a loud sound as of a vast multitude in heaven, saying, Hallelujah: Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power be to the Lord our God: ²because true and righteous are his judgments; for he hath judged the great harlot, that corrupted the earth with her whoredom, and hath avenged the blood of his servants shed by her hand. ³And the second time they said, Hallelujah. And her smoke ascended up for ever and ever. ⁴And the four and twenty presbyters fell prostrate, and the four living beings, and they worshipped God who was seated on the throne, saying, Amen; Hallelujah.

⁵And there came a voice out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye servants of his, and all that fear him, both the small and the great. ⁶And I heard as it were the voice of a vast multitude, and as the noise of many waters, and as the roar of mighty thunderings, saying, Hallelujah: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth. ⁷Let us rejoice and exult, and give him glory: because the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his bride hath made herself ready. ⁸And it was granted her to be clothed in fine linen, clean and splendid: for the fine linen is *the emblem of the righteousness of the saints*. ⁹And he said to me, Write, Blessed are they that are invited to the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he said to me, These are the true sayings of God.

¹⁰And I fell down before his feet to worship him: and he said unto me, See thou dost not so: I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren who hold the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the spirit of prophecy is the testimony of Jesus.

¹¹And I saw heaven opened, and lo a white horse; and he that sat upon it, is called Faithful and True, and with righteousness doth he judge and make war. ¹²And his eyes were as a flame of fire, and upon his head were many diadems; and he hath a name inscribed which no man knoweth but himself. ¹³And he was clothed in a garment dipt in blood, and his name is styled THE WORD OF GOD. ¹⁴And the hosts which are in heaven followed him on white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. ¹⁵And out of his mouth proceeded a sharp sword, that therewith he may smite the heathen and he will rule them with an iron sceptre: and he will tread the wine-press of the fury and of the wrath of God Almighty. ¹⁶And he hath upon his vesture and upon his thigh this name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

¹⁷And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls which fly in the midst of heaven, Come hither and flock together unto the supper of the great God: ¹⁸that ye may eat the carcasses of kings, and the carcasses of military commanders, and the carcasses of mighty men, and the carcasses of horses, and of those who ride upon them, and the carcasses of all, freemen and slaves, both small and great.

¹⁹And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war with him that was sitting upon the horse, and with his army. ²⁰And the beast was seized upon, and with him the false prophet who performed the wonders before him, by which he deceived those who received the brand of the beast, and those who worshipped his image. They were both hurled alive into the lake of fire which burneth with brimstone. ²¹And all the rest were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which issued from his mouth: and all the fowls were gorged with their carcasses.

CHAP. XX.

AND I saw an angel descending from heaven, having the key of the *abyss of hell*, and a great chain in his hand: ²and he seized on the dragon, the old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, ³and cast him into the abyss, and shut him up, and put a seal upon it, that he might deceive the nations no more until the thousand years are completed: and after that he must be loosed a short time. ⁴And I saw thrones, and persons were seated upon them, and

authority to judge was given to them: and I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for the testimony of Jesus, and for the word of God, and who had not worshipped the beast, nor his image, and had not received the brand in their foreheads, and upon their right hand; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. ⁵But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years are completed. This is the first resurrection. ⁶Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection; over these the second death hath no dominion: but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and they shall reign with him a thousand years. ⁷And when the thousand years shall be completed, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison; ⁸and he shall go forth to deceive the nations that are in the four corners of the earth, Gog, and Magog, to gather them together to battle, whose number is as the sand of the sea. ⁹And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and encircled the camp of the saints, and the beloved city: and there came down fire from God out of heaven, and devoured them up. ¹⁰And the devil who deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and they shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

¹¹And I saw a great white throne, and one sat upon it, from whose presence fled the earth and the heaven, and no place was found for them. ¹²And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of the things written in the books according to their works. ¹³And the sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and the grave gave up the dead that were in them; and every one was judged according to his works. ¹⁴And death and the grave were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death. ¹⁵And if any one was not found inscribed on the book of life, he was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

AND I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. ²And I John saw the holy city, the new Jerusalem, descending from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. ³And I heard a loud voice from heaven saying, Behold the tabernacle of God is with men, and he shall pitch his tent with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, their own God. ⁴And God shall wipe away every tear from their eyes, and death shall be no more; nor shall mourning, nor crying, nor toil be any more: because the former things are passed away. ⁵And he that sat upon the throne said, Lo! I make all things new: and he said unto me, Write that these sayings are true and faithful. ⁶And he said to me, It is done. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end; I will give to him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely. ⁷He that overcometh shall inherit all things, and I will be to him a God, and he shall be to me a son. ⁸But to those who shrink back through fear, and to the infidels, and to the abominable, and to murderers, and to whoremongers, and to those who use magical incantations, and to idolaters, and to all liars, is their portion *appointed* in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone; which is the second death.

⁹And there came to me one of the seven angels who held the seven vases full of the seven last plagues, and he talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the bride, the Lamb's wife. ¹⁰And he bore me away in spirit unto a great and exceeding high mountain, and shewed me the great city, the holy Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, ¹¹having the glory of God: and her brilliance was like the most precious gem, as a jasper stone, transparent as crystal; ¹²and she had a great wall and lofty, having twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names inscribed on them, which are those of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel. ¹³From the east three gates; from the north three gates; from the south three gates; from the west three gates. ¹⁴And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and on them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. ¹⁵And he that talked with me held a golden cane to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof. ¹⁶And the city is a quadrangle, and the breadth of it is just as much as the length of it; and he measured the city with the cane, twelve thousand furlongs: the breadth, and the length, and the height of it, are exactly proportioned. ¹⁷He measured also the wall of it a hundred and forty-four

cubits, according to the measure of a man, for such is that of an angel.

¹⁸The structure of the wall of it was jasper, and the city pure gold, like clear glass. ¹⁹And the foundations of the walls of the city were adorned with every precious stone: the first foundation a jasper; the second a sapphire; the third a chalcedony; the fourth an emerald; ²⁰the fifth a sardonyx; the sixth a sardius; the seventh a chrysolite; the eighth a beryl; the ninth a topaz; the tenth a chrysoprasus; the eleventh a jacinth; the twelfth an amethyst. ²¹And the twelve gates were twelve several pearls; every one of the gates was of one pearl; and the street of the city was pure gold, as transparent glass.

²²And I saw no temple therein; for the Lord God Almighty is the temple thereof, even the Lamb. ²³And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon to shine upon it: for the glory of God illuminates it, and the Lamb is the lamp thereof. ²⁴And the nations of those that are saved shall walk about in the light thereof; and the kings of the earth shall bring their glory and their honour into it; ²⁵and her gates shall be never shut by day (for there is no night there); ²⁶and they shall bring the glory and the honour of the nations into it. ²⁷And there shall no more enter into it any thing unclean, or that practises abomination and lying; but only those who are written in the book of life of the Lamb.

CHAP. XXII.

AND he shewed me a clear river of water of life, bright as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. ²In the midst of the street of it, even on this side, and on that of the river, grew the tree of life, producing twelve crops of fruit, and ripening its fruit in succession every month; and the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations.

³And no accursed thing is there any more; and the throne of God and of the Lamb are in it, and his servants will pay divine worship to him. ⁴And they shall see his face; and his name shall be on their foreheads. ⁵And there shall be no night there, and they have no need of a lamp, or the light of the sun; because the Lord God illumines them: and they shall reign for ever and ever.

⁶And he said to me, These words are faithful and true. And the Lord God of the holy prophets hath sent his angel to shew to his servants the things which must shortly come to pass. ⁷Behold, I come quickly! blessed is he that observeth the words of the prophecy of this book.

⁸And I John saw and heard these things. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel who shewed me these things. ⁹And he said to me, See thou do it not; for I am a fellow-servant of thine, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of those who observe the words of this book: worship God. ¹⁰And he said to me, Seal not up the words of the prophecy of this book; for the time is at hand. ¹¹He that is unjust, let him be unjust still; and he that is filthy, let him be filthy still; and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still; and he that is holy, let him be holy still. ¹²And behold, I come quickly: and my reward is with me, to give to every man as his work shall be. ¹³I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. ¹⁴Blessed are they who keep his commandments, that they may have authority to approach unto the tree of life, and that they may enter in by the gates into the city. ¹⁵But without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and every one who loveth and maketh a lie.

¹⁶I Jesus have sent my angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, the bright and morning star. ¹⁷And the spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him who is athirst come: and whosoever is desirous, let him take of the water of life freely. ¹⁸For I testify to every one who heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man add to these things, God will lay upon him the plagues that are written in this book: ¹⁹and if any take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God will take away his part from the book of life, and from the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.

²⁰He that testifieth these things saith, Verily, I come quickly. Amen. Yea come, Lord Jesus!

²¹The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen

FOOTNOTES

- ¹ Isa. vii. 14
- ² Micah, v. 2
- ³ Hos. ii. 1
- ⁴ Jer. xxxi. 15
- ⁵ Isa. xl. 3
- ⁶ Deut. viii. 3
- ⁷ Psal. xci. 11, 12
- ⁸ Deut. vi. 16
- ⁹ Deut. vi. 13
- ¹⁰ Isa. ix. 1, 2
- ¹¹ Mal. iii. 1. Isa. xl. 3.
- ¹² Isa. xxix. 13.
- ¹³ Exod. xx. 52.
- ¹⁴ Levit. xx. 9.
- ¹⁵ Equal to sixty shekels, above seven of our pounds.
- ¹⁶ Isaiah, lvi. 7.
- ¹⁷ Psalm cxviii. 22.
- ¹⁸ Deut. xxv. 5.
- ¹⁹ Exod. iii. 6.
- ²⁰ Psalm cx. 1.
- ²¹ Isa. liii. 12.
- ²² Their day commenced at sun-set.
- ²³ Psalm lxix. 25.
- ²⁴ Psalm cix. 8.
- ²⁵ Joel, ii. 28, 32.
- ²⁶ Psalm xvi. 8-11.
- ²⁷ Psalm cx. 1.
- ²⁸ Deut. xviii. 18, 19.
- ²⁹ Gen. xii. 3.
- ³⁰ Psalm cxviii. 22.
- ³¹ Psalm ii. 1, 2.
- ³² Gen. xi. 31.
- ³³ Gen. xv. 13, 14.
- ³⁴ Exod. iii. 6.
- ³⁵ Exod. iii. 5-10.
- ³⁶ Deut. xviii. 15.
- ³⁷ Amos, v. 25-27.
- ³⁸ Isaiah, lxvi. 1.
- ³⁹ Isaiah, liii. 7, 8.
- ⁴⁰ Sam. xiii. 14.
- ⁴¹ Psalm ii. 7.
- ⁴² Isa. lv. 3.
- ⁴³ Psalm xvi. 10.
- ⁴⁴ Isa. xxix, 34.
- ⁴⁵ Isa. xlix. 6.
- ⁴⁶ Amos, ix. 11, 12.
- ⁴⁷ Exod. xxii. 28.
- ⁴⁸ Isaiah, vi, 9. 10.
- ⁴⁹ Habb. ii. 4.
- ⁵⁰ Isaiah, lii. 5.
- ⁵¹ Psalm, li. 4.
- ⁵² Psa. xiv. 1-3. Psa. v. 9.
- ⁵³ Gen. xv. 6.
- ⁵⁴ Psa. xxxii. 1, 2.
- ⁵⁵ Gen. xvii. 5.
- ⁵⁶ Gen. xv. 5.
- ⁵⁷ Psalm, xlv. 22.
- ⁵⁸ Gen. xxv. 23.

59 Mal. i. 2, 3.
60 Exod. xxxiii. 19.
61 Exod. ix. 16.
62 Hos. i. 10.
63 Isa. x. 22, 23.
64 Isa. i. 9.
65 Isa. viii. 14.
66 Lev. xviii. 5.
67 Deut. xxx. 12-14.
68 Isa. xxviii. 16.
69 Joel, ii. 32.
70 Isa. lii. 7, 8.
71 Isa. liii. 1.
72 Psa. xix. 4.
73 Deut. xxxii. 21.
74 Isa. lxv. 1, 2.
75 1 Kings, xix. 14.
76 Isa. xxix. 10.
77 Psa. lxix. 22.
78 Isa. lix. 20.
79 Deut. xxxii. 35.
80 Isaiah, xlv. 23.
81 Psa. lxix. 9
82 Psa. xviii. 49.
83 Deut. xxxii, 43.
84 Psa. cxvii. 1.
85 Isaiah, xi. 10.
86 Isaiah, lii. 15.
87 Isa. xxix. 14.
88 Jerem. ix. 24.
89 Isa. lxiv. 4.
90 Job. v. 13.
91 Ps. xciv. 11.
92 Gen. ii. 24.
93 Deut. xxv. 4.
94 Exod. xxxii. 6-19.
95 Num. xxv. 1-9.
96 Num. xxi. 16.
97 Num. xiv 37.
98 Psalm xxiv. 1.
99 Isa. xxviii. 11.
100 Gen. iii. 16.
101 Psalm cxvi. 10.
102 Isaiah, xlix. 8.
103 Lev. xxvi. 12.
104 Isai. lii. 11.
105 Jerem. xxxi. 1.
106 Exod. xvi. 18.
107 Psalm cxii. 9.
108 Gen. xii. 3.
109 Deu. xxvii. 26.
110 Habb. ii.4.
111 Lev. xviii. 5.
112 Deut. xxi. 23.
113 Gen. xvi. 15.
114 Isa. liv. 1.
115 Gen. xxi. 10.
116 Psa. lxviii. 18.
117 Isaiah, lx. 1.
118 Exod. xx. 12.
119 Deut. xxvi. 14.
120 Psa. ii. 7.
121 2 Sam. vii. 14.
122 Psa. xcvii. 7.

- 123 Psa. civ. 4.
- 124 Psa. xlv. 6, 7.
- 125 Psa. cii. 26.
- 126 Psalm cx. 1.
- 127 Psalm viii. 4.
- 128 Psalm xxii. 22.
- 129 Psalm xviii. 2.
- 130 Isai. viii. 18.
- 131 Psalm xcv. 7.
- 132 Gen. ii. 2.
- 133 Psalm cx. 4.
- 134 Gen. xxii. 16.
- 135 Exod. xxv. 40.
- 136 Jerem. xxxi. 31-34.
- 137 Psalm xl. 7.
- 138 Deut. xxxii. 35, 36
- 139 Habb. ii. 3.
- 140 Gen. xxi. 12.
- 141 Prov. iii. 11, 12.
- 142 Exod. xix. 12, 13.
- 143 Haggai, ii. 6.
- 144 Joshua, i. 5.
- 145 Gen. xv. 6.
- 146 Isa. xli. 8.
- 147 Prov. iii. 34.
- 148 Levit. xi. 44.
- 149 Isaiah, xl. 6.
- 150 Isa. xxviii. 16.
- 151 Psa. cxviii. 22.
- 152 Isa. liii. 4. 6.
- 153 Psalm xxxiv. 12, 13.
- 154 About ten ounces.
- 155 About ten ounces.

*** END OF THE PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK A TRANSLATION OF
THE NEW TESTAMENT FROM THE ORIGINAL GREEK ***

Updated editions will replace the previous one—the old editions will be renamed.

Creating the works from print editions not protected by U.S. copyright law means that no one owns a United States copyright in these works, so the Foundation (and you!) can copy and distribute it in the United States without permission and without paying copyright royalties. Special rules, set forth in the General Terms of Use part of this license, apply to copying and distributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works to protect the PROJECT GUTENBERG™ concept and trademark. Project Gutenberg is a registered trademark, and may not be used if you charge for an eBook, except by following the terms of the trademark license, including paying royalties for use of the Project Gutenberg trademark. If you do not charge anything for copies of this eBook, complying with the trademark license is very easy. You may use this eBook for nearly any purpose such as creation of derivative works, reports, performances and research. Project Gutenberg eBooks may be modified and printed and given away—you may do practically ANYTHING in the United States with eBooks not protected by U.S. copyright law. Redistribution is subject to the trademark license, especially commercial redistribution.

START: FULL LICENSE

THE FULL PROJECT GUTENBERG LICENSE

PLEASE READ THIS BEFORE YOU DISTRIBUTE OR USE THIS WORK

To protect the Project Gutenberg™ mission of promoting the free distribution of electronic works, by using or distributing this work (or any other work associated in any way with the phrase “Project Gutenberg”), you agree to comply with all the terms of the Full Project

Section 1. General Terms of Use and Redistributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works

1.A. By reading or using any part of this Project Gutenberg™ electronic work, you indicate that you have read, understand, agree to and accept all the terms of this license and intellectual property (trademark/copyright) agreement. If you do not agree to abide by all the terms of this agreement, you must cease using and return or destroy all copies of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works in your possession. If you paid a fee for obtaining a copy of or access to a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work and you do not agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement, you may obtain a refund from the person or entity to whom you paid the fee as set forth in paragraph 1.E.8.

1.B. “Project Gutenberg” is a registered trademark. It may only be used on or associated in any way with an electronic work by people who agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement. There are a few things that you can do with most Project Gutenberg™ electronic works even without complying with the full terms of this agreement. See paragraph 1.C below. There are a lot of things you can do with Project Gutenberg™ electronic works if you follow the terms of this agreement and help preserve free future access to Project Gutenberg™ electronic works. See paragraph 1.E below.

1.C. The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation (“the Foundation” or PGLAF), owns a compilation copyright in the collection of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works. Nearly all the individual works in the collection are in the public domain in the United States. If an individual work is unprotected by copyright law in the United States and you are located in the United States, we do not claim a right to prevent you from copying, distributing, performing, displaying or creating derivative works based on the work as long as all references to Project Gutenberg are removed. Of course, we hope that you will support the Project Gutenberg™ mission of promoting free access to electronic works by freely sharing Project Gutenberg™ works in compliance with the terms of this agreement for keeping the Project Gutenberg™ name associated with the work. You can easily comply with the terms of this agreement by keeping this work in the same format with its attached full Project Gutenberg™ License when you share it without charge with others.

1.D. The copyright laws of the place where you are located also govern what you can do with this work. Copyright laws in most countries are in a constant state of change. If you are outside the United States, check the laws of your country in addition to the terms of this agreement before downloading, copying, displaying, performing, distributing or creating derivative works based on this work or any other Project Gutenberg™ work. The Foundation makes no representations concerning the copyright status of any work in any country other than the United States.

1.E. Unless you have removed all references to Project Gutenberg:

1.E.1. The following sentence, with active links to, or other immediate access to, the full Project Gutenberg™ License must appear prominently whenever any copy of a Project Gutenberg™ work (any work on which the phrase “Project Gutenberg” appears, or with which the phrase “Project Gutenberg” is associated) is accessed, displayed, performed, viewed, copied or distributed:

This eBook is for the use of anyone anywhere in the United States and most other parts of the world at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this eBook or online at www.gutenberg.org. If you are not located in the United States, you will have to check the laws of the country where you are located before using this eBook.

1.E.2. If an individual Project Gutenberg™ electronic work is derived from texts not protected by U.S. copyright law (does not contain a notice indicating that it is posted with permission of the copyright holder), the

work can be copied and distributed to anyone in the United States without paying any fees or charges. If you are redistributing or providing access to a work with the phrase "Project Gutenberg" associated with or appearing on the work, you must comply either with the requirements of paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 or obtain permission for the use of the work and the Project Gutenberg™ trademark as set forth in paragraphs 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.3. If an individual Project Gutenberg™ electronic work is posted with the permission of the copyright holder, your use and distribution must comply with both paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 and any additional terms imposed by the copyright holder. Additional terms will be linked to the Project Gutenberg™ License for all works posted with the permission of the copyright holder found at the beginning of this work.

1.E.4. Do not unlink or detach or remove the full Project Gutenberg™ License terms from this work, or any files containing a part of this work or any other work associated with Project Gutenberg™.

1.E.5. Do not copy, display, perform, distribute or redistribute this electronic work, or any part of this electronic work, without prominently displaying the sentence set forth in paragraph 1.E.1 with active links or immediate access to the full terms of the Project Gutenberg™ License.

1.E.6. You may convert to and distribute this work in any binary, compressed, marked up, nonproprietary or proprietary form, including any word processing or hypertext form. However, if you provide access to or distribute copies of a Project Gutenberg™ work in a format other than "Plain Vanilla ASCII" or other format used in the official version posted on the official Project Gutenberg™ website (www.gutenberg.org), you must, at no additional cost, fee or expense to the user, provide a copy, a means of exporting a copy, or a means of obtaining a copy upon request, of the work in its original "Plain Vanilla ASCII" or other form. Any alternate format must include the full Project Gutenberg™ License as specified in paragraph 1.E.1.

1.E.7. Do not charge a fee for access to, viewing, displaying, performing, copying or distributing any Project Gutenberg™ works unless you comply with paragraph 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.8. You may charge a reasonable fee for copies of or providing access to or distributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works provided that:

- You pay a royalty fee of 20% of the gross profits you derive from the use of Project Gutenberg™ works calculated using the method you already use to calculate your applicable taxes. The fee is owed to the owner of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark, but he has agreed to donate royalties under this paragraph to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation. Royalty payments must be paid within 60 days following each date on which you prepare (or are legally required to prepare) your periodic tax returns. Royalty payments should be clearly marked as such and sent to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation at the address specified in Section 4, "Information about donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation."
- You provide a full refund of any money paid by a user who notifies you in writing (or by e-mail) within 30 days of receipt that s/he does not agree to the terms of the full Project Gutenberg™ License. You must require such a user to return or destroy all copies of the works possessed in a physical medium and discontinue all use of and all access to other copies of Project Gutenberg™ works.
- You provide, in accordance with paragraph 1.F.3, a full refund of any money paid for a work or a replacement copy, if a defect in the electronic work is discovered and reported to you within 90 days of receipt of the work.
- You comply with all other terms of this agreement for free distribution of Project Gutenberg™ works.

1.E.9. If you wish to charge a fee or distribute a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work or group of works on different terms than are set forth in this agreement, you must obtain permission in writing from the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, the manager of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark. Contact the Foundation as set forth in Section 3 below.

1.F.

1.F.1. Project Gutenberg volunteers and employees expend considerable effort to identify, do copyright research on, transcribe and proofread works not protected by U.S. copyright law in creating the Project Gutenberg™ collection. Despite these efforts, Project Gutenberg™ electronic works, and the medium on which they may be stored, may contain “Defects,” such as, but not limited to, incomplete, inaccurate or corrupt data, transcription errors, a copyright or other intellectual property infringement, a defective or damaged disk or other medium, a computer virus, or computer codes that damage or cannot be read by your equipment.

1.F.2. LIMITED WARRANTY, DISCLAIMER OF DAMAGES - Except for the “Right of Replacement or Refund” described in paragraph 1.F.3, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, the owner of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark, and any other party distributing a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work under this agreement, disclaim all liability to you for damages, costs and expenses, including legal fees. YOU AGREE THAT YOU HAVE NO REMEDIES FOR NEGLIGENCE, STRICT LIABILITY, BREACH OF WARRANTY OR BREACH OF CONTRACT EXCEPT THOSE PROVIDED IN PARAGRAPH 1.F.3. YOU AGREE THAT THE FOUNDATION, THE TRADEMARK OWNER, AND ANY DISTRIBUTOR UNDER THIS AGREEMENT WILL NOT BE LIABLE TO YOU FOR ACTUAL, DIRECT, INDIRECT, CONSEQUENTIAL, PUNITIVE OR INCIDENTAL DAMAGES EVEN IF YOU GIVE NOTICE OF THE POSSIBILITY OF SUCH DAMAGE.

1.F.3. LIMITED RIGHT OF REPLACEMENT OR REFUND - If you discover a defect in this electronic work within 90 days of receiving it, you can receive a refund of the money (if any) you paid for it by sending a written explanation to the person you received the work from. If you received the work on a physical medium, you must return the medium with your written explanation. The person or entity that provided you with the defective work may elect to provide a replacement copy in lieu of a refund. If you received the work electronically, the person or entity providing it to you may choose to give you a second opportunity to receive the work electronically in lieu of a refund. If the second copy is also defective, you may demand a refund in writing without further opportunities to fix the problem.

1.F.4. Except for the limited right of replacement or refund set forth in paragraph 1.F.3, this work is provided to you ‘AS-IS’, WITH NO OTHER WARRANTIES OF ANY KIND, EXPRESS OR IMPLIED, INCLUDING BUT NOT LIMITED TO WARRANTIES OF MERCHANTABILITY OR FITNESS FOR ANY PURPOSE.

1.F.5. Some states do not allow disclaimers of certain implied warranties or the exclusion or limitation of certain types of damages. If any disclaimer or limitation set forth in this agreement violates the law of the state applicable to this agreement, the agreement shall be interpreted to make the maximum disclaimer or limitation permitted by the applicable state law. The invalidity or unenforceability of any provision of this agreement shall not void the remaining provisions.

1.F.6. INDEMNITY - You agree to indemnify and hold the Foundation, the trademark owner, any agent or employee of the Foundation, anyone providing copies of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works in accordance with this agreement, and any volunteers associated with the production, promotion and distribution of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works, harmless from all liability, costs and expenses, including legal fees, that arise directly or indirectly from any of the following which you do or cause to occur: (a) distribution of this or any Project Gutenberg™ work, (b) alteration, modification, or additions or deletions to any Project Gutenberg™ work, and (c) any Defect you cause.

Section 2. Information about the Mission of Project Gutenberg™

Project Gutenberg™ is synonymous with the free distribution of electronic works in formats readable by the widest variety of computers including obsolete, old, middle-aged and new computers. It exists because of the efforts of hundreds of volunteers and donations from people in all walks of life.

Volunteers and financial support to provide volunteers with the assistance they need are critical to reaching Project Gutenberg™’s goals

and ensuring that the Project Gutenberg™ collection will remain freely available for generations to come. In 2001, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation was created to provide a secure and permanent future for Project Gutenberg™ and future generations. To learn more about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation and how your efforts and donations can help, see Sections 3 and 4 and the Foundation information page at www.gutenberg.org.

Section 3. Information about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation

The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation is a non-profit 501(c)(3) educational corporation organized under the laws of the state of Mississippi and granted tax exempt status by the Internal Revenue Service. The Foundation's EIN or federal tax identification number is 64-6221541. Contributions to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation are tax deductible to the full extent permitted by U.S. federal laws and your state's laws.

The Foundation's business office is located at 809 North 1500 West, Salt Lake City, UT 84116, (801) 596-1887. Email contact links and up to date contact information can be found at the Foundation's website and official page at www.gutenberg.org/contact

Section 4. Information about Donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation

Project Gutenberg™ depends upon and cannot survive without widespread public support and donations to carry out its mission of increasing the number of public domain and licensed works that can be freely distributed in machine-readable form accessible by the widest array of equipment including outdated equipment. Many small donations (\$1 to \$5,000) are particularly important to maintaining tax exempt status with the IRS.

The Foundation is committed to complying with the laws regulating charities and charitable donations in all 50 states of the United States. Compliance requirements are not uniform and it takes a considerable effort, much paperwork and many fees to meet and keep up with these requirements. We do not solicit donations in locations where we have not received written confirmation of compliance. To SEND DONATIONS or determine the status of compliance for any particular state visit www.gutenberg.org/donate.

While we cannot and do not solicit contributions from states where we have not met the solicitation requirements, we know of no prohibition against accepting unsolicited donations from donors in such states who approach us with offers to donate.

International donations are gratefully accepted, but we cannot make any statements concerning tax treatment of donations received from outside the United States. U.S. laws alone swamp our small staff.

Please check the Project Gutenberg web pages for current donation methods and addresses. Donations are accepted in a number of other ways including checks, online payments and credit card donations. To donate, please visit: www.gutenberg.org/donate

Section 5. General Information About Project Gutenberg™ electronic works

Professor Michael S. Hart was the originator of the Project Gutenberg™ concept of a library of electronic works that could be freely shared with anyone. For forty years, he produced and distributed Project Gutenberg™ eBooks with only a loose network of volunteer support.

Project Gutenberg™ eBooks are often created from several printed editions, all of which are confirmed as not protected by copyright in the U.S. unless a copyright notice is included. Thus, we do not necessarily keep eBooks in compliance with any particular paper edition.

Most people start at our website which has the main PG search facility: www.gutenberg.org.

This website includes information about Project Gutenberg™, including

how to make donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, how to help produce our new eBooks, and how to subscribe to our email newsletter to hear about new eBooks.